

THE BOOK WAS
DRENCHED

UNIVERSAL
LIBRARY

OU_210594

UNIVERSAL
LIBRARY

WORKS OF THOMAS NASHE

VOLUME I

Seven hundred and fifty copies printed.

No. 246

THE WORKS OF THOMAS NASHE
EDITED FROM THE ORIGINAL TEXTS
BY RONALD B. MCKERROW TEXT: VOL. I

SIDGWICK & JACKSON, LTD., 3 ADAM STREET
ADELPHI, LONDON. (MCMX)

1910.

This volume was originally issued by A. H. Bullen in 1904

OXFORD: HORACE HART
PRINTER TO THE UNIVERSITY

PREFACE

SINCE the four volumes of this edition of the works of Thomas Nashe are to be published one by one as they are completed, it seems desirable to explain briefly the arrangement which has been adopted. The first three volumes will contain the text, together with short introductory notes describing the various earlier editions, and, when necessary, discussing the reasons for the choice of the particular edition which is followed. In these volumes will be contained all the works generally assigned to Nashe, with the exception of *Martins Months minde*, which, at least at present, I see not the slightest reason for attributing to him. The fourth volume will contain a memoir of Nashe, notes to the works, and a glossary.

This arrangement has not been adopted without considerable thought. There is an obvious advantage in having the notes in the same volume as the text to which they refer, but in the case of an author like Nashe, many of whose works are closely interconnected, it seemed that the inconvenience of having constantly to refer from the notes in one volume to those in another would more than counterbalance any advantage thus gained. It is hoped that with this arrangement it will at least be possible with a minimum of trouble to find the editorial matter having reference to any work or passage in a work, and, what is sometimes a matter of no less difficulty, to satisfy oneself whether the information required is or is not given.

It more particularly belongs to this volume that I should offer my sincere thanks to Mrs. Christie-Miller, of Britwell Court, for her kindness in allowing me the use of her copy

PREFACE

of the first edition of *Pierce Penilesse his Supplication to the Diuell* for the purpose of collation, and that of *The Terrors of the Night* for reproduction of the title-page. I am also greatly indebted to Mr. R. E. Graves for his kindness in connexion with the loan of these two books.

My acknowledgements to others—and they are not few—who have helped me in the preparation of this edition with information and advice, always most readily and generously given, may be more fittingly deferred to the conclusion of my task.

R. B. MCK.

LONDON, *August, 1903.*

CONTENTS

	PAGE
NOTE ON THE TREATMENT OF THE TEXT ADOPTED IN THIS EDITION	xi
THE ANATOMIE OF ABSVRDITIE	I
Title-page from Bodleian, Malone, 566.	
A COVNTERCVFFE GIVEN TO MARTIN IVNIOR	51
Title-page from British Museum, C. 37. d. 48.	
THE RETVRNE OF PASQVILL	65
Title-page from British Museum, 96. b. 15. (8).	
THE FIRST PARTE OF PASQVILS APOLOGIE	105
Title-page from British Museum, C. 37. d. 51. (1).	
PIERCE PENILESSA HIS SVPPPLICATION TO THE DIVELL . . .	137
Title-page of the first edition from the copy in the Library of Mrs. Christie-Miller at Britwell Court.	
Title-page of the third edition from British Museum, C. 40. d. 19.	
STRANGE NEWES, OF THE INTERCEPTING CERTAINE LETTERS . . .	247
Title-page from British Museum, 96. b. 16. (3).	
THE TERRORS OF THE NIGHT	337
Title-page from the copy in the Library of Mrs. Christie-Miller at Britwell Court.	

NOTE ON THE TREATMENT OF THE TEXT ADOPTED IN THIS EDITION

Spelling. The spelling of the copy-text, by which, here and throughout the book, I mean the text used in each particular case as the basis of mine, has been followed exactly except as regards evident misprints. These are corrected, the reading of the original being given at the foot of the page. I have been as sparing as possible of alteration, and have allowed a number of forms to stand which would perhaps have been corrected by the original printer if he had noticed them—such forms, I mean, as ‘lik’ for ‘like’ and ‘buie’ for ‘buy’.

Hyphens. The copy-text is followed, all departures from it being noted. In the numerous cases in which it is impossible to be certain whether the original has a hyphen or not, an editor must be allowed to use his own judgement, as also in the case of words which, in the original, are divided at the end of a line.

Word-division. The early editions are extremely lax in this respect; when, therefore, words are run together or separated in an obviously wrong manner, I have allowed myself to correct them without a note. I have further allowed myself to suppose the existence of a hyphen at the end of a line where one is clearly necessary. Printers seem to have cared little whether they inserted them or not.

On the other hand, I have always preferred to follow the copy-text where it was at all possible to do so, and whenever by an incorrect division new words are formed, as for example when ‘wronged one’ becomes in one edition ‘wrone done’ (see p. 197, l. 27), the mistake is noted though it is an obvious one.

Typography. For convenience of reading s is printed for f.

The old use of u and v, i and j is preserved. When it has been necessary to change a word from the original lower-case letters to capitals, or vice versa, the Elizabethan usage has always been followed; thus such a running-title as ‘Pasquill and Marforius’ becomes here ‘PASQVILL AND MARFORIVS.’

VV and vv are replaced by W and w.

In the case of ligatures the modern usage is followed. In printing from a black-letter original, ée has been replaced by ee.

Black-letter texts are printed in Roman. Short passages in black letter in a Roman text are however kept in black letter when this was originally used in order to differentiate them from the context.

Words or passages in Roman or Italic type in a black-letter text are alike printed in Italic. Large initials at the beginning of paragraphs, and numerals, are however kept in the original character.

Roman and Italic prefaces and dedications to works in black letter are also printed in the original character.

In the use of Italics and Capitals the copy-text is followed.

Head and tail ornaments are disregarded. Ornamental initials are replaced by plain ones.

Running-titles are, for the sake of uniformity, always printed in Roman capitals, whatever may be the character of the originals. This latter is given in the introductory notes. Mistakes in the running-title are ignored.

One size of type is used for the text throughout. In the original, dedications, prefaces, &c., are often in type of a different size from that used in the body of the text.

Turned Letters. (1) If these are letters which when turned do not resemble others, the turning is disregarded; thus 'it' would be printed 'it' without note.

(2) If, on the other hand, when turned they resemble other letters, they are treated as if they actually were the letters which they resemble. Thus turned n is considered to be u, and turned u to be n, &c.

The letters which come under this head are n, u; b, q; d, p; and (in black letter) a, e.

In the case of all but the last pair certainty is very often impossible, and we may be sure that a reader would take them for the letters which at first sight they appear to be. In many cases they were evidently thus intended by the compositor.

Letters of a wrong fount. No notice is taken of letters of wrong founts, such as single Italic letters in a black letter or Roman word. In such cases as 'Is' and 'to,' I have been guided by the context.

Side notes. The position of side notes seems to have been considered a matter of little importance, and in different editions often varies considerably. They have here been placed, so far as was possible, opposite to the matter to which they seemed to refer. Change of position has only occasionally been recorded, never when in the originals they had been forced out of their proper place by reason of their frequency.

Collation notes which have reference to the side notes are placed above those of the text, and references are to each note as a whole.

Thus any word in the first note on a page is referred to by the raised figure ‘1,’ in the second note by ‘2,’ and so on.

Punctuation. In this respect I have attempted a compromise, unsatisfactory, I fear, as all compromises must be. On the one hand, much Elizabethan prose, especially that with a Euphuistic tendency, can hardly be punctuated at all according to modern rules, and even when this is possible, such treatment tends greatly to obscure the antithesis of phrase, often unreal, which is one of its chief characteristics. On the other hand, the old punctuation, more especially the superfluity of commas, is very irritating to a reader.

My principle has therefore been to keep the old punctuation wherever it is neither misleading nor actually disturbing to a reader, but to alter it without scruple where it is so; noting the change, however, in every case where the sense is or might be supposed to be affected.

In the few cases in which it has seemed necessary to alter the sentence distribution by running two into one or breaking one into two, the original punctuation is recorded. I have, however, in some cases altered a full stop before a lower-case letter, or a comma before a capital, when it is clear, as it usually is, that these are mere misprints, probably due to the points being mixed in distribution.

The result is a style of punctuation which is, I confess, hopelessly inconsistent, but which will probably offer no difficulties to the reader, and will interfere as little as possible with the rhythm of the text.

Collations. I think that the form in which these are given does not need much explanation. In the absence of any well established method of giving variants it has seemed better to aim at clearness and convenience than at an absolutely uniform method.

Additions are indicated by giving the word before and the word after, except in cases of the repetition of a word. Thus on p. 229, l. 32, where the text reads ‘of Oracles,’ the footnote ‘of the Oracles 93, 95’ indicates the addition of the word ‘the’ in the editions dated 1593 and 1595.

The omission of small words has usually been indicated in a similar way; thus on p. 236, l. 27, where the text reads ‘assault him and torment him,’ the footnote ‘assault and 95’ indicates that the first ‘him’ is omitted in the edition of 1595. This plan has always been followed when a word which is referred to occurs twice in the same line.

Every footnote implies collation of all the editions given as collated in the introductory notes, that is, generally and wherever possible all

editions before 1600. It will however be understood that the spellings given are only those of the first text cited, and that in the case of misprints, which are as a rule only reported when they occur in the copy-text, the note that they occur in that text does not imply the non-existence of other misprints in other texts.

When the source of the text is not indicated but it is noted that the copy-text has a different reading, it is to be understood that I follow the first edition which is not cited as differing from mine. Misprints are, however, merely corrected from other editions, as much of the word as is correct being retained. Thus a word misprinted in the copy-text as 'secme,' would be given in my text as 'seeme,' even though all other editions should read 'seem.'

Unless the contrary is stated in the introductory note, variant readings of modern reprints, such as those of Collier and Grosart, are only given when the divergence from the quartos seems to be intentional, i. e. when the editors appear to have intended an emendation. Readings which seem mere misprints or errors of transcription are passed over in silence. May the next editor of Nashe do as much for mine !

The following abbreviations are used :—

Q indicates the old edition when there is only one, or all the old editions mentioned as having been collated, when there are more than one. For convenience it is used even when the old editions are not properly speaking quartos but octavos in fours.

The real purport of this sign *Q* is the negative one of calling attention to the absence of authority in any of the old editions for other readings than the one to which it is affixed, and it is thus sometimes convenient to use it in footnotes to dedications and epistles which are altogether omitted from certain of the old editions. In such cases it is, of course, to be taken as indicating, not all the early editions of the work, but only all those in which this particular item is contained, or, in other words, all the early editions of the particular item.

&c. indicates the agreement of all the *early* editions collated, after the one to which it is affixed. Thus, in the notes on *Pierce Penilesse*, 92^B *&c.* indicates a reading found in the second and third editions of 1592 and the editions of 1593 and 1595. The use of *&c.* does not imply the agreement of the modern editions.

c.w. means catch-word. Wishing to give everything which is found in the copy-text, I have been obliged to give the catch-words when they differ, in spelling or otherwise, from the first word of the following page.

Early editions, when there is more than one, are referred to by the

last two figures of their date when they are of different years; by capital letters when they are of the same year, or by the last two figures of the date and a superior capital when there are both editions of different years and more than one edition of the same year. Thus the editions of *A Countercuffe giuen to Martin Iunior* are referred to as *A* and *B*, both being dated 1589, while those of *Pierce Penilesse* are referred to as 92^A, 92^B, 92^C, 93, 95.

When it is necessary to refer to different copies of the same edition they are distinguished by lower-case letters, as in *The Returne of Pasquill*.

Modern editions are cited by an abbreviation of the name of the editor, as *Coll.*, *Gro.* for Collier and Grosart.

It should be mentioned that words inserted in the text have not been distinguished by being placed in brackets or otherwise. It seems quite useless and even misleading to indicate additions when there is no warning of omissions, substitutions, and transpositions. One might indeed invent signs for all these, but it is doubtful whether the advantage gained would compensate for the curious appearance of the text.

Signatures. The signatures of the copy-text are given in the margin opposite the beginning of the page to which they belong. They are always given as ¶ 1, A 2, &c., no regard being paid to their original punctuation or character. Errors are corrected.

The stroke ' | ' showing the page division in the copy-text is placed at the end of the last line on the page and *before* the catch-word. Grosart generally placed it after the catch-word, and when the spelling of the catch-word differed from that of the first word on the following page, followed the former. His action though unusual is not indefensible.

Introductory notes. In the text-volumes only matter which bears on the text as such is admitted, such as descriptions of editions and discussion of their relative merits where any discussion is necessary. Questions of date, authorship, &c., will be dealt with in the note-volume.

In describing the editions in greater detail than is customary in other than bibliographical works, I have not followed any particular theory of what may be called a complete description (would that there were such a theory to follow!), but have simply given such details as seemed most useful for differentiating the editions and for identifying the one to which any particular copy belongs, even though it may be defective. If the result is the bringing to light of any editions hitherto unknown, I shall think my labour has not been wasted.

xvi NOTE ON TREATMENT OF THE TEXT

The following points may be noticed here :—

1. The placing of a signature within brackets indicates that in the original the leaf is not signed.
2. Leaves are always *referred to* as A 1, A 2, &c., in Roman type, even when signed in black letter or Italic in the original. But when a signature is quoted in the contents list under ‘Collation’ it is, except for the substitution of Roman for black letter, given in the original form.

THE ANATOMIE OF ABSVRDITIE

Entry in the Stationers' Register :

19 Septembris [1588]

Master hacket Entred for his copie, The Anatomie of
absurdyties: Aucthorised vnder Doctor
NASHE. Stallers hand. and Master Coldokes
beinge to yt as warrant for this en-
trance. vj^d
(*S. R.*, ed. Arber, II. 499.)

The word NASHE is written in what is apparently an
indifferent imitation of the original handwriting, and
may be an interpolation (as above, p. 30).

Editions : (1) Early :

1589. The Anatomie of | *Absurditie* : | Contayning a breefe
confutation of the flender | imputed prayses to feminine
perfection, with a short | description of the feuerall prac-
tices of youth, and | sundry follies of our licentious | times. |
No lesse pleasant to be read, then profitable to be re-
membred, | especially of those, who liue more licentiously,
or addic-|ted to a more nyce stoycall austерitie. | Compiled
by T. Nashe. | *Ita diligendi sunt homines, vt eorum non* |
diligamus errores. | [ornament] | AT LONDON, | Printed
by I. Charlewood for Tho-|mas Hacket, and are to be
solde at his shop | in Lumberd street, vnder the signe of |
the Popes heade. | *Anno. Dom. 1589.* |

No colophon. Quarto. Not paged.

Collation : ¶⁴, A-E⁴. ¶ wanting, probably blank.
(¶ 2) Title, v. blank. ¶. iii. ‘ To the right worshipfull Charles
Blunt . . .’ *Rom. and Ital.* R-T. The Epistle. A. i. ‘ THE

THE ANATOMIE OF ABSVRDITIE

ANATOMIE . . . ' B. L., Rom. and Ital. R-T. The Anatomie | of Absurditie. (E 4) blank.

Signatures A to E in Black Letter, except A. iii., which is in Roman. A. iii. is signed, other fourth leaves unsigned. Sig. E is broken so as to resemble C.

Catch-words: ¶ 3. poy-(son) ¶ 4. since A 1. (a-)boue, B 1. nay, C 1. He D 1. except E 1. learne (Those of ¶ in Rom., C 1 in Ital., others in Black Letter.)

Copy used: That in the Bodleian Library (Malone, 566), wanting E 4.

1590. [Another issue] The Anatomie . . . *Anno. Dom. 1590.*

The sheets of the former edition with new date on the title-page.

Copy used: That in the British Museum (96. b. 15. (10).)

(2) *Modern Editions:*

1866 (Coll.) Illustrations of Old English Literature. Edited by J. Payne Collier. London: privately printed. Vol. iii, No. 6.

From a copy dated 1589, perhaps that now at Britwell.

1883-4 (Gro.) The Complete Works of Thomas Nashe . . . edited by A. B. Grosart. Vol. i, pp. 1-72.

From the copy in the Bodleian Library. Grosart does not state where he took the last leaf from. In the Bodleian copy it is supplied in manuscript.

Note on the issues:

There was only one edition, which was issued first with the date 1589 and later with the date 1590. So far as it is possible to make out without having copies of the two actually before one, not even the title-page was set up again, certainly the text was not. I have therefore thought myself at liberty to use the copy dated 1590 in the British Museum as copy-text.

The Anatomie of *Absurditie* :

Contayning a breefe confutation of the slender
imputed pryses to feminine perfection, with a short
description of the seuerall practises of youth, and
sundry follies of our licentious
times.

No leſſe pleasant to be read, then profitable to be remembred,
especially of those, who liue more licentiously, or addic-
ted to a more nyce stoycall austertie.

Compiled by T. Nashe.

*Ita diligendi sunt homines, ut eorum non
diligamus errores.*



AT LONDON,
Printed by I. Charlewood for Tho-
mas Hacket, and are to be folde at his shop
in Lumberd street, vnder the signe of
the Popes heade.

Anno. Dom. 1589,



To the right worshipfull Charles

¶ 3

Blunt Knight, adorned with all perfections of honour
or Arte, *T. Nashe* wisheth what euer content
felicite or Fortune may enferre.

(. : .)

5 **I**F (right Worshipfull) the olde Poet *Persæus*, thought it
most prejudicall to attention, for *Verres* to declaime
against theft, *Gracchus* against sedition, *Catiline* against
treason: what such *supplosus pedum* may sufficiently enter-
taine my presumption, who beeing an accessarie to Ab-
10 surditie, haue tooke vpon me to draw her Anatomie.
But that little alliance which I haue vnto Arte, will
authorize my follie in defacing her enemie: and the
circumstaunce of my infancie, that brought forth this
Embrion, somewhat tollerate their censures, that would
15 deriuie infamie from my vnexperienst infirmities. What
I haue written, proceeded not from the penne of vain-glory
but from the processe of that pensiuenes, which two
Summers since ouertooke mee: whose obscured cause, best
knowne to euerie name of curse, hath compelled my wit
20 to wander abroad vnregarded in this *satyricall* disguise,
& counsaile my content to dislodge his delight from
traytors eyes.

Gentlemen that know what it is to encounter with
ingratitude in the forme of *Cupid* will soone ayme at the
25 efficient of my armed phrase: for others that cannot
discerne *Venus* through a clowde, they will measure each
deformed fury by the Queene of Fayries, all birds by one
Phænix, all beasts by one Lyon. For my part, as I haue
no portion in any mans opinion, so am I the *Prorex* of my
30 priuate thought: which makes me terme poyson | poyson, ¶ 3^v
as well in a siluer peece, as in an earthen dish, and *Protæus*

Protæus, though girt in the apparrell of *Pactolus*. Howeuer the Syren change her shape, yet is she inseperable from deceit, and how euer the deuill alter his shaddowe, yet will he be found in the end to be a she Saint. I dare not prefixe a *Nigrum theta* to all of that sexe, least immortalitie 5 might seeme to haue beene taxt by my slauder, and the puritie of heauen bepudled by my vnhalloved speeche. Onely this shall my arguments inferre, and my anger auerre, that constancie will sooner inhabite the body of a Camelion, a Tyger or a Wolfe, then the hart of a woman ; 10 who predestinated by the father of eternitie, euen in the nonage of nature, to be the *Iliads* of euils to all Nations haue neuer inuerted their creation in any Countrey but ours.

Whose heauenborne *Elizabeth*, hath made maiestie 15 herselfe mazed, and the worlds eye sight astonied. Time, wel maist thou exult, that in the cuening of thy age, thou cōceuedst such a subiect of wonder, & Peace, sing *io p̄ean*, for that in despight of dissention, she hath patroniz'd thee vnder her wings. Felicitie saw her inuested with roialtie, 20 and became young againe in the beholding. Fortune ashamed each sorrowe shoulde smile, and her face alone be wrapt with wrinkles, suted poore *Flaunders* and *Fraunce* in her frownes, & saluted *Englands* soule with a smoothed forehead. Plenty and Abundance, that long had liued as 25 exiles with the vtmost *Indians*, were no sooner aduertised of her aduaancement, but they made their passage through ten thousand perrils, to spende their prosperitie in her presence. Why seekes my penne to breake into the build- 30 ings of Fame, and Eccho my amazed thoughts to her brasen Towres, when as my tongue is too to base a *Tryton* to eternise her praise, that thus vpholdeth our happy daies ?

Wherefore since my wordes impouerish her worths, my feruent zeale shall be the vncessant attendant on her weale. I feare right worshipfull, least the affection of my phrase, 35 present mee as a foe to your important affaires, whose hart exalted with the eye sight of such soueraigntie, as

soares aboue humane sight, coulde not but methodize this admiration in this digression of | distinction. But frō such ¶ 4 entercourse of excuse, let my vnschooled indignities, conuernt themselues to your courtesie, and acquaint you with 5 the counsaile of my rude dedication.

So it was, that not long since lighting in company with manie extraordinarie Gentlemen, of most excellent parts, it was my chance (amongst other talke which was generally trauersed amongst vs) to mooue diuers Questions, as touching the seuerall qualities required in *Castalions* Courtier: one came in with that of *Ouid, Semper amabilis esto*, another stood more stricktly on the necessitie of that affabilitie, which our Latinists entitle *facetus*, & we more familiarlie describe by the name of discoursing: the third 15 came in with his carpet deuises and tolde what it was to tickle a Citterne, or haue a sweete stroke on the Lute, to daunce more delicatlie, and reuell it brauelie. The fourth as an enemie to their faction, confuted all these as effeminate follies, and would needes maintaine, that the 20 onely adiuncts of a Courtier were schollership and courage, returning picked curiositie to paulyry Scriueners and such like, affabilitie to *Aristippus* and his crue, Citterning and Luting, to the birthright of euerie sixe pennie slause, and to conclude, dauncing & reuellling, to euerie Taylors holie day 25 humour. But as for those two branches of honor before mencioned, they distinguish a Gentleman from a broking Iacke, and a Courtier from a clubheaded companion. This discourse thus continued, at length they fell by a iarring gradation, to the particular demonstrations of theyr 30 generall assertions. One woulde haue one thing preferred, because some one man was thereby aduaunced, another, another thing, because some noble man loues it; euery man shotte his bolte, but this was the vpshot, that England afforded many mediocrities, but neuer saw any thing more 35 singuler then worthy Sir *Phillip Sidney*, of whom it might truely be saide, *Arma virumque cano*. In this heate of

13 *facetius Q.* Perhaps the English word 'facetious' is meant.

THE EPISTLE

opinions, many hopes of Nobility were brought in question, but nothing so generally applauded in euery mans comparisons as your worshippes most absolute perfections: whose effectuall iudicall of your vertues, made such deepe ¶ 4^v impression in my attentive imagination, as euer | since 5 there hath not any pleasure mixt it selfe so much with my secret vowes, as the vndefinite desire to be suppliant vnto you in some subiect of witte. From which, howsoeuer this my vndigested endeuour declineth, yet more earnestly I beseeche you, by that entire loue which you beare vnto 10 Artes, to accept of it in good part. And as the foolish Painter in *Plutarch*, hauing blurred a ragged Table, with the rude picture of a dunghill Cocke, willed his boy in any case to driue away all lyue Cocks, from that his worthles workmanship, least by the comparison he might be con- 15 uinced of ignorance: so I am to request your worship, whiles you are perusing my Pamphlet, to lay aside out of your sight, whatsoeuer learned inuention hath heretofore bredde your delight, least their singularitie reflect my simplicitie, their excellencie conuince mee of innocence. 20 Thus hoping you will euery way censure of me in fauour, as one that dooth partake some parts of a Scholler, I commit you to the care of that soueraigne content, which your soule desireth.

Your most affectionate
in all,

Vsque aras,

T. Nashe.

THE ANATOMIE OF ABSVRDITIE.

A 1

ZEuces beeing about to drawe the counterfet of *Iuno*, assembled all the *Agrigentine* Maydes, whō after he pausing had viewed, he chose out fие of y^e fayrest, that in their beautie, he might imitate what was most excellent: euen so it fareth with mee, who beeing about to anatomize Absurditie, am vrged to take a view of sundry mens vanitie, a suruey of their follie, a briefe of their barbarisme, to runne through Authors of the absurder sort, assembled in the Stacioners shop, sucking and selecting 10 out of these vpstart antiquaries, somewhat of their vnsauery duncerie, meaning to note it with a *Nigrum theta*, that each one at the first sight may eschew it as infectious, to shewe it to the worlde that all men may shunne it. And euen as *Macedon Phillip* hauing finished his warres builded 15 a Cittie for the worst sorte of men, which hee called *πονηρόπολις*, *malorum Ciuitas*, so I, hauing laide aside my grauer studies for a season, determined with my selfe beeing idle in the Countrey, to beginne in this vacation, the foundation of a trifling subiect, which might shroude 20 in his leaues, the abusive enormities of these our times. It fareth nowe a daies with vnlearned Idiots as it doth with she Asses, who bring foorth all their life long; euen so these brainlesse Bussards, are euery quarter bigge wyth one Pamphlet or other. But as an Egge that is full, 25 beeing put into water sinketh to the bottome, whereas that which is emptie floateth a-boue, so those that are more A 1^v exquisitly furnished with learning shroude themselues in

obscuritie, whereas they that are voide of all knowledge, endeavour continually to publish theyr follie.

Such and the very same are they that obtrude themselves vnto vs, as the Authors of eloquence and fountains of our finer phrases, when as they sette before vs nought but a confused masse of wordes without matter, a Chaos of sentences without any profitable sence, resembling drummes, which beeing emptie within, sound big without. Were it that any Morall of greater moment, might be fished out of their fabulous follie, leauing theyr words, we would cleave to their meaning, pretermittting their painted shewe, we woulde pry into their propounded sence, but when as lust is the tractate of so many leaues, and loue passions the lauish dispence of so much paper, I must needes sende such idle wits to shrift to the vicar of S. Fooles, who in steede of a worser may be such a Gothamists ghostly Father. Might *Ouids* exile admonish such Idlebies to betake them to a new trade, the Presse should be farre better employed, Histories of antiquitie not halfe so much belyed, Minerals, stones, and herbes, should not haue such cogged natures and names ascribed to them without cause, Englishmen shoulde not be halfe so much Italinated as they are, finallie, loue woulde obtaine the name of lust, and vice no longer maske vnder the visard of vertue.

Are they not ashamed in their prefixed posies, to adorne a pretence of profit mixt with pleasure, when as in their booke there is scarce to be found one precept pertaining to vertue, but whole quires fraught with amorous discourses, kindling *Venus* flame in *Vulcans* forge, carrying *Cupid* in tryumph, alluring euen vowed *Vestals* to tredawry, in- chaunting chaste mindes and corrupting the continenst. Hencefoorth, let them alter their posies of profit with intermingled pleasure, inserting that of *Ouid* in steed.

*Si quis in hoc artem populo non nouit amandi,
Me legat & lecto carmine doctus amet.*

35

So shall the discreet Reader vnderstand the contents by
the | title, and their purpose by their posie: what els I A 2
pray you doe these bable bookemungers endeuer, but to
repaire the ruinous wals of *Venus* Court, to restore to the
5 worlde that forgotten Legendary licence of lying, to
imitate a fresh the fantasticall dreames of thosc exiled
Abbie-lubbers, from whose idle pens proceeded those
worne out impressions of the feyned no where acts, of
Arthur of the rounde table, Arthur of litle Brittaine, sir
10 Tristram, Hewon of Burdeaux, the Squire of low degree,
the foure sons of Amon, with infinite others. It is not of
my yeeres nor studie to censure these mens foolerie more
theologicallie, but to shew how they to no Common-wealth
commoditie, tosse ouer their troubled imaginations to haue
15 the praise of the learning which they lack. Many of them
to be more amiable with their friends of the Feminine
sexe, blot many sheetes of paper in the blazing of Womens
slender praises, as though in that generation there raigned
and alwaies remained such singuler simplicitie, that all
20 posterities should be enioyned by duetie, to fill and furnish
theyr Temples, nay Townes and streetes, with the shrines
of the Saints. Neuer remembraunce, that as there was a loyall
Lucretia, so there was a light a loue *Lais*, that as there was
a modest *Medullina*, so there was a mischiuous *Medea*, that
25 as there was a stedfast *Timoclea*, so there was a trayterous
Tarpeya, that as there was a sober *Sulpitia*, so there was a
deceitful *Scylla*, that as there was a chast *Claudia*, so there
was a wanton *Clodia*.

But perhaps Women assembling their senate, will seeke
30 to stop my mouth by most voices, and as though there
were more better then bad in the bunch, will obiect vnto
me *Atlanta*, *Architumna*, *Hippo*, *Sophronia*, *Lexena*: to
these I will oppose proude *Antigone*, *Niobe*, *Circe*, *Flora*,
Rhodope, the despightfull daughters of *Danaus*, *Biblis* and
35 *Canace* who fell in loue with their owne Brothers, *Mirrha*
with her owne Father, *Semiramis* with her own sonne,
Phædra with *Hippolitus*, *Venus* inconstancie, *Iunos* iealousie,

the riotous wantonnesse of *Pasiphae*, with whō I wil knit vp this packet of Paramours. To this might be added A 2^v *Mantuans* inuetiue against them, but | that pittie makes me refraine from renewing his worne out complaints, the wounds wherof the former forepast feminine sexe hath 5 felt. I, but here the *Homer* of Women hath forestalled an obiection, saying that *Mantuans* house holding of our Ladie, he was enforced by melancholie into such vehemencie of speech, and that there be amongst them as amongst men, some good, some badde : but then let vs heare what was the 10 opinion of ancient Philosophers, as touching the Femall sexe.

One of thē beeing asked what estate that was, which made wise men fooles, and fooles wisemen, answered marriage. *Aristotle* doth counsell vs, rather to gette a little wife then a great, because alwaies a little euill is 15 better then a great, so that hee counted all women without exception, euill and vngratiouis. Another of them beeing asked what was the greatest miracle in the world, saide, a chaste woman. One requiring *Diogenes* iudgment when it was best time to take a wife, answered, for the young 20 man not yet, and the olde man neuer. *Pythagoras* sayd, that there were three euils not to be suffered, fire, water, and a woman. And the forenamed *Cinick* deemed them the wisest lyers in the world, which tell folke they will be married, and yet remaine single, accounting it the lesse 25 inconuenience of two extremities to choose the lesse. The selfe same man affirmeth it to be the only means to escape all euils, to eschew womens counsaile and not to square our actions by their direction. The olde Sages did admonish young men, if euer they matcht wyth any wife, not 30 to take a rich Wife, because if she be rich, shee wyll not be content to be a wife, but will be a Maister or Mistresse, in commaunding, chiding, correcting & controlling. An other Philosopher compared a woman richly apparelled, to a dunghill couered with grasse. *Socrates* deemed it the 35 desperatest enterprise that one can take in hand, to gourne a womans will.

What shall I say of him that beeing askt, from what women a man should keepe himselfe, answered, from the quick & from the deade, adding moreouer, that one euill ioynes with another when a woman is sicke. *Demos-*
5 thenes saide, that it was | the greatest torment, that a man A 3 could inuent to his enemies vexation, to giue him his daughter in marriage, as a domesticall Furie to disquiet him night and day. *Democritus* accounted a faire chaste woman a miracle of miracles, a degree of immortality,
10 a crowne of tryumph, because shee is so harde to be founde. Another beeing asked, who was he that coulde not at any time be without a wife, answered, hee that was alwaies accurst: and what dooth thys common prouerbe, he that marrieth late marrieth euill, insinuate vnto vs, but
15 that if a man meane to marry, he were as good begin betimes as tarry long, and beeing about to make a vertue of necessitie and an arte of patience, they are to beginne in theyr young and tender age. Moreouer, amongst the thinges which change the nature and conditions of men,
20 women and wine are sette in the forefront, as the chiefe causes of their calamitie.

Plutarch in his precepts of wedlocke, alleageth a reason why men faile so often in choosing of a good wife, because saith hee, the number of them is so small. There be two
25 especiall troubles in this worlde saith *Seneca*, a wife and ignorauunce. *Marcus Aurelius* compared women to shyps, because to keepe them wel and in order, there is alwayes somewhat wanting: and *Plautus* saith, that women decke themselues so gorgiously and lace themselues so nicely,
30 because foule deformed things seeke to sette out themselues sooner, then those creatures that are for beauty far more amiable. For my part I meane to suspende my sentence, and to let an Author of late memorie be my speaker, who affyrmeth that they carrie Angels in their
35 faces to entangle men and deuils in their deuices. *Valerius in Epist. ad Ruf.* hath these words of womens trecherous works, *Amice ne longo dispendio te suspendam, lege aureolum*

Theophrasti, & Medeam Iasonis, & vix paucā inuenies impossibilia mulieri: Amice dē tibi Deus omnipotens fēminę fallacia non falli. My friend, least I should holde thee too long with too tedious a circumstaunce, rade but the golden Booke of Theophrastus, and Iasons Medea, and thou shalt 5 finde fewe things impossible for a woman: My swet
 A 3^r friende, GOD Almightie graunt that thou | beest not entrapt by womens trecherie. Furthermore, in the same place he saith, *Quis mulicbri garrulitati aliquid committit, quæ illud solum potest tacere quod nescit: who will commit any 10 thing to a womans tailing trust, who concaces nothing but that shce knowes not?* I omit to tell with what phrases of disgrace the ancient fathers haue defaced them, wherof one of th̄ saith: *Quid aliud est mulier nisi amicitiæ inimica, &c.* What is a woman but an enemic 15 to friendshippe, an unevitable paine, a necessary evil, a naturall temptation, a desired calamitie, a domesticall danger, a delectable detriment, the nature of the which is euill shadowed with the colour of goodnes. Therefore if to put her away be a sinne, to keepe her still 20 must needes be a torment. Another sayth: *Illud aduerte quod extra paradisum vir factus est, &c.* Consider this, that man was made without Paradise, woman within Paradise, that thereby we may learne, that euery one winneth not credit by the nobilitie of the place, or of his 25 stock, but by his vertue. Finally, man made better is foūd without Paradise in a place inferior, and contrariwise, she which was created in a better place, namely Paradise, is founde to be worser. Another hath these words: *Diligit mulier ut capiat, decipit ut rapiat: amat quod habes, non 30 quod es.* A woman loues that she may entrappe, shee deceives that she may spoyle, she loues that thou hast, not that thou art. Another writeth after thys manner: *Nulla est vxoris electio, &c.* There is no choise to be had of a wife, but euen as she comes so we must take her: if teatish, if 35 foolish, if deformed, if proude, if stinking breathed, or

whatsoever other fault she hath, we know not till we be married. A Horse, an Oxe, or an Asse, or a dogge, or whatsoever other vile merchandise, are first prooued, and then bought, a mans wife alone is neuer throughly seene before, least shee dysplease, before she be married. *Viros ad vnumquodque maleficium singulæ cupiditates impellunt* (saith Tully) mulieres ad omnia maleficia cupiditas una dicit: mulierium enim vitiorum omnium fundamentum est avaritia. Mens severall desires doe egge them to each kind of euill, but one onely affection leades women to all kind of wickednes: for couetousnesse is the foundation of all | *womens euill inclinations.* Seneca also saith thus in his A 4 Proverbs: *Aut amat, aut odit mulier, nil tertium est, dediscere flectre feminam, mendacium est, &c.* A woman either loues, or hates, there is no third thing: it is an vntruth to say, that a woman can learne to forget to weepe: two kinde of teares are common in their eyes, the one of true sorrowe, the other of deceipt: a Woman meditates euill when she is musing alone.

20 Thus you see howe farre their wickednes hath made Authors to wade with inuetiues in their dispraise: wherefore I shall not need to vrge their inconstancie more vehemently, resembling them to *Battus*, who was wonne with a Cowe, and lost with a Bull: nor stand to repeate 25 that of *Plato*, who doubted whether he shold put women among reasonable or vnreasonable creatures, who also gaue thanks to Nature especiallie for three things, whereof the first and cheefest was, that shee had made him a man and not a woman. I omitte that of *Aristotle*, who alleaging 30 the inconueniencie of too timely marriages, expresseth this as the especial incommoditie, that it is the Author of superfluities, & good for nothing but to fill the world with women. Reade ouer all *Homer*, and you shall neuer almost see him bring in *Juno*, but brawling and iarring 35 with *Iupiter*, noting therby what an yrkesome kind of people they are. In some Countries therefore, the Bride at the day of her mariage, is crowned by the Matrons

with a Garland of prickles, and so deliuered to her husband, that he may know he hath tyed himselfe to a thornie pleasure. The *Massagets* told *Pompey* they lay with their wiues but once a weeke, because they wold not heare their scoldings in the day, nor their pulings in the night. 5

But what should I spend my yncke, waste my paper, stub my penne, in painting forth theyr vgly imperfections, and peruerse peeuishnesse, when as howe many hayres they haue on their heads, so many snares they will find for a neede to snarle men in ; how many voices all of them 10 haue, so many vices each one of them hath ; how many tongues, so many tales ; how many eyes, so many allurements. What shall I say ? They haue | more shyfts then *Ioue* had sundry shapes, who in the shape of a Satyre inueigled *Antiope* ; tooke *Amphitrios* forme, when on 15 *Alcmena* he begat *Hercules* ; to *Danae*, he came in a showre of gold ; to *Læda* in the likenes of a Swan ; to *Io* like a Heyfer ; to *Ægine* like a flame ; to *Mnemosyne* like a Sheephearde ; to *Proserpina* like a Serpent ; to *Pasiphae* like a Bull ; to the Nymph *Nonacris* in the likenes of *Apollo*. 20 For crueltie they seeme more terrible then Tygers : was not *Orpheus* the excellentest Musition in any memory, torne in peeces by Women, because for sorrow of his wife *Euridice*, he did not onelie himselfe refuse the loue of many women, and liued a sole life, but also disswaded frō 25 their company ? Did not mercilesse *Minerua*, turne the hayres of *Medusa*, whom shee hated, into hyssing Adders ? Therefore see how farre they swerue from theyr purpose, who with Greene colours, seeke to garnish such Gorgonlike shapes. Is not witchcraft especially vpholden by women ? 30 whither men or women be more prone vnto carnall cōcupiscence, I referre them to *Thebane Tyresias*, who gaue iudgment against them long agoe : what their impudencie is, let Antiquitie be Arbitre. Did not *Calpurnias* impudencie, (who was so importunate and vnreasonable in 35 pleading her owne cause) giue occasion of a Law to be

made, that neuer woman after shoulde openly pleade her owne cause in Courtes of iudgment.

Sabina may be a glasse for them to see their pride in, who vsually bathed herselue in the milke of fife hundred 5 Asses, to preserue her beauty. *Galeria* also that gallant Dame, which scorned the golden Pallace of the Emperour *Nero*, as not curiosious inough to shroude her beauty, yea *Cleopatra* according to *Xiphilinus* iudgment, was not slaine w̄ venimous Snakes, but with ȳ bodkin that she curled her 10 hayre. To cōclude, what pride haue they left vnpractised, what enticement to lust haue they not tried?

Did they imagine that beautie to be most commendable, which is least coloured, and that face most faire, which seldommest comes into the open ayre, they would neuer 15 set out them | selues to be seene, ne yet woulde they couet B 1 to leauē impressions of their beauties in other mens bodies, nor the forme of their faces in other mens fancies. But women through want of wisedome are growne to such wantonnesse, that vpon no occasion they will crosse the 20 streeete, to haue a glaunce of some Gallant, deeming that men by one looke of them, shoulde be in loue with them, and will not stick to make an errant ouer the way, to purchase a Paramour to helpe at a pinche, who vnder her husbands, that hoddy-peekes nose, must haue all the destil- 25 ling dew of his delicate Rose, leauing him onely a sweet sent, good inough for such a sencelesse sotte.

It was a custome in *Greece*, that euery married woman, as soone as she was betrothed to her husbande, shoulde touche fire and water, that as the fire purgeth & purifieth 30 al thinges, and the water is cleane, and of nature fitte to clarifie euerie part of the body, and to sette the face free from any spot, except it be an *Ethiopian* blot, so she would reserue herselue chaste and vndefiled to her husband, her head. In *Boëtia* they will not suffer a new married wife 35 at first to goe ouer the thresholde, because she should seeme vnwilling to enter in there, where shee should leauē and lay aside her chastitie. In the same place also they

burne the Axletree of a Cart before the doore of the bryde, after she is married, signifying that she ought not to gadde abroade, as though that were remoued which might moue her to make any errants vnto any other place.

In *Rome* the bride was wont to come in with her spyndle 5 and her distaffe at her side, at the day of her mariage, and her husband crowned and cōpassed the Gates with her yarne, but now adaiers Towe is either too deere or too daintie, so that if hee will maintaine the custome, hee must crowne his Gates with their Scarfes, Periwigs, Bracelets, 10 and Ouches; which imports thus much vnto vs, that Maides and Matrons now adaiers be more charie of their store, so that they will be sure they will not spend too much spittle with spynning, yea theyr needles are nettles, for they lay thē aside as needlesse, for feare of pricking their fingers, 15

B 1^v when they are painting theyr faces, | nay, they will abandon that trifling which may stay them at home, but if the temperature of the wether will not permitte them to pop into the open ayre, a payre of cardes better pleaseth her thē a peece of cloth, her beades then her booke, a bowle 20 full of wine then a handfull of wooll, delighting more in a daunce then in *Danids Psalmes*, to play with her dogge then to pray to her God: setting more by a loue Letter, then ſ lawe of the Lord, by one Pearle then twenty *Pater nosters*. Shee had rather view her face a whole morning 25 in a looking Glasse then worke by the howre Glasse, ſhee is more sparing of her Spanish needle then her Spanish gloues, occupies oftner her ſetting ſtiche then ſheeres, and ioyes more in her Iewels, then in her Iesus.

Is this correspondent to the modestie of Maydens, and 30 the maners of Matrons? nay, rather it ſeemes that law is turned to libertie, and honest ciuilite into impudent shamefastnes. Antient antiquitie was woont to bee ſuch a stoycall obſeruer of continencie, that women were not permitted ſo much as to kiffe their Kinsmen, till the *Troyan Dames* first 35 attempted it in *Italie*, for when as by the force of tempestious ſtormes they were cast vpon the Italian Coaste, and each man

landed vpon whom the salt sea fome had not seased, the Women beeing wearie of theyr yrkesome trauaile and long and tedious toyle, abhorring the sight of the Seas, set the shyps on a light fire ; by reason of the which deed, they 5 dreading the displeasure of their Husbandes, ran euery one to their Kinsman, kissing most kindly, and embracing most amiably euery one that they mette : from that time forth to this present, it hath beene taken vp for a custome, not to be sparing in that kind of curtesie.

10 But now craftie *Cupid* practising the wonted sleights and shuffling his shafts, meditates new shifts, which each amorous Courtier by his veneriall experience may conjecturallie conceiue. *Menelaus* hospitalitie mooued young *Paris* to adulterie. I say no more, you knowe the rest, the wiser 15 can apply it. Well worthy are the *Essenians* to be extolled for their wyse-|dome, who abhorre the company of B 2 Women and detest the possession of gold and siluer, and they to be deemed as soothing flatterers, who spende so much paper about a proposition of praise, sette apart from 20 any appearance of probabilitie. Peraduenture they thinke, that as the Poets inuent that *Atlas* vpholds the Heauens with his shoulders, because by an excellent imagination he found out the course of the stars, euen so they by compiling of Pamphlets in their Mistresse praises, to be called the 25 restorers of womankind. But idle heads are vsually occupied about such trifling texts, wanton wits are combred with those wonted fittes, such busie braines sowe where they reap small gaines. When witte giues place to will, and reason to affection, then follie with full saile launcheth 30 foorth most desperatlie into the deepe. Did they consider that that prayse is onely priuiledged in wise mens opinion, which onely proceedes from the penne of the praysed, they would haue paused a while vpon the worthlesse imputation of such prodigall commendation, and consulted for their 35 credit in the composition of some other more profitable contrary subiect.

I leaue these in their follie, and hasten to other mens

furie, who make the Presse the dunghill whether they carry all the muck of their mellancholicke imaginations, pretending forsooth to anatomize abuses and stubbe vp sin by the rootes, whē as there waste paper beeing wel viewed, seemes fraught with nought els sauē dogge daies effects, who wrest- 5 ing places of Scripture against pride, whoredome, couetousnes, gluttonie, and drunkennesse, extend their inuetiues so farre against the abuse, that almost the things remaines not whereof they admitte anie lawfull vse. Speaking of pride, as though they were afraid some body should cut too large 10 peniworthes out of their cloth: of couetousnes, as though in them that Prouerbe had beene verified, *Nullus ad amissas ibit amicus opes*: of gluttonie, as though their liuing did lye vppon another mans trencher: of drunkennesse, as though they had beene brought vppe all the dayes of their life with 15 bread and water: and finally of whoredome, as though they

B 2v had beene Eunuches from theyr | cradle, or blind from the howre of their conception. But as the Stage player is nere the happier, because hee represents oft times the persons of mightie men, as of Kings & Emperours, so I account such 20 men neuer the holier, because they place praise in painting foorth other mens imperfections.

These men resemble Trees, which are wont eftsoones to die, if they be fruitfull beyond their wont, euen so they to die in vertue, if they once ouershoote themselues too much 25 wyth inueighing against vice, to be brainesicke in workes if they be too fruitfull in words. And euen as the Vultures slay nothing themselues, but pray vpon ^t which of other is slayne, so these men inueigh against no new vice, which heeretofore by the censures of the learned hath not beene 30 sharply condemned, but teare that peecemeale wise, which long since by ancient wryters was wounded to the death, so that out of their forepassed paines, ariseth their Pamphlets, out of their volumes, theyr inuetiues. Good God, that those that neuer tasted of any thing sauē the excrements 35 of Artes, whose thredde-bare knowledge beeing bought at the second hand, is spotted, blemished, and defaced,

through translaters rigorous rude dealing, shoulde preferre their fluttered sutes before other mens glittering gorgious array, should offer them water out of a muddie pit, who haue continually recourse to the Fountaine, or dregs to drink, who haue wine to sell. *At scire tuum nihil est, nisi te scire hoc sciatur alter.* Thy knowledge bootes thee not a button, except another knowes that thou hast this knowledge. *Anacharsis* was wont to say, that the *Athenians* vsed money to no other ende but to tell it, euen so these men make no other vse of learning but to shewe it. But as the Panther smelleth sweetelie but onely to brute beastes, which shee draweth vnto her to theyr destruction, not to men in like maner, so these men seeme learned to none but to Idiots, whō with a coloured shew of zeale, they allure vnto them to their illusion, and not to the learned in like sort.

I know not howe it delighteth them to put theyr Oare in another mans boate, and their foote in another mans boote, to incurre that prouerbiall checke, *Ne sutor ultra crepidam,* B 3 or that oratoricall taunt, *Quam quisque norit artem in ea se exerceat;* with the Elephant to wade and wallowe in the shallow water, when they woulde sooner sincke then swym in the deepe Riuier; to be conuersant in those Authors which they cannot vnderstande, but by the translatour their Interpreter; to vaunte reading when the sum of their diuinitie consists in twopennie Catichismes: and yet their ignoraunt zeale wyll presumptuously presse into the Presse, enquiring most curioslie into euery corner of the Common wealth, correcting that sinne in others, wherwith they are corrupted themselues. To prescribe rules of life, belongeth not to the ruder sorte; to condemne those callings which are approoued by publique authoritie, argueth a proude contempt of y^e Magistrates superiority. *Protogenes* knew *Apelles* by one lyne, neuer otherwise seene, and you may knowe these mens spirit by theyr speeche, their minds by their medling, their folly by their phrase. View their workes, and know their vanitie, see the Bookes bearing their name, and smile in thy sleeue at their shame. A small

ship in a shallow Riuver, seemes a huge thing, but in the sea
a very litle vessell, euen so each trifling Pamphlet to the
simpler sorte, a most substantiall subiect, whereof the wiser
lightly account, and the learned laughing contemne. There-
fore more earnestly I agrauate their faulte, because their 5
crime is crept into credit, and their dooinges deemed
deuotion, when as purposelie to some mans despight, they
bring into act their cholericke motions.

A common practise it is now adaiers, which breeds our
common calamitic, that the cloake of zeale, shoulde be vnto 10
an hypocrite in steed of a coate of Maile ; a pretence of
puritie, a pentisse for iniquitie ; a glose of godlines, a couert
for all naughtines. When men shall publique lie make
profession of a more inward calling, and shall waxe cold
in the workes of charitie, and feruent in malice, liberall in 15
nothing but in lauishe backbyting, holding hospitalitie for
an eschewed heresie, and the performance of good workes
for Papistrie, may wee not then haue recourse to that
B 3^v caueat of Christ in the Gospell, *Cauete ab ihypocritis.* It
is not the writhing of the face, the heauing vppe of the 20
eyes to heauen, that shall keepe these men, from hauing
their portion in hell. Might they be saued by their booke,
they haue the Bible alwaises in their bosome, and so had
the Pharisies the Lawe embroidered in their garments.
Might the name of the Church infeaffe them in the kingdom 25
of Christ, they will include it onely in their couenticles,
and bounde it euen in Barnes, which many times they
make their meeting place, and will shameleslie face men
out, that they are the Church militant heere vpon earth,
whē as they rather seeme a company of Malecontents, 30
vnworthy to breath on the earth. Might the boast of the
spirit pind to their sleeues, make them elect before all
other, they will make men beleue, they doe nothing
whereto the spirit dooth not perswade them : and what
Heretiques were there euer that did not arrogate as much 35
to themselues ? These they be that publiquely pretende
a more regenerate holines, beeing in their priuate Chambers

the expresse imitation of Howligasse. It is too tedious to the Reader, to attend the circumstaunce of their seuerall shyfes, the lothsomnesse of their guilefull wiles, the tract path of theyr treacherie: you know them without my dis-
5 course, and can describe their hypocrisie, though I be not the Notarie of their iniquitie. Seeing their works, shun theyr waies.

Another sort of men there are, who though not addicted to such counterfet curiositie, yet are they infected with
10 a farther improbabilitie; challenging knowledge vnto the selues of deeper misteries, whē as with *Thales Milesius* they see not what is vnder their feete; searching more curioslie into the secrets of nature, when as in respect of deeper knowledge, they seeme meere naturals; coueting
15 with the *Phænix* to approche so nye to the sunne, that they are scorcht with his beames, and confounded with his brightnes. Who made them so priuie to the secrets of the Almighty, that they should foretell the tokens of his wrath, or terminate the time of his vengeance? But lightly some
20 newes attends the ende of euery Tearme, some Monsters are booke, though not bred against vacation times, | which B 4
are straight waie diuersly dispearst into euerie quarter, so that at length they become the Alehouse talke of euery Carter: yea, the Country Plowman feareth a *Calabrian*
25 floodde in the midst of a furrowe, and the sillie Sheephearde committing his wandering sheepe to the custodie of his wappe, in his field naps dreameth of flying Dragons, which for feare least he should see to the losse of his sight, he falleth a sleepe; no star he seeth in the night but seemeth
30 a Comet; hee lighteth no sooner on a quagmyre, but he thinketh this is the foretold Earthquake, wherof his boy hath the Ballet.

Thus are the ignorant deluded, the simple misused, and the sacred Science of Astronomie discredited; & in truth
35 what leasings will not make-shyfes inuent for money? What wyl they not faine for gaine? Hence come our babling Ballets, and our new found Songs and Sonets,

which euery rednose Fidler hath at his fingers end, and euery ignorant Ale knight will breath foorth ouer the potte, as soone as his braine waxeth hote. Be it a truth which they would tune, they enterlace it with a lye or two to make meeter, not regarding veritie, so they may make 5 vppe the verse; not vnlike to *Homer*, who cared not what he fained, so hee might make his Countrimen famous. But as the straightest things beeing put into water, seeme crooked, so the crediblest trothes, if once they come with in compasse of these mens wits, seeme tales. Were it that 10 the infamie of their ignoraunce did redound onelie vpon themselues, I could be content to apply my speech otherwise, then to their *Apuleyan* eares, but sith they obtaine the name of our English Poets, and thereby make men thinke more baselie of the wittes of our Countrey, I cannot 15 but turne them out of their counterfet liuerie, and brand them in the foreheade, that all men may know their falsehood. Well may that saying of *Campanus* be applyed to our English Poets, which hee spake of them in his time: *They make (saith he) Poetry an occupation, lying is their lyving, 20 and fables are their mooueables; if thou takest away trifles, sillie soules, they will famish for hunger.* It were to be
 B 4^v wished, that the acts of the ventrous, and | the praise of the virtuous were, by publique Edict, prohibited by such mens merry mouthes to be so odiouslie extolde, as rather breedes 25 detestation then admiration, lothing then lyking. What politique Counsailour or valiant Souldier will ioy or glorie of this, in that some stitcher, Weauer, spendthrift, or Fidler, hath shuffled or slubberd vp a few ragged Rimes, in the memoriall of the ones prudence, or the others prowesse? 30 It makes the learned sort to be silent, whē as they see vnlearned sots so insolent.

These Bussards thinke knowledge a burthen, tapping it before they haue halfe tunde it, venting it before they haue filled it, in whom that saying of the Orator is verified: *Ante 35 ad dicendum quam ad cognoscendum veniunt. They come to speake before they come to know.* They contemne Arts as

vnprofitable, contenting themselues with a little Countrey Grammer knowledge, god wote, thanking God with that abscedarie Priest in Lincolnshire, that he neuer knewe what that Romish popish Latine meant. Verie requisite were it, that such blockheads had some *Albadanensis Appollonius*, to send them to some other mechanicall Arte, that they might not thus be the staine of Arte. Such kind of Poets were they that *Plato* excluded from his Common wealth, and *Augustine* banished *ex ciuitate Dei*, which the *Romans* derided, and the *Lacedemonians* scorned, who wold not suffer one of *Archilocus* booke to remaine in their Countrey: and amisse it were not, if these which meddle with the Arte they knowe not, were bequethed to Bridwell, there to learne a new occupation: for as the Basiliske with his hisse, drieueth all other Serpents from ^þ place of his aboad, so these rude Rithmours with their iarring verse, allienate all mens mindes from delighting in numbers excellency, which they haue so defaced that wee may well exclaine with the Poet, *Quantum mutatus ab illo.*

20 But least I should be mistaken as an enemie to Poetrie, or at least not taken as a friend to that studie, I haue thought good to make them priuie to my mind, by expressing my meaning. I account of Poetrie, as of a more hidden & diuine kinde | of Philosophy, enwrapped in blinde C 1
 25 Fables and darke stories, wherin the principles of more excellent Arts and morall precepts of manners, illustrated with diuers examples of other Kingdomes and Countries, are contained: for amongst the *Grecians* there were Poets, before there were any Philosophers, who embrased entirely
 30 the studie of wisedom, as *Cicero* testifieth in his *Tusculanes*, whereas he saith, that of all sorts of men, Poets are most ancient, who to the intent they might allure men with a greater longing to learning, haue folowed two things, sweetnes of verse, and variety of inuention, knowing that delight
 35 doth prick men forward to the attaining of knowledge, and that true things are rather admirde if they be included in some wittie fiction, like to Pearles that delight more if they

be deeper sette in gold. Wherefore seeing Poetry is the very same with Philosophy, the fables of Poets must of necessitie be fraught with wisedome & knowledge, as framed of those men, which haue spent all their time and studies in the one and in the other. For euen as in Vines, the 5 Grapes that are fayrest and sweetest, are couched vnder the branches that are broadest and biggest, euen so in Poems, the thinges that are most profitable, are shrouded vnder the Fables that are most obscure: neither is there almost any poeticall fygment, wherein there is not some 10 thing comprehended, taken out either of Histories, or out of the Phisicks or Ethicks; wher vpon *Erasmus Roterdamus* very wittilie termes Poetry, a daintie dish seasoned with delights of euery kind of discipline. Nowe whether ryming be Poetry, I referre to the iudgment of the learned: yea, let 15 the indifferent Reader diuine, what deepe misterie can be placed vnder plodding meeter. Who is it, that reading Beuis of Hampton, can forbeare laughing, if he marke what scambling shyft he makes to ende his verses a like? I will propound three or foure payre by the way for the Readers 20 recreation.

*The Porter said, by my snout,
It was Sir Bevis that I let out.*

or this,

C 1^v *He smote his sonne on the brcast,*

25

That he neuer after spoke with Clark nor Priest.

or this,

*This almes by my crowne,
Giues she for Beuis of South-hamptoune.*

or this,

*Some lost a nose, some a lip,
And the King of Scots hath a ship.*

30

But I let these passe as worne out absurdities, meaning not at this instant to vrge (as I might) the like instance of Authors of our time, least in laying foorth their nakednesse, 35

I might seeme to haue discouered my mallice, imitating *Ajax*, who obiecting more irefully vnto *Vlysses* flattery, detected him selfe of follie.

As these men offend in the impudent publishing of witles
5 vanitie, so others ouershoote th̄selues as much another waie,
in sencelesse stoicall austoritie, accounting Poetrie impietie,
and witte follie. It is an old Question, and it hath beene
often propounded, whether it werebetter to haue moderate
affections, or no affections? The *Stoicks* said none. The
10 *Peripaticians* answered, to haue temperate affections; and
in this respect I am a professed *Peripatician*, mixing profit
with pleasure, and precepts of doctrine with delightfull
inuention. Yet these men condemne them of lasciuiousnes,
vanitie, and curiositie, who vnder fayned Stories include
15 many profitable morrall precepts, describing the outrage
of vnbridled youth, hauing the reine in their owne hands;
the fruits of idlenes, the of-spring of lust, and how auailable
good educations are vnto vertue. In which their preciser
censure, they resemble th̄ that cast away the nutte for
20 mislike of the shell, & are like to those which loath the
fruite for the leaues, accounting the one sower, because ⁹ other is bitter. It may be some dreaming dunce whose
bald affected eloquence making his function odious, better
besemming a priuie then a pulpit, a misterning Clowne in
25 a Comedy, then a chosen man in the Ministerie, will cry
out | that it breedes a scabbe to the conscience, to peruse C 2
such Pamphlets; beeing indeed the display of their duncerie,
and breeding a mislike of such tedious dolts barbarisme, by
the view of their rhetoricall inuention. Such trifling studies,
30 say they, infect the minde and corrupt the manners, as
though the minde were only conuersant in such toies, or
shold continuallie stay where the thoughts by chaunce doo
stray. The Sunne beames touching the earth, remaine still
35 from whence they came, so a wyse mans mind, although
hath recourse in staied yeeres to that it ought. But graunt
the matter to be fabulous, is it therfore friuolous? Is

there not vnder Fables, euen as vnder the shaddowe of
greene and florishing leaues, most pleasant fruite hidden in
secrete, and a further meaning closely comprised? Did
not *Virgill* vnder the couert of a Fable, expresse that
diuine misterie, which is the subiect of his sixt Egloue. 5

Iam noua progenies cælo demittitur alto.

I could send you to *Ouid*, who expresseth the generall
Deluge, which was the olde worldes ouerthrowe, in the
Fable of *Deucalion* and *Pirrha*; vnder which, vndoubtedly
it is manifest, (although diuers Authors are of cōtrarie 10
opinion) he meaneth *Noes* floodde, in so much as there is
a place in *Lucian* in his booke *De Siria Dæa*, by the which
it appeareth, that by *Deucalions* Deluge, is vnderstoode,
not (as some will) that Enundation, whereby in times past,
Greece and *Italie* was ouerflowne, and the Ile *Atlanta* 15
destroied, but that vniuersall flood which was in the time
of *Noe*. For thus *Lucian* writeth in that place, that it was
receiued for a cōmon opinion among the *Grecians*, that this
generation of men that nowe is, hath not been from the
beginning, but that it which first was, wholy perrished, and 20
this second sort of men which now are, be of a newe
creation, growing into such a multitude by *Deucalion* and
Pirrhias meanes. As touching the men of the first worlde,
thus much (saith he) is committed to memorie, that when
as they began to be puft vppe with pride of their pros- 25
peritie, they enterprised all iniquitie, priuiledged by im-
C 2^ypunitie, neither re- | garding the obseruation of oath, nor
the violation of hospitalitie, neither fauouring the father-
lesse, nor succouring the helplesse: whereupon in lieu of
their crueltie, they were plagued with this calamitie, the 30
springs brake foorth and ouerflowed their bounded banks, ſ
watrie clowdes with pashing showres vncessantlie sending
down their vnreasonable moysture, augmented the rage of
the Ocean, so that whole fieldes and mountaines could not
satis-fie his vsurping furie, but Citties wyth their suburbs, 35
Townes with their streetes, Churches with their porches,

were nowe the walke of the waues, the dennes of the Dolphin, and the sporting places of the huge Leuiathan : men might haue fisht where they sold fish, had they not by the suddaine breaking foorth of the showres been made
 5 a pray vnto fish : the child in the cradle could not be saued by the embracings of the dying mother, the aged Cripe removing his wearie steps by stilts, was faine to vse them in steed of Oares, till at length his dismaied gray haires despairing of the sight of any shoarc, gaue place to death,
 10 and was swallowed vppe in the deepe, and so the bellie of the Whale became his graue.

The earth after this sort beeing excluded from the number of the Elements, there was no memorie left of mankinde in this watry world, but onely in *Deucalions*
 15 Arke, who in regarde of his prudence and pietie, was reserued to this seconde generation ; who hauing made a great Arke wherin he put his wife and children, tooke two beastes of euery kind as wel Lions as Serpents, Hawkes as Partriches, Wolues as Lambes, Foxes as Geese ; amongst
 20 which there was such mutuall concord, that as they were harmelesse towardes him, so they were hurtlesse one towards another ; al which sailed with him till the waters ceased.

Hetherto *Lucian* an Heathen Poet. *Plutarch* also re-
 25 cordeth in his Treatise *De industria animalium*, that a Doue beeing sent out of *Deucalions* Arke, shewed the waters ceasing. By these proofes it is euident, that by *Deucalions* Deluge is vnderstooede Noes flood, because the very like thinges are sette downe in *Genesis*, of brute
 30 Beastes receiued by *Noe* into the | Arke, and the Doue C 3 sent forth by him also. I trust these probabilities beeing duely pondered, there is no man so distrustful to doubt that deeper diuinitie is included in Poets inuentions, and therefore not to be reiecte, as though they were voide of
 35 all learning and wisedome.

I woulde not haue any man imagine that in praysing of Poetry, I endeuour to approoue *Virgils vnchast Priapus*,

or *Ouids* obscenitie; I commende their witte, not their wantonnes, their learning, not their lust: yet euen as the Bee out of the bitterest flowers and sharpest thistles gathers honey, so out of the filthiest Fables, may profitable knowledge be sucked and selected. Neuerthelesse tender youth 5 ought to bee restrained for a time from the reading of such ribauldrie, least chewing ouer wantonlie the earcs of this Summer Corne, they be choaked with the haune before they can come at the karnell.

Hunters beeing readie to goe to their Game, suffer not 10 their dogges to taste or smell of any thing by the way, no carrion especially, but reserue thē wholy to their approching disport; euen so youth beeing ready to vndertake more waightier studies, ought in no case be permitted to looke aside to lasciuious toyes, least the pleasure of the one, 15 should breed a loathing of the profit of the other. I would there were not any, as there be many, who in Poets and Historiographers, reade no more then serueth to the feeding of their filthy lust, applying those things to the pampering of their priuate *Venus*, which were purposely published to 20 the suppressing of that common wandering *Cupid*. These be the Spyders which sucke poysen out of the hony combe, and corruption out of the holiest thinges, herein resembling those that are troubled with a Feuer, in whome diuers things haue diuers effects, that is to say of hote things 25 they waxe cold, of cold things hote; or of Tygers, which by the sound of melodious Instruments are driuen into madnesse, by which men are wont to expell melancholie. He that wil seeke for a Pearle, must first learne to know it when he sees it, least he neglect it when hee findes it, or 30
C 3^v make a nought worth pee-ble his lewell: and they that couet to picke more precious knowledge out of Poets amorous *Elegies*, must haue a discerning knowledge, before they can aspire to the perfectiō of their desired knowledge, least the obtaining of trifles be the repentant end of their 35 trauell.

Who so snatcheth vp follies too greedilie, making an

occupation of recreation, and delight his day labour, may
happes proue a wittome whiles he fisheth for finer witte,
and a Foole while hee findes himselfe laughing pastime at
other mens follies, not vnlike to him who drinking Wine
5 immoderately, besides that hee many times swallowes downe
dregs, at length prooues starke drunke.

There is no extremitie either in active or contemplatiue
life, more outragious thē the excessiue studies of delight,
wherwith young Students are so besotted, that they forsake
10 sounder Artes, to followe smoother eloquence, not vnlike to
him that had rather haue a newe painted boxe, though
there be nothing but a halter in it, then an olde bard hutch
with treasure inualuable, or *Æsops* Cocke, which parted
with a Pearle for a Barlie kurnell. Euen as a man is
15 inclined, so his studies are bended, if to vaine-glorie, to
eloquence: if to profounde knowledge, to *Aristotle*: if
lasciuious, good in some English deuise of verse; to conclude,
a passing potman, a passing Poet.

I might haue fitted mens seuerall affections with their
20 sundry studies, but that I am afraide there be many ashamed
of their studies, which I will not repeate least some shold
blush when as they reade their reproche.

It is a thing of no paines or experience, to ayme at the
practises of the proude, the secret inclinations of the
25 couetous, the imaginations of y^e incestuous, the hooded
hypocrisie of those that pretend puritie, which things beeing
practised in youth, become trades of profitte in age. An
vsuall thing it is, that the flower of our yeeres should be
the fountaine of follie, which by the conduit pype of con-
30 tinuall customs conueiance, causeth the gray headed to
carry corruption, their soules infectiō, vnto their | graues. c₄
When the endeavor of youth shal proue naught els but the
exercise of all abuses, is it like that a mans after life shall
be without blemish?

35 There is almost no man now a daies, who doth not in
hys secrete thought estimate vice after his vilenes, yet
securitie hath so blinded many, that loosing the habit of

verte, they couet to restraine wisedome onely to their wicked waies, concluding that in the imitation of their actions, consists the hygh way to happines, because their humor is such, condemning that state of life which is an enemie to their vicious appetites. It is impossible 5 for these men, either by hearing or reading, to profit in integritie of life, whiles in the one and in the other, they will regarde no more then auaileth to their aduantage. The couetous careth for no more Scripture, then that which priuiledgeth him to prouide for his familie, the proude sort 10 are conuersant continually in this Text, *They that are in Kinges Courts weare soft rayment:* and Theeues reade with delight how the *Egiptians* in *Egipt*, were by ⁹ *Isralites* robbed of theyr Iewels. Thus euery one maketh that sacred preseruatiue a pernicious poison vnto his sinfull 15 soule, nourishing his vanitie with sacred verities, increasing his damnation by the ordeyned meanes to saluation.

If men in their youthes best lust, and in the prime of prosperitie, would but cast their eye on the one side to future alterations, and thinke of a further felicitie, beholding 20 aduersitie on the other side cladde with follies repentant Robes, compassed about with contempt in steed of a gyrdle, guarded with feends, not accompanied with friends, hauing for momentarie pleasure endlesse paine, death without date for a dyssolute life repented too late, they woulde then so 25 behauie themselues heere vpon earth, as they might haue a Sauiour in heauen.

Pausanias King of the *Lacedemonians*, bydding *Simonides* to a sumptuous banquet, instantly intreated him to speak some thing notable which sauoured of learning: why then 30 (quoth he) remember thou art a man. Which saying *Pausanias* scornfully despised: afterward beeing in pryson C 4^v in *Chalciaco*, was | almost famished ere hee died, where remembryng *Simonides* speech, with a loude lamentable voice, he cried, O my friende of *Cæos*, would God I had 35 regarded thy words.

Good counsaile is neuer remembred nor respected, till
 , men haue giuen their farewell to felicitie, and haue beene
 ouerwhelmed in the extremitie of aduersitie. Young men
 thinke it a disgrace to youth, to embrace the studies of age,
 5 counting their fathers fooles whiles they striue to make them
 wise, casting that away at a cast at dice, which cost theyr
 daddes a yeares toyle, spending that in their Veluets, which
 was rakt vppe in a Russette coate: so that their reuenewes
 rackt, and their rents raised to the vttermost, is scarce
 10 inough to maintaine ones rufling pride, which was wont to
 be manie poore mens reliefe. These young Gallants hauing
 leudly spent their patrimonie, fall to begging of poore
 mens houses ouer theyr heads, as the last refuge of their
 ryot, remouuing the auncient bounds of lands to support
 15 their decayed port, rather coueting to enclose that which
 was wont to be common, then they wold want to maintaine
 their priuate prodigalitie.

The Temple of *Terminus Deus* amongst the *Romans*,
 who was supposed to haue the preheminenſe ouer the
 20 boundes of lands, had euer a hole in the roofe, for as much
 as they thought it vnlawfull for the bounds of landes to be
 couered, and that rich men might learne to know their
 landes from poore mens grounds. A strange thing it is,
 that these men cannot learne to thriue before all be gone,
 25 and that they in the midst of their plentie, should be more
 needy, then those that sauing their day labour, are nougħt
 but pouertie. But as the Brooke *Achelous* carrieth whole
 trees and huge stones w̄ hidious roaring noyse downe his
 streames, so the Courte is as it were a deuouring Gulfe of
 30 gold, and the consumption of coyne. It fareth with thē as
 it did with *Calchas* that cunning Soothsayer, who died for
 sorrowe because *Mopsus* surpast him in science, so if they
 see any excell them in brauerie, in whose steps at euery
 inche they are not able to treade, they hang the heade as
 35 they were halfe dead. |

Howe farre are these fondlings frō imitating *Crates* the D 1

31 cunning] running Q.

35 they they Q

36 How c. w.

Philosopher, who to the intent that he might more quietly studie Philosophy, threw all his goods into the sea, saying, hence from me, you vngratiuous appetites, I had rather drowne you, then you should drowne me. By this that hath beene alreadie sette down, it may plainlye appeare,⁵ that where pride beareth sway, hospitalitie decaies: nay, this kind of men, will neuer be saued by their workes, in so much as the poore alwaies mysse, as often as they seeke to them for almes, yea, they seeme onely to be borne for themselues, and not to benefit any els; who with the ¹⁰ woers of *Penelope*, will by their Porters, prohibite the poore from hauing accesse vnto their porches, terming th̄e the marrers of mirth and procurers of sadnes: but what ende doo they propounde to themselues in their prodigall expences, but the feeding of their Mistris fancie, and ¹⁵ ſoster-¹⁵ ing of their lawlesſe lusts? shrouding vnder their Purple roabes and embroydered apparrell, a hart ſpotted with all abuses: wherefore they may be aptlie reſembled to ¹⁹ *Ægyptian* Temples, which without are goodly and great, their walles arriſing vnto a huge height, with statelie ²⁰ Marble turrets, but if you goe in and looke about you, you ſhall find for a God, either a Storke, a Goate, a Cat, or an Ape. Did they conſider that no *vestis sed virtus hominem* ²⁵ cuehit, they would reiect all ſuperfluitie as ſinfull, and betake themſelues to a more temperate moderation in each degree of excesſe.

When as the outward garment, not the inward vertue, must be faine to commend a man, it is all one as if a man shold loue the Snake for his gray coloured ſkin, or poison because it is in a ſiluer preece, or pilgrim ſalue because it is ³⁰ in a painted boxe. It is learning and knowledge which are the onely ornaments of a man, which furniſheth the tongue with wisedome, and the hart with vnderſtanding, which maketh the children of the needy poore to become noble Peeres, and men of obſcure parentage to be equall with Princes in ³⁵ poſſeſſions; with whō if you talke of lineall diſcents, they will

²³ not *vestis Coll.*, Gro. Qy. read 'nō'? ²⁹ gray] gay Coll.

lay before you the pence, being able to fetch their petigree
 from no ancient house, | except it be from some olde Hog- D 1^v
 stie, deriuing their kindred frō the Coffe, not from the
 Conquest ; neither can they vaunt any notable seruice of
 5 their auncitry in the field, but can tel you how their
 Grandsire vsed to sette his folde : neither doo I speak this
 to the disgracing derision of vertuous Nobilitie, which I
 reuerence in each respect, but onely endeouer summarilie
 to shewe, what goodlie buildings Fortune doth raise on
 10 vertues slender foundations. I am not ignoraunt, that many
 times the couetous ignorant scrapeth that from the tayle
 of the Plowe, which maketh all his after posteritie thinke
 scorne to looke on the plough, they ouerseeing that by a
 seruant, on which theyr father was as Tilsman attendant,
 15 beeing translated by his toyle from the Parrish, good man
 Webbe in the Countrey, to a pertly Gentleman in the
 Court, bestowing more at one time on the Herralde for
 Armes, then his Father all his life tyme gaue in almes. No
 matter though such vanting vpstarts, which haue as little
 20 vertue as antiquitie to honest their posterity, become the
 scoffe of a Scholler and the stale of a Courtier, which will
 make them if they faile heereafter in Nobilitie of byrth, to
 seeke it by learning.

In times past, ignorance in eache sexe was so odious,
 25 that women as well as men, were well seene in all liberall
 Sciences : was not *Gracchus* who was counted a most
 excellent Orator, instructed by his Mother *Cornelia* in
 eloquence ? what should I speake of *Ariphthis*, the King of
Scithias Son, whom his mother *Istrina* likewise instructed
 30 in the elements of the Greeke tongue ? But least in
 praysing of learning in so learned an age, I should bring
 manifest truthe into question, and so swarue from the
 Logicians prescriptions, or by dilating on so affluent an
 argument, might seeme to gather stones on the sea shoare,
 35 I will cease to prosecute the praise of it, and will propound
 vnto you the speciall plague that is imminent vnto it.

Science hath no enemie but the ignoraunt, who contemne

it as vile, because their grosse capacitie perceiues nothing in it diuine. Such an ignorant was *Valentinianus* the Emperour, who was a professed enemie to all excellent D 2 Artes, or *Licinius*, | who likewise termed learning, the plague and poison of the weale publique. Such couetous ignorance 5 dooth creepe amōgst the cormorants of our age, who as the *Chamelion* which is fed with the ayre, stands alwaies with his mouth wide open, so these men which liue vpō almes, haue alwaies their mouthes open to aske, and hauing felt the sweetnes of Abby Landes, they gape after Colledge 10 liuing, desiring to enrich themselues as much with the siluer of the one, as their auncesters got by the gold of the other : much like to him that hauing bathed his hands in the blood of wilde beastes, proceedeth to the slaughter of men, the one no more satis-fied with moneys, then the other with 15 murder. If such goodly buildings were againe to arise by the common cost, a man may easily gesse, how backward they would be in giuing, who are now so forward in detract- ing. Can Common weales florish where learning decaies ? shall not felicitie haue a fall when as knowledge failes ? 20 yea, peace must needs perrish from amongst vs, when as we rather seeke to choke then cherrish, to famish then feede, the Nurses of it, depriueng them of all outward ornaments (as much as in vs lyeth) who are the onelie ornaments of our state : but I hope their needie enmitie shall returne 25 to them in vaine, and not proue the procurement of our common plague and paine, that the more they oppugne our prosperitie, the greater shalbe our welfare, like to the Trees in whom those partes are stronger that are opposite to the North, then those which bend towarde the South or 30 West winde.

I will not stand to amplifie their discredit, which endeuour to turne our day into night, and our light into darknesse, nor yet will compare them to those that are called *Agrippæ*, who beeing preposterously borne with their feete forward, 35 are saide to enter into the world with ill fortune, and to the great myschiefe of mankind, as *Marcus Agrippa*, and

Nero: onelie this I will wish, that beeing dead, the learned may giue them such Epitaphes of disgrace, as they deserue, and that the Chronicles may record their reproch vnto all ages. Amen say all they that are friends to the Muses. |

5 How can we hope for anie further exhibition when as we ^{D 2*} see men repine at that we haue alreadie? It fareth with finer wits, as it doth with the pearle which is affirmed to be in the head of the Toade: the one beeing of exceeding vertue is inclosed with poison, the other of no lesse value,
 10 cōpast about with pouerty. Learning now adaiers gets no liuing if it come empty handed. Promotion which was wont to be ^ȝ free propounded palme of paines, is by many mens lamentable practise, become a purchase. When as wits of more towardnes shal haue spent some time in the
 15 Vniuersitie, and haue as it were tasted the elements of Arte, and laide the foundation of knowledge, if by the death of some friend they shoulde be withdrawne frō theyr studies, as yet altogether raw, and so consequently vnfitte for any calling in the Common wealth, where should they finde
 20 a friend to be vnto them in steed of a father, or one to perfite that which their deceased parents begun: nay they may well betake themselues to some trade of Husbandry, for any maintenance they gette in the way of almes at the Vniuersitie, or els take vpon them to teach, beeing more
 25 fitte to be taught, and perch into the pulpit, their knowledge beeing yet vnperfite, verie zealouslie preaching, beeing as yet scarce grounded in religious principles. How can those men call home the lost sheepe that are gone astray, comming into the Ministery before their wits be staid? This greenē
 30 fruite, beeing gathered before it be ripe, is rotten before it be mellow, and infected with Scismes, before they haue learned to bridle their affections, affecting innouations as newfangled, and enterprising alterations wherby the Church is mangled.
 35 But some may obiect, that I goe beyond my Anatomie, in touching these abusive enormities. I answer, that I discourse of these matters as they are become the follies of

our time, and the faults of our age, wishing the redresse
of such rashnes, and the suppression of the forenamed
rauenous rable, these abuses beeing as intollerable as the
worst, and therfore to be condemned with the first. I trust
there is no man so simple, who can discerne wisedome from 5
D 3 folly, and knowledge from ignorance, | but his mother wit
wil afford him so much vnderstanding, that there is necessary
vse of learning in euery calling, bringing praise to them
that possesse it, and shame to them that want it, without
the which no externall ornament is any whit auailable to 10
aduancement, but seemeth rather a disgracing deformitie,
hauing dislike his attendant. Reiect then pride, to embrace
it to your profit, neglect vain-glory, and striue to attaine
to the knowledge of Arts, the pathway to honor. Let the
liues of the Philosophers be the direction of youthes imita- 15
tion, who ware no more clothes then wold keepe away cold,
and eate no more meate then would expell hunger ; yea,
many of them the more to keepe downe their bodies, being
placed in the midst of plentie, haue contented themselues
with a thin hungry diet, the cōpanion of scarsitie. *Diogenes* 20
chose rather to lick dishes at *Athens*, then to liue daintily
with *Alexander*. *Plato* had rather bid *Dyonisius* adiew,
then he would be driuen from his philosophicall dyet.
Porus that peerelesse *Indian* Prince, contented himself
with breade and water as his accustomed cheere. *Agesilaus* 25
King of the *Lacedæmonians*, passing through ſe Countrey
of *Thasius*, being louingly met by the nobles, and entirely
welcommmed by the common sorte into the Countrey, with
diuersitie of dainties and brauery of banquets, would not
taste any thing sauē Breade and Water, notwithstanding 30
earnest entreatie to the contrarie ; but their importunitie
increasing, to put by all suspition of ingratitudo, he willed
his slaves and footmen to take their repast with their pro-
vision, saying, that abstinencie and temperancie, not varietie
of viandes and delicacie, beseemeth him that is placed in 35
Chayre of authoritie. *Constantius* kept himselfe so hungerly,
that many times hee woulde craue a crust of breade of

a poore woman to expell hunger. The Priests of *Ægypt* abstained from flesh & wine. The *Persians* were satisfied with breade, salt, and water. In *Rhodes* he was reputed a grosse braind man, which fed on any thing but fishe. So 5 warily in times past hath temperate moderation beene obserued in all Nations, that by *Zaleucus* law, he was put to death, which dranke wine without the Phisiti- | ons D 3^v aduice. The Matrons and Ladies of *Rome*, were expresly prohibited the taste of it, in deed by this counsaile squaring 10 their decrees, that wine is the efficient of heate, heate of lust, lust of murder. *Eg. Maxcenius* slew his owne Wife, (as *Plinie* recordeth) for that shee loued wine too much, and was by *Romulus* Law sauied from death: in which place of *Plinie* it is also specified, that a certaine Matron 15 of *Rome* was adiudged to die, because shee closelie kept the key of a Celler of wine. *Censoriall Cato* was so curious in ſ obſeruation of this ordinaunce, that hee customably caused certaine men to kysse the women, to know whether theyr breath smelled of wine: in whose time, no man what- 20 soeuer, whether he were Consul, Senator, Tribune, or Dictator, might drinke any Wine, before he was thirtie and fiue yeres of age. I doo not alleage these examples, to the end I might condēne the moderate vſe of wine as vnlawfull, but to shew by the comparison, how farre we 25 exceede them in excesse, whose banquets are furniſht with ſuch wastfull ſuperfluitie.

It is a common complaint, that more perrish with the ſurſet then with the ſword, which many haue followed ſo farre, that to the recouering remedie of this ſurfeting 30 maladie, they haue restrained a healthfull diet to two or three dishes; deeming our diſgestion would be better, if our dishes were fewer. Which opinion, although Sir Thomas Eliot a man of famous memory, in his booke called the Castle of health, in ſome politique respects doth 35 ſeeme to fauour, yet I doo think in his priuate iudgment, hee did acknowledge the diuersitie of meates not to be ſo

incommodious as he there pretences. But that I may aunswere what they vrge, first say they, what say you to brute Beastes, who beeing nourished but with one kinde of meate, and onely after one manner, are farre more healthfull and sounde of body then men, that diet themselues 5 with sundry dishes? to this I answer, that either of these assertions are vntrue, for neither doo they vse onely one kind of nourishment, neither are diseases more distant from thē, then from vs. The first is prooued by the choyse of
D 4 Pastures wherein they graze, | where there is grasse both 10 bitter and sauorie, soure & sweete, some nourishing colde, some nourishing hote iuyce. Is then the substance of their meate simple, who feede vpon boughes and weedes, besides so many sundry kinde of field hearbes, no lesse diuers in nutriment then in name? To prooue that diseases are no 15 lesse incident to beastes then to men, I will sticke to *Homers* authoritie, who reporteth the pestilence to be begun by brute beastes. To shew how great the infirmities are of other creatures, the short life of some of them may sufficientlie serue, except you haue recourse to those 20 recorded Fables of Crowes and Rauens, who commonly sease vpon all kinde of carrion, picke vp each sort of new sowne seede, and are at hoste with euery kind of fruite in the Orchard. Secondly they adde, that there was neuer Phisition so confidently carelesse of his Patient, that he 25 woulde prescribe the vse of diuers meates at once, to him that is distressed with a Feuer, wherby (say they) it may be gathered, that one kind of meate is more auailable to a speedie digestion then many, because that Phisitions prescribe but one kinde of meate to them, whose digestion 30 is weakest.

This obiection is thus taken away, first there is not the same proportion to be obserued in diet, in sicknes, & in health. Secondly, in as much as they are wont to set before them onely one sort of meate, it is not because it is 35 more easie of digestion, but least the sight of much meat should breedē in ^{the} weake stomacks a lothing of it. Thirdly

they obiect, that the nourishment of diuers meates is no lesse noysome, then the drinking of diuers kinds of Wines is daungerous. Euery one knowes that he that washeth his braines with diuers kinds of wines, is the next doore to
5 a drunken man, and he like (say they) to be endangered by diseases, who affecteth variety in his diet. Here doe I denie the coherence of the cōparison, for what is hee that by eating ouermuch, doth incurre the like inconuenience that he dooth, that drinketh much? hee that hath ouerlodē
10 his stomacke with sundry meates, is pained a little perhaps in his bellie, hee that hath ouercharged his braine with wyne, is no | better then a mad man for the time; which D₄ v
the rather seemes to me, because the grossenes of ſ̄ meatē
15 remaining in one place, expecteth the administration of digestion, and beeing thorowly consumed, is suddainly voided, but Wine beeing by nature lighter, ascendeth higher,
and tickleth the braine placed in the top, with the inflam-
ation of a hote fume, and therefore diuersitie of wines at once,
is shunned of them that are wise, least the matter which is
20 readie to possesse the head on a suddaine, in a moment
ouerturne the seate of reason, which daunger in the diuersitie
of meates, no reason can be rendred why we shoulde dread.
But they will perhaps say, that the diuersitie of iuyce,
25 framed of the diuersitie of meats, agrees not with our
bodies, as though our bodies were not compounded of
qualities, as of hote and cold, dry and moist; but he which
feedeth onely on one kinde of meat, sendeth foorth but the
iuyce of one qualitie: the Spring is hote and moist, the
Sommer dry and hote, Autume dry and cold, Winter both
30 moist and colde together, so also the elements which are
our beginninges; what reason is it then that our bodies
should be restrained to one kind of meat? Thus then we
see that diuersitie is not so incōmodious, but one kind of
meate may be as daungerous, for gluttony may as well be
35 committed by one dish as twentie. May not a man as soone
surfet by eating a whole sheepe with *Phago*, or an Oxe with
Milo, as by the sipping taste of sundry dainties?

But why stand I so long about meates, as though our life were nought but a banquet? or why am I so large in disputing of the diet of our bodies, as though thereby wee shoulde purchase quiet to our soules? what is this but to imitate the foolish tender mother, which had rather her childe should be well fed then well taught? Wherfore to make vse of my Anatomie as well to my selfe as to others, I will prescribe as neere as I can, such a rule for Students, that therby squaring their actions, they shall not be easily attached of any notable absurditie.

10

There be three things which are wont to slack young Students endeour, Negligence, want of Wisedome, and E 1 For- | tune. Negligence, when as we either altogether pretermitt, or more lightly passe ouer, the thing we ought seriously to ponder. Want of wisedome, when we obserue no method in reading. Fortune is in the euent of chaunce, either naturally hapning, or when as by pouerty or some infirmitie, or natural dulnes, we are withdrawne from our studies, and alienated from our intended enterprise, by the imagination of the rarenesse of learned men: but as touching these three, for the first, 15 that is to say, negligent sloth, he is to be warned: for the second, he is to be instructed: for the thirde, he is to be helped. Let his reading be temperate, whereunto wisedome, not wearines, must prescribe an end, for as immoderate fast, excessiue abstinence, and inordinate watchings, are argued 20 of intemperance, perrishing with their immoderate vse, so that these thinges neuer after can be performed as they ought in any measure; so the intemperate studie of reading incurreth reprehension, and that which is laudable in his kinde, is blameworthy by the abuse. Reading, two 25 waies is lothsome to the mind, and troublesome to the spirit, both by the qualitie, namely if it be more obscure, and also by δ quantitie if it be more tedious, in either of which we ought to vse great moderation, least that which is ordained to the refreshing of our wittes, be abused to 30 the dulling of our sences. We reade many things, least by letting them passe, we should seeme to despise them; some

things we reade, least we should seeme to be ignorant in them ; other thinges we reade, not that we may embrace them, but eschew them. Our learning ought to be our liues amendment, and the frutes of our priuate studie ought to
5 appeare in our publique behauour.

Reade that sitting, which may be thy meditation walking, shunne as well rude manners as rude phrase, and false dealing as much as false Latine, & choose him to be thy teacher, whome thou maist more admire when thou seest
10 then when thou hearest. *Quid faciendum sit, a faciente discendum est.* Learne of all men willingly that which thou knowest not, because humility may make that common to thee, which nature hath made proper to euery one. Thou shalt be wiser then all, if thou wilt | learne of all. E 1^v
 15 Heed what *Chrisippus* saith in his prouerbs, that which thou knowest not, peraduenture thy Asse can tell thee. If thou be desirous to attaine to the truth of a thing, first learn determinate conclusions before thou dealest with doubtful controuersies : he shall neuer enter into the reason
 20 of the trueth, who beginneth to be taught by discussing of doubts. Thinke not common things vnworthy of thy knowledge, of which thou art ignorant : those things are not to be contemned as little, without the which great things cannot stand. Post not rashlie from one thing to
 25 another, least thou maist seeme to haue seene many things, and learned fewe. *Nil assequitur qui omnia sequitur.* I am not ignorant, that farre more ardent is the desire of knowing vnknowne thinges, then of repeating knowne things : this we see happen in Stageplayers, in Orators, in al things,
 30 men hast vnto nouelties, and runne to see new things, so that whatsoeuer is not vsuall, of the multitude is admired, yet must Students wisely prefer renowned antiquitie before newe found toyes, one line of *Alexanders Maister*, before the large inuective *Scolia* of the *Parisian Kings Professor*.
 35 Many there be that are out of looue with the obscuritie wherein they liue, that to win credit to their name, they care not by what discredit they encrease others shame, and

least by the contention, their vaunted victory might be destitute of all glorie, they encounter with them on whose shoulders al Artes doe leane, as on *Atlas* the heauens ; thinking that men shoulde thus imagine, that none except he knewe himselfe sufficientlie furnished with the exquisite 5 knowledge of all excellent Arts, durst vndertake such a taske, as though any were more readie to correct *Appelles*, then the rude Cobler, to contend with *Appollo*, then contemptible *Pan*. But these vpstart reformers of Arts respect not so much the indagation of the truth, as the ayme of 10 their pride, and coueting to haue newe opinions passe vnder their names, they spende whole yeeres in shaping of sects. Which their pudled opinions are no sooner published, but straight way some proude spirited princocks, desirous to differ from the common sort, gets him a liuerie Coate of 15
E 2 their cloth, | and slaues it in their seruile sutes, enlarging the wilful errors of their arrogancie. Nothing is so great an enemie to a sounde iudgment, as the pride of a peeuiish conceit, which causeth a man both in life and belief, either to snatch vppe or hatch newfangles. This one thing also 20 deceiueth many, forsooth they wyll seeme wise before their time, that nowe they both beginne to counterfet that which they are not, and to be ashamed of that which they are : and therein they are most distant from wisedome, wherein they thinke themselues to be thought wyse. Others there 25 be that thinke so well of themselues, that no word can so much as scape by chaunce, but they thinke it worthy of a pen-mans paines, and striuing to speake nought but prouerbs, they make their bald eloquence a common by word, cockering themselues in their owne conceits, till they 30 be scorned as cockscombes. These they be that knowing not howe to speake, haue not learned to hold their peace, teaching manie times the thinges they vnderstand not, and perswading what they knowe not, becomming the Maisters of the ignorant before they be the Schollers of 35 the learned. There is no such discredit of Arte, as an ignoraunt Artificer, men of meaner iudgement, measuring

oft times the excellencie of the one, by the ignoraunce of the other. But as hee that censureth the dignitie of Poetry by *Cherillus* paulyry paines, the maiestie of Rethorick by the rudenesse of a stutting *Hortensius*, the subtilitie of Logique by the rayling of *Ramus*, might iudge the one a foole in writing he knewe not what, the other tipsie by his stammering, the thirde the sonne of *Zantippe* by his scolding ; so he that estimats Artes by the insolence of Idiots, who professe that wherein they are Infants, may deeme the Vniuersitie noughe but the Nurse of follie, and the knowledge of Artes, noughe but the imitation of the Stage. This I speake to shew what an obloquie these impudent incipients in Arts are vnto Art.

Amongst all the ornaments of Artes, Rethorick is to be had in highest reputation, without the which all the rest are naked, and she onely garnished : yet some there be who woulde | seperate Arts from Eloquence, whose censures we E 2^x oppugne, because it abhorres from common experiance. Who doth not know ſy in all tongues taske eloquence is odious if it be affected, and that attention is altogether wanting, where it is reiecte. A man may baule till his voice be hoarse, exhort with teares till his tongue ake and his eyes be drie, repeate that hee woulde perswade, till his stalenes dooth secretlie call for a Cloake bagge, and yet moue no more then if he had been all that while mute, if his speech be not seasoned with eloquence, and adorned with elocutions assistance. Nothing is more odious to the Auditor, then the artlesse tongue of a tedious dolt, which dulleth the delight of hearing, and slacketh the desire of remembiring, and I know not how it comes to passe, but many are so delighted to heare themselues, that they are a cumber to the eares of all other ; pleasing their Auditors in nothing more then in ſy pause of a ful point, when as by their humming and hawking respit, they haue leisure to gesture the mislike of his rudenes. To the eschewing therefore of the lothing hatred of them that heare them,

17-8 whose oppugne Q: whose [opinion we] oppugne Gro.

I would wish them to learne to speake many things in few, neither to speak all things which to theyr purpose they may speake, least those things be lesse profitably spoken which they ought to speake: neither would I haue them ouershoothe themselues with an imitation of breuitie, so that 5 striuing to be very short, they should prooue very long, namelie, when as they endeuar to speake many things breefeli. Perswade one point throughlie, rather then teach many things scatteringly, that which we thinke let vs speake, and that which we speake let vs thinke; let our 10 speeche accorde with our life. Endeuar to adde vnto Arte Experience: experience is more profitable voide of arte, then arte which hath not experience. Of it selfe arte is vnprofitable without experience, and experience rashe without arte. In reading, thou must with warie regard 15 learne as wel to discerne thy losse as thy gaine, thy hurt as good, least being wonne to haue a fauourable like of Poets wanton lines, thou be excited vnto the imitation of their lust. It is very vnseemely that nobler wits shoulde be dis-

E 3 credited with baser stu- | dies, and those whō high and 20 mightie callings doo expect, shold be hindered by the inticements of pleasure and vanitie. Young men are not so much delighted with solide substances, as with painted shadowes, following rather those thinges which are goodly to the viewe, then profitable to the vse, neither doo they 25 loue so much those things that are dooing, as those things that are sounding; reioycing more to be strowed with flowers then nourished with frute. How many be there that seeke truth, not in truth, but in vanitie, and find that they sought not according to trueth, but according to vanitie, and that 30 which is most miserable, in the words of life, they toile for the merchandise of death. Hence commeth it to passe, that many make toyes their onely studie, storing of trifles, when as they neglect most precious treasures, and hauing left the Fountaines of truth, they folow the Riuers of 35 opinions. I can but pittie their folly, who are so curious in fables, and excruciate themselues about impertinent ques-

tions, as about *Homers* Country, parentage, and sepulcher, whether *Homer* or *Hesiodus* were older, whether *Achilles* or *Patroclus* more ancient, in what apparrell *Anacharsis* the *Scithian* slept, whether *Lucan* is to be reckoned
5 amongst the Poets or Historiographers, in what Moneth in the yere *Virgill* died, with infinite other, as touching the Letters of the *Hiacinth*, the Chestnut tree, the children of *Niobe*, the trees where *Latona* brought foorth *Diana*, in all which idle interrogatories, they haue left vnto vs not
10 thinges found, but things to be sought, and peraduenture they had founde necessary things, if they had not sought superfluous thinges. Innumerable such vnecessary questions, according to Philosophy, are made as touching the soule, as whence it is, what maner of one it is, when it
15 doth begin to be, how long it may bee, whether it passeth not from his first mansion els where, and so alter his abiding, or shift into other formes of brute Beastes, whether one soule serueth no more but once and one, what it shall doo, when as by vs it shall cease to doe any thing,
20 howe it shall vse his libertie, when as it is escaped out of this dungion, or whether it be forgetfull of former things? what do al these | things auaille vnto vertue? Wherefore, E 3^v
euen as he that enterpriseth to saile ouer the endlesse Ocean, whiles he cannot passe any further, is constrained
25 to returne by the way he came, so these men beginning to sound the infinite depth of these misteries in ignorance, are faine to cease in ignorance: let thē therfore refraine from such folly, and not seeke that which is not to be found, least they find not that which is to be found. *Socrates*
30 who reduced all Philosophy vnto the manners, sayd, that thys was the greatest wisedome, to distinguish good & euill thinges. Vnto which discerning distinction is required deliberative meditation, in so much as in it consists our liues virtuous direction. Neither is it to liue well one
35 daies worke, but the continuall exercise of our whole life, beeing the best effect that euer knowledge did afford. When as wee duely consider, whether every way leadeth, or

wisely ponder with our selues to what end we refer each one of our actions, and exact of our straying thoughts a more seuere account of their wandering course, we shal find no victory so great as the subduing of vice, nothing so hard as to liue well, no such vnestimable iewell, as an honest conuersation : let him that is inclined but to one extreame, secretly try by himselfe, with what facilitie or difficulty he may suppresse it in himselfe, and his owne practise will teache him, that he is led captiue by his owne inclinations, and ouercome by his wicked cogitations. If thē so difficult a thing in accomplishment, seemes one sins suppression, howe laborious woulde be the reformation of an altogether euill conuersation. Since then the onely ende of knowledge ought to be to learne to liue well, let vs propound this vse and end vnto our selues, least after so many yeres paines, we misse of the marke whereat our parents in our education aynd. Turning ouer Histories, and reading the liues of excellent Orators and famous Philosophers, let vs with *Themistocles*, set before our eyes one of the excellenteſt to imitate, in whose example insisting, our industry may be doubled, to the adequation of his praise.

I know the learned wil laugh me to scorne, for setting down such Rams horne rules of direction, and euen nowe

E 4 I begin to | bethinke me of *Mulcasters Positions*, which makes my penne heere pause as it were at a full point ; 25 which pause hath changd my opinion, and makes me rather refer you to *Aschame* the antienter of the two ; whose prayses, seeing Maister *Grant* hath so gloriously garnished, I will referre you to his workes, and more especially to his Schoolemaster, where he hath most learnedly censured 30 both our Latine and Greeke Authors. As for lighter studies, seeing they are but the exercise of youth to keepe them from idlenes, and the preparation of the minde to more weightie meditations, let vs take heede, least whiles we seeke to make them the furthering helps of our finall 35 profession, they proue not the hindering harmes of our

intended vocation, that we dwell not so long in Poetry
that wee become Pagans, or that we make not such
proceedinges in *Aristotle* that we prooue proficients in
Atheisme. Let not learning, which ought to be the
5 Leuell, whereby such as liue ill, ought to square theyr
crooked waies, be the occasion vnto th̄e of farther corrup-
tion, who haue already sucked infection; least their know-
ledge way them downe into hell, when as the ignorant goe
the direct way to heauen.

10 And thus I ende my Anatomie, least I might seeme to
haue beene too tedious to the Reader in enlarging
a Theame of Absurditie, desiring of the learned pardon,
and of Women patience, which may encourage me heere-
after to endeuour in some other matter of more moment,
15 as well to be answerable to the expectation of the one, as
to make amends to the other. In the meane time I bidde
them both farewell.

FINIS.

A COVNTERCVFFE GIVEN TO MARTIN IVNIOR

Entry in the Stationers' Register : None.

Editions : (1) Early :

1589 (A). A | Countercuffe giuen to Martin Iu-*nior* : by
the venturous, hardie, and | renowned Pasquill of England, |
Caualiero. | Not of olde Martins making, which newlie
knighted | the Saints in Heauen, with rise vp Sir Peter
and Sir Paule ; But | lately dubd for his seruice at home
in the defence of his | Countrey, and for the cleane
breaking of his | staffe vpon Martins | face. | [device] |
PRINTED, | Betweene the skye and the grounde, |
VVithin a myle of an Oake, and not many fieldes | of,
from the vnpriviledged Presse of the | Affignes of *Martin* |
Iunior. | *Anno. Dom. 1589.*

No colophon. Quarto. Not paged.

Collation : A⁴. (A 1) Title, v. blank. A. ij. ‘ PASQVILL
OF ENGLAND ...’ Rom. and Ital. R-T. Pasquill of
England | to Martin Iunior. A 4 is not signed.

Catch-words : A 2. Moone A 2^v. who A 3. grounded A 3^v.
them A 4. Rounde-(layes)

Copy used : That in the British Museum (C. 37. d. 48).

1589 (B). A | Countercuffe giuen to | Martin Iunior : by
the venturous, | hardie, and renowned Pasquill of Eng-|lande,
Caualiero. |  | Not of olde Martins making, which newlie
knighted | the Saints in Heauen, with rise vppe Sir Peter
and Sir Paule ; | But latelie dubd for his seruice at home in
the defence of his | Countrey, and for the cleane breaking of
his | staffe vpon Martins face. | (••) | [ornament] |  Printed
between the skye and the | grounde, wythin a myle of an

Oake, and not manie | Fieldes off, from the vnpriuiledged
Preffe of | the Affignes of *Martin* | *Iunior.* | *Anno. Dom.*
1589.

No colophon. Quarto. Not paged.

Collation: As edition A. But A 4 is signed A. iiiij.

Catch-words: A 2. hold A 2^v. Maugre A 3. grounded A 3^v. as
A 4. In.

Copy used: That in the Lambeth Palace Library (xxx. 6. 25. (1).)
The other copy in the same library (xxx. 6. 26. (1).), which seems to be
identical, has also been referred to.

(2) *Modern Editions:*

(1) 1883-4. The Complete Works of Thomas Nashe . . .
edited by A. B. Grosart, Vol. i, pp. 73-85.

From the copy in the British Museum.

(2) 1903. (The present edition.)

From the same copy (C. 37. d. 48), collated with copy of edition B
in the Lambeth Library (xxx. 6. 25. (1).)

Note on the Editions:

The edition here designated E does not seem to have
been noticed before. It differs from A chiefly in the
following respects: (1) different arrangement of the title-
page, (2) the use on the title-page of a square ornament
of lines instead of the printer's device used in A, (3)
different page division, (4) different spelling, and (5) the
reading on A 4^v of 'the sixt of *August*' instead of 'the
eight of *August*'.

At first sight this last difference might be taken to
indicate that B was an earlier edition than A, but I think
that a fuller consideration will show that these dates can
hardly represent the actual dates of publication, and hence
are of no value in determining the priority of the editions.

In the first place the wording of the passage, 'From
Grauesende Barge the eight [sixt] of *August*' shows that
the date was meant as that of writing, not of printing; it
seems therefore unlikely, though not, of course, impossible
that it should have been altered by the printer.

Further, if we assume that these were the dates of two consecutive editions, we shall have to suppose that within two days a whole edition was printed off; the type distributed; so many of the copies sold that it seemed necessary to the printer to issue a second, and the type set up again. To me this seems in the highest degree improbable. The book is certainly but a small pamphlet, a single sheet in quarto, but printing was slow and there is every reason to suppose that a considerable sale would be anticipated, and a large first edition prepared; it must be remembered that the book appeared just when the Martinist controversy was at its height.

I think then that we must give up the idea of there having been two consecutive editions, which appeared on August 6 and 8 respectively. At the same time I confess that I have no other explanation of this difference to offer.

The printer's device which appeared in **A** is found also on the title-page of two tracts which followed this one, apparently from the same pen, *The Returne of Pasquill, 1589*, and *The First parte of Pasquils Apologie, 1590*; its absence in **B** is therefore worth attention. This seems to me to point to one of three conclusions, (1) that **B** was the earlier edition and that the printer, perhaps thinking it better to conceal his identity, did not at first intend to use any mark, but afterwards changed his mind, (2) that the device was at the time being used for *The Returne of Pasquill*, and was hence not available, (3) that it was being used in printing another, simultaneous, edition of the *Countercuffe*.

Of these three I think that the last is most probable. We must remember that the printer had nothing to lose but rather much to gain, at least in credit with the authorities, from his identity becoming known. The form of the imprint is of course borrowed from that of the Martinist tracts, and no evidence at all of any wish for concealment.

The second alternative is by no means more probable.

The Returne was printed in October of the same year. It seems hardly likely that the printer, after waiting two months to produce a second edition of the *Countercuffe*, should choose for doing so precisely the time when the first sheet of *The Returne* was being worked off, and when naturally his office would be most busy. He might well have waited a few days longer and have issued the two books uniform in appearance.

The suggestion that two editions were printed simultaneously is, I think, strongly supported by the fact that the catch-word on A 3, which comes just halfway through the matter, is the same in both editions, while those on other pages differ.

The chance that this was accidental seems to me to be so small that it may with safety be neglected. We may then argue that neither were the two editions set up from independent manuscripts, in which case the chances would be greatly in favour of all the catch-words being different, nor was one edition set up from a printed copy of the other, for in that case it would have been most natural for the compositor to follow the original line for line and page for page all through, as was generally done when the type employed was similar, and the catch-words would have corresponded throughout.

I would suggest that what happened is this: the manuscript was divided in the middle, most probably at the end of a page, and was given to two pairs of compositors to set up in duplicate; the second pair would of course start at the head of a page with the word 'grounded,' and the first pair would have to end their third page with the same word as catch-word. Seeing that the first page is not a full one, there would not be the slightest difficulty in their doing this, though we must suppose that, contrary to the usual practice, the matter was first set up in a galley, and that the division into pages and the addition of catch-words and signatures took place afterwards.

Another possibility is that the decision to duplicate was

not come to until half had been set up; but without supposing duplication of some sort I do not see how we can account for the facts. There would have been no object in ending the first half at any particular point if the whole of the manuscript had been available at once, as it would naturally have been if the editions had been consecutive. If on the other hand it be maintained that the circumstances merely point to the manuscript being divided between two compositors when the second edition was set up, I can only answer that it may, but that to divide so small a job as this indicates great need for haste, and haste is perhaps less likely in the preparation of a second edition than a first.

Thus I think it very probable that, anticipating a great demand and wishing to put as many copies in circulation at once as possible, the printer set the book up in duplicate. At the same time I wish it to be understood that I put this forward as a mere guess, which seems to fit the facts rather better than any other suggestion that I can offer. The whole thing is a question of the most likely among several possibilities, and I should not be in the least surprised if other evidence coming to light should prove me wrong.

Fortunately the text is practically identical, except for the difference of dates already commented upon, so that it is little more than a matter of convenience which edition one uses as the copy-text. If my theory is correct the one with the printer's mark is in a sense the original, the other a duplicate; I have therefore followed **A**.

Note on the Printer:

Though it does not properly belong here, I think it advisable to say a word or two as to the printer of this and the two following tracts. There seems to be strong reason for supposing them to have been the work of the same house, the printer's device, the type, and the general style of composition being identical in all three. It has however

been stated, on what evidence I have been unable to learn, that *The First parte of Pasquils Apologie* was printed by James Roberts for John Danter. As however the same device was used in *The Recantations as they were seuerallie pronounced by Wylliam Tedder and Anthony Tyrrell . . . At London, Printed by Iohn Charlewood and William Brome. Anno Domini. M.D.LXXXVIII.* and in Lylly's *Endimion, . . . At London, Printed by I. Charlewood, for the widdowe Broome, 1591*, and as further the initial I on page A 3 of the *Apologie* appears also in *Endimion*, we need feel little doubt in assuming them to be the work of Charlewood or Brome, or perhaps of the two in partnership.

Of the device itself I need only say that it was originally Baldwin's, the D in the centre being a remnant of his name the rest of which was cut away, as was also the motto round the frame. See, for facsimile of the device in its original state, Dibdin's *Typographical Antiquities*, III. 503.

It afterwards came into the hands of James Roberts, who after Charlewood's death in 1593 married his widow and took over his business, and was used by him on the title-page of Robert Southwell's *Saint Peters complaynt . . . Printed by I. R. for G. C. 1595*, and of *The Treasurie of hidden Secrets. Commonlie called, The Good-huswifes Closet of prouision, for the health of her Houshold . . . Printed by I. R. for Edward White . . . 1600*.

The same device was also used in *Hypnerotomachia. The Strife of Loue in a Dreame . . . Printed for William Holme . . . 1592*¹, but no printer's name is given.

¹ Other copies have 'for Simon Waterson' and 'for John Busbie.'

A

Countercuffe giuen to Martin Iu-
nior : by the venturous, hardie, and
renowned Pasquill of England,
Canalero.

Not of olde Martins making , which newlie knighted
the Saints in Heauen, with rise vp Sir Peter and Sir Paule ; But
lately dubd for his seruice at home in the defence of his
Country , and for the cleane breaking of his
staffe vpon Martins
face.



PRINTED,

Betweene the skye and the grounde,
VVithin a myle of an Oake, and not many fieldes
of, from the vnpriuiledged Presse of the
Affignes of Martin
Junior.

Anno. Dom. 1589.



PASQVILL OF ENG-

A 2

LAND TO MARTIN

IVNIOR.

VAliant *Martin*, if euer the earth carried anie Gyants, as fabulous antiquitie hath auouched, which entred into wars and conspiracies against GOD, thy father *Mar-prelat* was a whelpe of that race; who to reuiue the memory of his auncesters almost forgotten, hath broken into heauen with his blasphemies. If the Monster be deade, I meruaile not, for hee was but an error of Nature, not long liued: hatched in the heat of the sinnes of *England*, and sent into these peaceable Seas of ours, to play like a Dolphin before a tempest. The heads this *Hydra* lost in a famous place of late, where euery newe Bugge no sooner puts out his hornes, but is beaten downe; The Anotamie latelie taken of him, the blood and the humors that were taken from him, by launcing and worming him at *London* vpon the common Stage; The maine buffets that are giuen him in euery corner of this Realme, are euident tokens, that beeing thorow soust in so many showres, hee had no other refuge but to runne into a hole, and die as he liued, belching.

20 *Turkie* hath very good cause to bewaile his death, for theyr Religion like an ancient building, worne with extremity of age, riues, & threatens ruine on euery side, if it be not supported by newe proppes. One of the best meanes the deuill inuented to holde that vppe, was the helpe of thy Father, to pull downe all other Religions vnder heauen. His Conclusions and thy Epilogue, are two as fitte swordes, as *Mahomet* himselfe could desire to kill

a Christian. But because thy Father wained with the |
A 2^v Moone for want of strength, when he left thee his *Theses*
without life or limme, I woulde wishe thee to put them
in Moode and Figure for his sake. *Pasquill* hath vnder-
taken to write a very famous worke, Entituled *THE 5
OWLES ALMANACKE*: wherein the night labours
and byrth of your Religion is sette downe: the ascent and
descent of the Starres that fauour it, is truelie calculated:
the aspects of the Planets raigning ouer it, are expressed,
with a iollie coniecture drawne from the iudgment of the 10
Theame, what end your Religion is like to haue. Now
because hee hath reserued a blanke Paper at the end of
the worke, for the foure seasons of the yere (as commonly
Calculators doe) he is determined to keepe that in his
hand, till your Syllogismes be made, that he may fill vppe 15
his Booke with the diseases and remedies of your Argu-
ments, in what quarter of the yeere so euer they fall.

Pasquill hath taken vp your Gloue, and desires you to
charge your weapon at him like a Man. If you play with
him, as your father and your selfe haue doone with the 20
Bishops heretofore, if you barke like a Curre and bite
behind, he will haue a tricke with his heele to strike out
your teeth. Whilst you consult with your Topicks to
ground your reasons sure, *Pasquill* wyll come vpon you
with another venewe. For he came latelie ouer-sea into 25
Kent, frō thence he cut ouer into Essex at *Grauesende*,
and hearing some tidings of *Hartford-shire*, because hee
cannot ride far without a bayte, he made as much haste
as hee could to *S. Albanes*, where he staid one whole
Sabaoth at the Christopher, and hauing there pestered 30
a newe paire of Writing-tables with profitable Notes for
that quarter, he sette forwarde the Munday following to
North-hampton-shire, smyling and glauncing as he turnd
his Horse about to bidde the Congregation of Saint
Michaels adiewe.

35

To be brefe with your worshipfultie, *Pasquill* hath
posted very diligently ouer all the Realme, to gather some

fruitfull Volume of *THE LIVES OF THE SAINTS*, which Mauger your fие hundred fauorites shall be printed. There shall you read of that reuerend Elder of your Church, | who beeing credited with the stocke of the poore, A 3
5 pertaining to the Bride-well house of *Canterburie*, to sette men a work, was compelled to keepe it to himselfe, because no poore folkes of the houshold of Faith could be found in all that Cittie. There shall you see the life and learning of a Pastor of your Church, which expounding the
10 Articles of our Beliefē in *Deuon-shire*, when he came to handle the descending into Hell, wrote a Latine Letter to a neighbour Minister of his to craue his aduise, and rapt it out lustilie, *Si tu non vis venire mihi, ego volo venire tibi*: and so by the leakes that remaine in his Latine,
15 made more worke for the Tinker, than euer your Father made for the Cooper. I will leape ouer one of your Brother Preachers in *North-hampton-shire*, which is as good a Hound for his sent to smell a feast as euer man sawe. *Pasquill* met him betweene *Bifield* and *Fawseley*,
20 with a little Hatte like a Sawcer vpon hys crowne, a Filch-man in his hande, a swapping Ale-dagger at his back, containing by estimation, some two or three poundes of yron in the hyltes and chape, and a Bandogge by his side, to commaund fortie foote of grounde wheresoeuer he
25 goes, that neuer a Begger come neere him to craue an Almes. O how my Palfrey fetcht me vppe the Curuetto, and daunced the Goates iumpe, when I ranne the ring round about him to retrive him: it should seeme by the manages my beast made, that hee knewe his Maister had
30 a speciall peece of seruice in hande. You shall haue a goodly bande of these men in the volume of the Saints. *Pasquill* is nowe gone ouer-sea to commit it to the Presse, and it is his pleasure (because it is the first opening of his shop) to giue you a taste of his Wares before you
35 buy them, like a franck Merchant.

In the mean season, sweet *Martin Iunior*, play thou the knaue kindly as thou hast begun, and waxe as olde in

iniquitie as thy father. Downe with learning and Vniuersities ; I can bring you a Free-mason out of *Kent*, that gaue ouer his occupation twentie yeeres agoe. He wil make a good Deacon for your purpose : I haue taken some tryall of his gifts ; hee preacheth very pretilie ouer 5 a Ioynd-stoole. These Bishops are somewhat too well ! A 3^v grounded for greene-heades ; so long as they keepe their place and power, it is impossible for thee to cast the Religion of this Land into a newe Molde euery newe Moone. The whole state of the Lande perceiues it well 10 enough, that to deliuer vppe the Prelacie to *Martin* is a Canker more daungerous to the Church and Realme, than it was for the *Athenians* to deliuer theyr Orators to *Phillip of Macedon* their vtter enemie : or thā it is for the Sheepe to betray their Sheepheards to the Woolfe. These staid 15 Fathers, through their long studie, practise, and experience in the Church of God, are skilful Phisitions, acquainted with the beating of euery pulse that beates out of order : they are able to discerne at the first touch, from what kinde of Hæresie, every one of these new Feuers that 20 trouble vs, had his beginning. Therefore, as the high way to hasten the ende of the sicke, when you thinke to profit by their death, is eyther to counsell them to despise the Phisition, and cast both the Goblet and Potion against the walles : or els to deliuer them into the handes of an igno- 25 rant Leache, which by ministring euerie Sowters receipt to reforme the state of the bodie, plyeth them with purgatiue vppon purgatiue, till hee weakeneth the stomacke, and rots both the Liuer and the Longes ; So the readie course to poison her Maiesties louing people, is to discreditte 30 the Phisitions of their soules vnto them, and to suffer euerie *Martin* and Mounte-bancke to practise on them.

By these meanes shall you see Religion haled with violence into her graue, the goodly frame of this Commonweale shall fall, and Banck-rouptes and Atheists pocket 35 vppe the peeces. But our comfort is, that the wisedom

of her most excellent Maiestie is knowne to be greater, then to be traind from so high a seate to so base a lure, as euery *Martinist* casteth out vnto her. Her sacred Maiestie knowes, that it behoueth all Princes to haue
 5 a watchfull regarde vnto their estate, which is to be preserued as well by dooing of nothing that may endomage them, as by seeking of any thing conuenient for them.

Neuer bragge in this quarrell of your fие hundred Brethren of credit and abilitie; *Pasquill* hath excellent
 10 Ferrets to followe | them in their owne Boroughs: and he A 4 can tell you that there is a common kinde of affection, which men of this age carrie to such as you, whilst they haue any seruice to put you to, like vnto them that hauing somewhat to doe with a confection of poyson, reioyce when
 15 they finde it, yet they hate the malice of it, and throw it out of the doores when their turne is serued. Neither doubt I, but that the same reckoning in the ende wyll be made of you, which your fauourers commonly make of theyr olde shooes, when they are past wearing; they
 20 barter th̄ awaie for newe Broomes, or carrie them foorth to the dunghill and leauē them there.

I coulde tell you manie strange stratagems of your best Friendes, but *Pasquill* is a Trauailer, and he knowes that Writers and Printers in these daies are like to Men placed
 25 at the *Persian* Banquets; if they rowle theyr eye neuer so little at one side, there stands an Eunuch before them with his hart full of iealousie, and his Bowe readie bent to shooe them through, because they looke farther then the Lawes of the Countrey suffer them. Neuerthelesse, because your
 30 faction is suddainlie growne stale like an Oyster, and gapes so wide, that euery Fishwife at Billings-gate sees into you, either wee must wilfullie winke, and put out our eyes, or els wee cannot choose but discouer a number of your deformities. *Pasquils* experience in thys generation teacheth
 35 him, that many of your Bowlsterers may be compared to Bookes that are gilded & trimlie couered, they sette a faire

6 endamage B.

25 they eye A: their eye B.

face of Religion vpon your cause, but when they are opened, they are full of Tragedies, eyther *Thyestes* eating vppe the flesh of his owne Children, or cursed *Oedipus* in bed with his owne Mother.

Can you nowe Mast *Martin*, perswade your selfe you 5
 shal haue a pride in your Pistle making, when you vaunte
 of thys brotherhood, and deceiue the world with such drugs
 as please your owne taste. If your fore-heade be so harde
 that you can indeede, forwards and spare not, *Pasquill* is
 readie to pull your Feathers. You shall shortlie haue 10
 a Glosse and a Commentarie vpon your Epilogue, with
 A 4^v certaine Hayes, Iigges, Rimes, | Roundelayes, and Madri-
 gals, seruing for Epitaphes to your Fathers Hearse, to
 make the world lauge out the long Winters nights, which
 verie shortlie will steale vpon vs. 15

In the meane season, because the Winde and the Tide
 will staie for no Man, and I was iust at the making heereof
 as merrie as your selfe, and taking Shippe to bring that
 braue Catalogue of the Saints to light ; I bid your Master-
 dome fare-well till *Michaelmas* Tearme, commanding your 20
 worshippe to the line and the leading of your owne spirite.
 From *Grauesende* Barge the eight of *August*, the first and
 last yeere of *Martinisme*, which like the vntimelie fruite
 of his Masterships Mother, dieth before it sees the

Sunne, and withereth as the Grasse vpon 25
 the house toppe before the Mower
 be able to fill his hande
 with it.

To come to the close,
 In Rime or in Prose,
 In spight of thy nose,
 Thine for these seauen yeeres : 30

Pasquill of
Englande.

THE RETVRNE OF PASQVILL

Entry in the Stationers' Register: None.

Editions: (1) *Early:*

1589. THE | Returne of the renowned Caualiero | Pasquill of England, from the other side the Seas, | and his meeting with Marforius at London vpon | the Royall Exchange. | ♦ | *VVhere they encounter with a little household talke of Mar-tin and Martinisme, discouering the scabbe that is bredde in | England: and conferring together about the speedie | dispersing of the golden Legende of the | liues of the Saints.* | (*) | [device] | ♦ *If my breath be so hote that I burne | my mouth, suppose I was Printed by | Pepper Allie.* | Anno. Dom. 1589.

No colophon. Quarto. Not paged.

Collation: A-D⁴. (A 1) Title, v. blank. A. ij. 'PASQVILS RETVRNE . . .' Rom. and Ital. R-T. Pasquill and Marforius. (D 4)^v blank.

Leaf D 2 is signed *D. ii.* D 2^v has no catch-word in copies a, b, c, d, (v. infra), others have the catch-word 'by.'

Catch-words: A 2. Realme B 1. them-(selues) C 1. new D 1. dissem-(ble).

Copies used or referred to:

- a. British Museum, 96. b. 15. (8).
- b. " " C. 37. d. 49.
- c Lambeth Palace Library, xxx. 6. 26. (2).
- d. Guildhall Library, N. 2. 2.
- e. British Museum, 3932. d. 7.
- f. Lambeth Palace Library, xxx. 6. 25. (2).
- g. Bodleian Library, Malone, 566.

(Gro. The copy in the Huth Library, as represented in Grosart's text.)

(2) Modern Editions:

1883-4. The Complete Works of Thomas Nashe . . .
edited by A. B. Grosart, Vol. i, pp. 87-139.

From a copy in the Huth Library.

1903. (The present edition.)

From a copy in the British Museum (96. b. 15. (8).), with occasional use of the other copies mentioned above. All Grosart's readings which differ from the copy-text have been recorded, reference to the copy which he used being impossible at the present time and there being hence no means of knowing which are errors of transcription and which readings peculiar to that copy.

Note on the relationship of the Copies:

The question of the relationship between the various copies of this book is one of extraordinary difficulty. I do not at present feel able to put forward with confidence any theory on the subject, but on the other hand it is clearly impossible to pass it over altogether in silence. It will be necessary therefore to state, as briefly as possible, the chief facts of the case, leaving a more detailed discussion to some future time, when it is to be hoped new evidence will render possible a more certain conclusion.

Of the seven copies which I have examined I find that **a**, **b**, **c**, **d**, are practically identical or only differ in such points as may be accounted for by supposing them to have been made up of more or less corrected sheets.

The copy from which Grosart printed and **g**¹ seem however to form a group apart. On certain pages they differ considerably in spelling, and occasionally in reading, from the first group. These differences are confined to particular pages and do not necessarily run through a whole sheet. It being impossible to place copies of these two groups side by side there is of course great difficulty in arriving at absolute certainty in this respect, but it may be said with moderate confidence that all of sheet A, B iv,

¹ These appear to be identical. As, however, I have not seen the copy from which Grosart printed I am unable to speak with certainty.

B 2, B 3^v, B 4 are the same in both, while B 1, B 2^v, B 3, B 4^v are different; all of sheet C is the same with the exception of C 1, while all of sheet D is different except D 3^v and D 4; D 4^v being blank.

Copies e and f vary in a similar way from the first group¹, but the variations are confined to sheets A and B, and the pages which differ are not the same as in g and *Gro.* In A, all differ except the title and A 2; in B, B 1, B 2^v, B 3, B 3^v, B 4^v are the same, while B 1^v, B 2, B 4 are different. It will be observed that wherever the first and second groups differ, the third is the same as the first, and wherever the first and third differ, the second is the same as the first. In no case are there more than two varieties.

As to the variations themselves, I can only say here that they consist, besides occasional different readings, in variations of spelling, differences in the use of the plain and flourished forms of Italic capitals, in the e, f group in different paragraph-divisions, and finally differences in the words with which the lines commence, as well when the paragraphs are the same as when they are different. I think it impossible to account for these differences by supposing correction while at press or the accidental drawing out of letters in the inking, and besides why should they only occur on certain pages?

I do not propose to discuss here the reason for these variations in the different copies. It is, I think, evident that they are due not to any correction on the part of the author, but to certain pages being for some reason or other set up twice. To go into the matter in detail and attempt to form a satisfactory theory as to how or why this was done, would, however, lead us into a bibliographical discussion quite out of place in an introductory note of this character.

Fortunately so far as the text is concerned, all this is a matter of but little importance, for in not more than

¹ Examples of this third group may be compared with those of the first both in the British Museum and at Lambeth.

one or two of the variant readings does the difference seem to have been anything but accidental.

I follow **a** as representing the text of the majority of the copies that I have seen. It may belong to the first issue or to a later one; I can see no means of determining¹.

¹ For note on the printer, see the Introductory Note to the *Countercuffe*.

THE
Returne of the renowned Caualiero
Pasquill of England, from the other side the Seas,
and his meeting with Marforius at London vpon
the Royall Exchange.

*

*where they encounter with a little houſhold talke of Mar-
tin and Martinisme, diſcouering the ſcabbethat is brede in
England: and conſerring together about the ſpedieſ
diſperſing of the golden Legende of the
lives of the Saints.*

By Thomas Nash ^(*)



*So ff my breath be fo hote that f burne
my mouth, suppose I was Printed by
Pepper Allie.*

Anno. Dom. 1589.

PASQVILS RETVRNE TO ENGLAND.

A 2

Pasquill and Marforius.

5 PASQVILL. Thou art the man MARFORIVS,
I looked for, though I little thought to meeete thee
so suddainly vpon the Exchange. MARFORIVS.
Euer since you tooke shipping at Grauesende, I haue had
the disease of a Marchants wife, so loue sickle in your
absence, that myne eye was neuer pulde from the Wether-
10 cocke, and longing like a Woman for your returne, I neuer
sawe gale of wind blow merrilie out of the East, nor heard
any Ship shoote off her Ordnaunce in the Themis, but
I ranne presently to the water side, to discouer your
comming in; I wonder how I missed you? PASQVILL.
15 Neuer maruaile at that, I haue learned to maske it: while
some of Martins good freendes stood watching for me at
Lambith bridge, I came to an Anker in Sandwich Hauen.
But of fellowship tell me, howe hath my Countercuffe beene
intreated? MARFO. It requireth a Summers day and
20 a Winters night to tell you all. It was verie welcome to
the Court, thankfullie receiued in both Vniuersities, the
Citties of the Land doe giue you good speeches; as for
the Countrey, after the plainest manner, with hart and
good will, they are ready to greeete you with a Cake and
25 a cup of Ale in euery Parrish. This onely is the thing
that greeueth them, they know not what Pasquill is. They
desire in all places of the | Realme to be acquainted with A 2v
you, because they woulde bring you intelligence thicke
and threefolde, to further your volume of the liues of the
30 Saints. PASQ. I thinke I shall prooue a state man, my

packets come in so fast alreadie, that I beginne to swell
in Bookes as bigge as *Surius*. If any desire to knowe
what I am, tell them that I was once a Barbour in Rome,
(as some report) and euery chayre in my shop was a tongue
full of newes. Whatsoeuer was doone in England, Fraunce,⁵
Germanie, Spaine, Italie, and other Countries, was brought
to me. The high and secrete matters of Lordes, Ladies,
Kinges, Emperours, Princes, Popes, and Monarchs of the
world, did ring euery day as shrill as a Bason about my
doores. In memory whereof, as *Mercurie* turnd *Battus* to ¹⁰
a stone for bewraying his theft, it is thought that one Pope
or other, mistrusting the slippyness of my touȝe, blest me
into a stone to stoppe my mouth. Others affirme, that
the Cittie of Rome, to requite me with honour when
I dyed, erected mee a little monument of stone, with ¹⁵
a body, heade, and hands thicke and short, answerable
to my stature, and set it vp in the open streete, where
I assure you I haue stooode manie yeeres in the rayne:
my face is so tande with the Sunne, and my hyde so
hardened with the wether, that I neither blush when I byte ²⁰
any man, nor feele it when any man byteth me.

MARFO. I wonder howe you were able to continue
there? *PASQ.* To heare euery mans talk that passed by,
was better then meat and drinke to me. In steed of
apparrell, in Summer I wore nothing but paper liueries,²⁵
which manie great men bestowed vpon me to their great
cost: in Winter, I care for no cold, because I am a stone.
MAR. I beseeche you Syr tell me, how came you into
England? *PAS.* Beeing once somewhat busie with Signor
Iacomo, about a pretie wench kept at Frescata for the ³⁰
Pope his Fathers tooth, *Gregorie* the thirteenth, *terque*
quaterque, shooke his white bearde at me with such a
terrible looke, that I was a feard hee would haue smytte
my heade into Tyber with a Thunderbolt. Neuerthelesse,
the olde man beeing of a mylde disposition, and very ³⁵
mercifull, I receiued a pardon for that fault. At the last,

²² Run on by Gro. ³² bearde] head e: beard (*cancel pasted on*) f.

hearing the Schollers of the English Seminarie merrie, A 3
 as they returned from their Vineyarde, and full of fine
 tauntings when they talked of the Sects and opinions
 spong vppe in Englande, I stole out of Rome by night,
 5 to make tryall my selfe of the trueth of theyr reports.

When I came to England, for the good will I carried
 to my olde occupation, I entred at London into *Sprignols*
 shop, where the first newes I heard among two or three
 Gentlemen as they were a trimming, was of a *Martinist*,
 10 a Broker, not farre from thence, which with a face of
 Religion, hauing gottē other mens goods into his hands,
 was but new run away. With this tidings, I grew very
 inquisitiue to knowe what *Martin* was? A knaue, quoth
 one: a theefe, quoth another; hee teacheth the Courte
 15 a Religion to robbe the Church. And some of the Cittie
 that fauour him, apt Schollers to take such an easie lesson,
 beginne to practise their cunning vppon their neighbors.
 Hauing gotten this thred by the end, I neuer left winding
 till I came to the paper that made the bottome. I fre-
 20 quented the Churches of the Pruritane Preachers, that leape
 into the Pulpet with a Pitchfork, to teach men, before they
 haue either learning, iudgment, or wit enough to teach boyes.

MARF. I pray you, Syr, why doe you call them Pruri-
 tanes? *PAS.* *A pruritu.* They haue an itch in their eares,
 25 that would be clawed with new points of doctrine neuer
 dreamed of; and an itch in their fingers, that woulde be
 nointed with the golden *Ænulatum* of the Church. I knowe
 they are commonly called Puritans, and not amisse, that ^{Three} marks of a
Puritan. tytle is one of the marks they beare about them. They 1.
 30 haue a marke in the heade, they are selfe conceited, *They PROV.*
take themselves to be pure, when they are filthy in Gods 30. 12.
 sight; They haue a mark in the eye, theyr lookes are 2.
 haughtie; They haue a marke in the mouth, a verie blacke 3.
 tooth, they are *A generation that curse their father.*
 35 *MAR.* How now Causaliero, are you come to Scripture?

6 *Run on in e,f.* 10 not farre from thence,] the next doore by, e,f. 12
 run away, and left his wife to the charitie of the Parrish. e,f. 23 *MAR.e,f.*

PAS. Doost thou thinke, *Marforius*, that *Pasquill* hauing stooode so many yeeres in the streetes of Rome, heard so many famous Clarks, especially father *Sware*, the Spa-|niarde, and the sifted Greeke witte of Father *Augustine*, and hauing spent so much time in priuate reading the best Bookes that might stirre vppe my deuotion, I would skippe ouer the Booke of all Bookes, the holy Bible? No, no, I haue that volume in my hands, when many a *Martinist* hugges a drabbe in his armes, as you shall perceiue by the liues of the Saints. I tarrie but for one packet of information from Essex side, and that worke shall come out of the Presse like a bride from her chamber, spangled and trapt, with a full caparizon of the ornaments of this present age. *MAR.* The Owles Almanack is expected at your hands as well as that. *PAS.* That is a peece of seruice not to be neglected in his time. I haue there set down all the vpstart Religions in this Lande. The Anabaptists; the Familie of Loue; the seauen capitall hæresies for which some haue beene executed of late yeeres in Suffolke; the diuersities of Puritans and *Martinists*, wyth a number more which you shall heare of when that Booke is Printed. A lamentable spectacle it will be, to see so many faces in one hoode. But GOD knoweth (before whom I stande) I desire not to cast it out as a blocke in the waies of men, for any to stumble at, or to stand at defiance with all Religion; but as a Sea-marke to discouer the quick-sands of newe Religions.

I haue heard that *Bernardin Ochin*, a man of great learning, whom I knew in Rome to be the first founder of the order of the Capuchines, beeing once tucht with the finger of Gods spirite, beganne to detest the superstitions of the Church of Rome, and fledde to Geneua. The same man had a desire also to visite England, & during the time of his remaining here, he found so many blind Sects and Religions within the Land, that hee turned backe like a dogge to his owne vomit, and in some sort hee fell into

the biace of Rome againe. Vnhappie man, that beeing once lightned, looked backe to that Scicilian Ætna, that spues vppe smoake and sulphure into the worlde, to put out the eyes of men; Vnhappie Englande, that by the diversities of opinions in Religion, sette so many handes on hys shoulders to thrust him downe, that was so ready with a turne ^{A 4} to ouerturne. Howe these newe pampred factions at this day, haue shaken the harts of many of her Maiesties louing people, and made them Chamælion like, capable of any fayth sauе the right, I leauie it to them that looke into it. *MAR.* Take heede what you say, it is a common reporte that the faction of *Martinisme* hath mightie freends.

PAS. Thats a bragge *Marforius*; yet if there be any such, I shall finde them in the ende, and against the next Parliament, I wyll picke out a time to pepper them. Though they were as high as the maste, as sure as the tackling, as profitable as the fraught, and as necessary as the sayles, when the shyppe is in danger, ouerboord with all. What meaning soeuer some men haue in it, I am assured, that it can neither stand with policie nor with Religion, to nourish any faction in ciuill matters, much lesse in matters belonging to the Church. *Quid prod-* DIVISION. *est si vos contineat vna domus, et separaret diuersa voluntas?*

What auaileth it, (saith one) for men to be shrowded vnder one rooffe, if they be not of one hart? One secret faction in a Realme dooth more hurt, then any generall plague or open warre.

The pestilence and the sworde are two heauie scourges in GODS hand, that deuoure many thousands of men in little time, yet they reach no farther then the bodie, but a faction deuours more, and sweepes away both body and soule together. Though the Iewes at the siege of Ierusalem, were pressed by theyr enemies without the walles, and punished wyth such a mortalitie within, that the carkases of

¹ biace of the Church of Rome e,f. 6 on] to e,f. 14 Run on by Gro.
20 withall e,f. 29 Run on in e,f. 30-1 in a little e,f. 31 further e,f.

One of
these
factions
was the
faction
of the
zealous
reformers.

the deade did dungē the grounde, yet they neuer went to the wall, till they grew to be factious, & fell to taking one another by the throate. Giue me leauē a little *Marforius* to shyft my sayles and come towardes Italie. They that were wise prophecie long before of the state of Rome, 5 that it should neuer decay but by deuision. Which came to passe. For when the factions of *Sylla* and *Marius*, *Cæsar* and *Pompey*, *Anthonie* and *Lepidus* brake foorth, the florishing Cittie beganne to cast her leafe. The great Empire of great *Alexander*, like a flame of fire in a heape 10 of flaxe, when it was at the highest, did shed it selfe A 4^v suddainly in the ayre, and | came to nothing by the dissentioēs of those that succeeded him. The proude necke of the Græcians, for all their wisedome, was after the like manner brought vnder the Persians and Macedonians. If wee rolle 15 our eyes at one side into the bosome of our neighbour Fraunce, wee shall perceiue, that although it were many times inuaded in the skyrts of the Countrey by the Romans, yet it remained inuincible, till *Cæsar* tooke holde of the discords within the Realme. My heade is full of water, 20 and my cheekes be wette, when I thinke vpon Constantynople, whose particular iarres layde her gates open to the Turke, vnder whose captiuitie she groneth to this day.

Note. A faction in a Kingdome may well be compared to a spark of fire: it catcheth holde at the first in some 25 obscure corner, in a Shoppe, in a Stable, or in a ricke of Strawē, where it lyeth couert a little time, but by little and little it gathers strength, tyll it reare it selfe vp to great houses, Pallaces, and Princes Courtes, and at last it rageth and ouerruns whole Citties & Countries, without 30 quenching before they be vtterly ouerthrowne. In the time of *Iustinian* the Emperor, about the credite and aduancement of two colours, Blewe and Greene, there grewe in Constantinople, two mightie factions, which made such a head the one against the other, that in one day it 35 cost many thousandes of men their liues, and the Emperour himselfe was brought in great hazard, both of his Empire

and his owne person. Vpon as light an occasion in the Dukedom of Florence, for the two colours of Blacke and Whyte, very pestilent quarrels began there, and the factions of the *Bianchi* and the *Neri*, breaking forth like a lightning 5 out of the Clowndes, scourde & wasted the Country where they went. These were but little sparks in the rushes, that Note. euery man treadeth on, and very tryfles at the first, yet gentle Martin. you see howe foule a Cockatrice may be hatcht of so small an egge. If I should rippe vp the stomacks of some in 10 Englannde, when wee consider the brawles, the garboyles, the tragicall exclamations for Church apparrell, may wee not say that Englannde is falne into that fantasticall faction of Florence, for Black & White? Where had this brable his first beginning | but in some obscure corner, in the B 15 tippe of the tongue of some blind Parlor-preacher in the land, in shoppes, in stalles, in the Tynkers budget, the Taylors sheares, and the Sheepheardes Tarboxe? I doubt not *Marforius*, but it will wither where it sprang, and ende where it beganne, in shame and ignoraunce.

20 Thou knowest, that the surest proppe of all Princes, is to promote true Religion, and to keepe it inuiolable when it is established, for this is the well tempered Morter that buildeth vp all estates. *He that honors me, (saith God) I will honor him.* But this chopping & changing of the 25 Religion of the land (which was acquited of accusations in the time of the famous K. *Edward* the sixt, and now aduaunced by the happy raigne of the Queenes most excellent Maiesty, & approued by the wisedom both spiritual & temporal of the whole Realme, & confirmed 30 by a generall consent in the high Court of Parliament) is nothing els, but to picke out the Morter by little and little, that at the next pushe, *Martin* and his companions might ouerthrow the state, and make the Emperiall crowne of her Maiestie kisse the ground.

35 Where there is a diuision fostred, there can be no continuauance of the present state: GOD himselfe hath MATH. 12.

¹⁹ ende at where it began e, (*the word at blotted out in ink*) f.

taught it vs. *Martins* cheefe practise, in the Prouinces of Englande where I haue wandred, is, to perswade the simple, that her Maiestie layeth such a logge vpon their consciences, as they ought not beare, wherupon they presume to make a shrewde scruple of their obedience, 5 and begin to bounde like a Colt that would cast his ryder. Hath God powred so many blessings vpon the Church of Englande, by the very often, and very miraculous preseruations of her sacred Maiesties royall person, and thereby giuen testimonies out of Heauen to the Religion of the 10 Lande, and dares *Martin* attempt to make a doubt bothe of it, and her? Credit me, *Marforius*, this bursting the sinew of peoples obedience to their naturall Prince, cannot be doone, but for a mischiuous intent, what visor soever they sette vpon it. I would faine knowe what should be 15 the reason, that so manie hundreds of thousands in this
B 1^v Realme, haue hetherto humbled | themselues at the feete of one person? can it be because shee is mightier then all they, she beeing but one, and they many millions; she a woman, and they men? Is it any terror thinke you, 20 of the big bodied Holberders that guarde her Maiestie? No *Marforius*, if there were not some wonderful matter that withheld them also, euen they might be giuen ouer to a reprobate sence, to bende euery man the point of his Holberde at her. If we search it till the worlds end, we 25 shall find no other cause of this sweet harmonie of peoples harts, that remaine faithful and flexible to the shaking of her princely finger, but only this, the Religion of the Land. Whē *Martin* shal be suffered to displace God, that nowe dwelles in the bosome of her Maiesties louing people, & 30 buz slanders of Religion into their eares, whereby they may conceiue, that her highnes by the maintenance of the Gospell, hath shutte vppe their saluation in close prison, and that it moues God in his wrath to draw the sword against her and the Realme (as *Martin* himselfe auoucheth), 35 what other consequent may we looke for, but that euery Pruritane, transported with the heate & ignorance of his

zeale, will be as readie as a Papist, to lift vp his hand against her; which mischiefe I beseech God to returne into their bowels.

Howe odious and how dangerous innouations of Religion
 5 are, Secretarie *Machiauell*, a pollitick not much affected to any Religion, discloseth by the example of Fryer *Sauanaroll*. He was a man like *Martin*, sprung vp in such a time as *Martin*, when Spayne, Fraunce, Rome, Arragon, and the Emperour, entred a league to make warre altogether
 10 vpon the Venetians. *Sauanarola* boasted of Reuelations, & secret conferences, held betweene the holy Ghost and him; *Martin* brags hee is a speciall man, raysed vp on a suddaine by the spirit of God, for the good of Englande, as if GOD had beene a stranger to vs all this while.

15 *Sauanarola* made a bragging proffer, which he neuer performed, that he would passe through the fire, for the confirmation of his doctrine; *Martin* hath vaunted he wyl seale his opinion with his hart bloode, but you may see by the starting holes he seeketh, that hee neuer meant
 20 to keepe hys | promise. *Sauanarola* brought himselfe and B 2 his followers to confusion at last; and so will *Martin*.

I muse howe any state man can abide to heare of innouations in Religion where the trueth is preached? There is but one God, which cannot be deuided; if he could, he
 25 were not GOD. All his graces tende to a gathering together of Gods people in a vnitie of Faith, not to a

scattering into diuers Faithes, wherein the principall grace of a *Martinist* consisteth. Looke vnto the Heathen; the accusers of *Socrates* made choyse of this accusation aboue

30 all others, as a matter very worthy of death in him: that he was a fellow that sought to set a newe stampe of his own vpon their Religion. One of the first Lawes that *Romulus* layd, as a ribbe of yron into his gouernment, was, *Deos peregrinos ne colunto*.

35 Take a patterne if you wyl, from priuate Families. What a pittifull thing is it to see two Religions in one

⁴ Run on in e, f.

¹² brags] bags a-d.

house? where the Father and the Sonne, the Husbande & the Wife, the Maister and the Seruant, are of diuers Faithes, the ioyntes of that house begin to gape, and the fall of that house is to be feared. The diuersitie of opinions in so high a degree as is Religion, cannot choose but 5 diminish the loue and respect, that the one of them should carrie vnto the other. The Sonne will be carelesse of his duetie to his Father, whom hee takes to be a reprobate; the Father will make but slender reckoning of the Son, that beleeuers not as he beleuuers. The Wife will giue 10 little reuerence to that Husband, whom she imagineth to be damned; The Husband will be rough and rigorous to such a Wife as obeys not him. The Seruant wyll neuer giue due honor to hys Maister, when he iudgeth him to be the bondslaue of the deuill; The Maister will as hardly 15 protect that Seruaunt, whose hart he perceiues not to be with him.

As then the gouernment of Common-weales was first drawne from the gouernment of priuate houses, so that which is the ruine of priuate houses, growes in time to be 20 the ruine of Common-weales. I haue taken a little paine to visite diuers of the Courtes, Benches, Sessions, that are helde in thys Lande in her Maiesties name, by vertue of her B 2^v authoritie, but | I neuer saw so bolde, so open, so barbarous contempt of magistracie, in any other part of the 25 whole worlde, as I haue seene heere; such canuaces made, such stales set, such traynes layde, such platformes drawne by the factious, to bring theyr Superiours into contempt: and yet they prooue so ridiculous in euerie steppe they tread, that I am ready to stand on my nose whē I trace 30 them out.

I was once in Antwerpe, when great sute was made to the Masters of the English house (by a Gentleman then emploied in the Queenes affaires) for the entertaining a Preacher amōg them, both to teach & to minister the 35 Sacraments there vnto thē. The request was soone

^a and Seruaunt *e,f.* ²⁶ heere. Such *Q.* ²⁸ factions *Gro.*

graunted, & *Trauars*, a fellow that delighteth in obliquitie, was the man that was brought thither: when he came, he had neither taken the Orders of the Ministerie, nor any lycence to preach, according to the gouernment of the 5 Church of Englande, but ran into a corner among the French to receiue it there. At last, one of the Ministers of those Churches, came with him to the companie, and made a sollemne protestation before th̄ all, that he founde Mast *Trauars* a fitte man for the deuiding of the word, and 10 deliuerie of the Sacraments. *Hac oratione finita* sweete Maister *Trauars*, *quem oneris causa nomino*, for I beare him on my backe till my tale be ended, at the first iumpe read a Statute made in Scotland (for Church gouernment) to the naturall Subiects of the Queene of Englande, and 15 tolde them he woulde followe that. I would gladly be resolued in this place, whether *Trauars* dyd not begin very pretilie to play the Pope, in taking vpon him to discharge her Majesties Subiects of the allegiance they owe to theyr naturall Prince, and in stealing away from the crowne of 20 England as many english harts as would harken to him, to translate them at his pleasure to a forraine power? As he layde his foundation in dissention, when hee began to be a builder in Gods house, so hath his worke vnto this day prospered ; the whole frame I perceiue is fallen vpon him. 25 They that were discrete, ventured couragiously to sette a leauer at him, & neuer gaue ouer till he was remooued. |

The Chronicles of Englande, and the daylie enclosures B 3 of Commons in the Lande, teach vs sufficiently, howe inclinable the simpler sort of the people are to rowtes, 30 ryots, commotions, insurrections, and plaine rebellions, when they grow brainsicke, or any new toy taketh them in the head: they neede no *Trauars* nor *Martin* to encrease their giddines. It should seeme that the graund Prior of Fraunce (a man now dead) had gotten some taste of theyr dispo- 35 sition, wh̄ in a Sonet that hee made for his own pleasure,

³ order g, Gro. ¹⁰ *finita*, sweete g, Gro. : *finita*. Sweete a-f. 13
made] om. Gro. 28 this Lande g, Gro. 32 nor] or g, Gro.

to paint out the natures of all Nations, he toucht the pryde,
the wantonnes, the mutabilitie, and the mutinies of the
Spaniard, the Italian, the French, and the Scotchman, and
to the shame of this Nation, hee giues the Englishe a dash
ouer the face with a blacke coale, and sayth: *Traistre*⁵
Anglois, the English man is a Traytor. This is the grounde,
the Popes and the King of Spayne, these many yeeres
haue chosen to themselues to worke vpon, and vsed the
English in nothing more, then in matters of high treason.
Therefore I would wysh the whole Realme to iudge ¹⁰
vprightly, who deserues best to be bolstred and vpheld in
these dangerous times, either they that haue religiously &
constantly preached obedience to her Maiesties louing
people, or they that with a maske of Religion discharge
them of theyr obedience?

15

MAR. Speake softly, *Caualiero*, I perceiue two or three
lay theyr heades at one side, like a shyp vnder sayle, and
begin to cast about you: I doubt they haue ouer-heard
you. This Exchange is vaulted and hollow, and hath such
an Eccho, as multiplies euery worde that is spoken, by ²⁰
Arithmaticke, it makes a thousand of one, & ympes so
many feathers into euery tale, that it flyes with all speede
into euery corner of the Realme.

PAS. All the better for me; when I lacke matter to
talke of, I may resorte hether to take vppe a little newes ²⁵
at interest.

MAR. I maruaile *Caualiero*, that you presse not the
Martinists with much Scripture: they are great quoters of
cōmon places if you marke them. *PAS.* Therin they are
like to a stale Curtizan, that finding herselfe to be worne ³⁰
out of credite, borroweth the gesture of a sober Matron,

B 3^v which makes [her to euery one that knowes her, the more
abominable; for the common sorte whistle at her for her
pride, and the grauer sort spyt at her for her impudencie.
Howe whorishlie Scriptures are alleaged by them, I will ³⁵
discouer (by Gods helpe) in another new worke which

21 and makes g, *Gro.*22 into] vnto g, *Gro.*

I haue in hand, and intituled it, *The May-game of Martinisme*. Verie defflie set out, with Pompes, Pagents, Motions, Maskes, Scutchions, Emblems, Impreasess, strange trickes, and deuises, betweene the Ape and the Owle, the 5 like was never yet seene in Paris-garden. *Penry* the welchman is the foregallant of the Morrice, with the treble belles, shot through the wit with a Woodcocks bill: I woulde not for the fayrest horne-beast in all his Countrey, that the Church of England were a cup of Metheglin, and 10 came in his way when he is ouer-heated; every Bishopricke woulde prooue but a draught, when the Mazer is at his nose. *Martin* himselfe is the Mayd-marian, trimlie drest vppe in a cast Gowne, and a Kercher of Dame *Lawsons*, his face handsomlie muffled with a Diaper-napkin to couer 15 his beard, and a great Nosegay in his hande, of the principalest flowers I could gather out of all hys works. *Wiggenton* daunces round about him in a Cotten-coate, to court him with a Leatherne pudding, and a wooden Ladle. *Paget* marshalleth the way, with a couple of great clubbes, 20 one in his foote, another in his head, & he cryes to the people with a loude voice, *Beware of the Man whom God hath markt*. I can not yet find any so fitte to come lagging behind, with a budget on his necke, to gather the deuotion of the lookers on, as the stocke-keeper of the 25 Bridewel-house of Canterbury; he must carrie the purse, to defray their charges, and then hee may be sure to serue himselfe.

MAR. Peace, *Caualiero*, your tongue will be slitte if you take not heede: I haue heard some say, you should wringe 30 for this geare if the Queene were dead. *PAS.* Tushe, thou art but a crauin, *Marforius*, if thou feare that; hadst thou but one droppe of that water in thine eye, which the Seruaunt of *Elisha* the Prophet had, when he discouered so many Chariots of fire about his Maister, thou shouldest see 35 the Prayers of the | Church of Englande flie vppe into B 4

² with] into *Gro.* ²⁰ on his foote *Gro.* ^{head]} hand *Gro.* ³⁰ geare] yeare *Gro.*

heauen for her Maiestie, and returne againe with Olie-branches in their mouthes (like the Dooue that was sent out of the Arke) to bring tydinges of peace and long life vnto her highnesse. These wonderfull preseruations of her royll person, which the eyes of this Lande euery day 5 behold, are evident tokens, that GOD hath a worke for her to doe; there is a nayle to be knockt into *Siseraes* head, before she be called from the earth. But whē extremitie of age shall ende her daies, I am of the minde of many thousandes in this Land. *MAR.* What is that? *PAS.* ¹⁰ Hee shall doe me a pleasure that cuts my throate. *MAR.* I perceue your abode in Englande hath made you participate with the nature of an Englishman; where you sette downe your reste, you are very resolute, and it appeareth by your conceit, you were able to range a faire ¹⁵ battaile of Scriptures to charge your enemies, if you were driuen to leade your forces out.

PAS. It greeues me *Marforius*, to beholde, that by reason of this newe faction, crept into the harts of the most vnlearned of all the Ministerie, the Preachers of England ²⁰ begin to strike and agree like the Clocks of England, that neuer meete iumpe on a point together. Whereby eyther the hearers of these contentions, should say, as the Auditors of the Philosophers dyd in times past, that the trueth is buried in a pitte where it cannot be founde: or els be perswaded ²⁵ at the last, that GOD hath mockt them, and left the way of saluation vnto men, as vncertaine as the way of *Hanniball* in the Alpes. It is very strange, that the Gospell hauing beene planted in this Lande by those reuerend Byshops that are gone to GOD, men that watered theyr labours ³⁰ with their owne bloode, Christ seeing this pernicious impugning of all that, which by his Saints and holy Martirs he hath left vnto vs, he should be now compelled to come ouer our shinnes with the same rebuke that hee gaue to *Phillip* and the rest of his Disciples, *Hauie I beene so long* ³⁵

⁴ Those *Gro.* ⁷ *Siseraes a-d, g, Gro.* ²⁹ these *Gro.* ³³ vnto]
om. Gro. he should *g, Gro.*: she . . . *a-d*: hee . . . *e, f,* now be *Gro.*

with you, and haue you not knowne me? Hath Christ been JOHN 14.9.
 so long, so frelie, so learnedly, so zealously preached in
 this Land, and must wee nowe on a suddaine, (as if God
 had shewed vs a iuggling [cast) grope for him againe in B 4^v
5 a Puritans budget, stuft full of rayling & reuiling Pamphlets?
 I am sure the Apostle teacheth me, that the wisedom
 which is of God, is *Pure* and *Peaceable*: if it be pure, it JAMES
10 cannot cōmunicate with that tarte taste of the deuils tongue, 3. 17.
 which is a slanderer by his occupation. If it be peaceable,
 it is without faction, & neuer runs into the dāgerous gain-
 saying of *Core*, whose sinne could not choose but be very
 great, because the punishment thereof was very great. But
 I feele by the pulse of a Puritane when I touch him, that
 his disease is the very Apoplexie of the Donatistes, *Quod*
15 *volumus sanctum est.* What soeuer they like is Apostolicall,
 be it neuer so bad; and what they mislike is Diabolicall,
 be it neuer so good.

I shall neuer forget that man of God, Maister *John Foxe*,
 who though he neither sought Benifice nor Bishoprick in the
20 Land, yet whē some of the faction came vnto him with
 a Scottish Minister, and brought him certaine Articles of
 Religion (coyned in a Mint among themselues), desiring
 him to set his hand vnto them, the teares rolling downe
 plentifully vpon his face, he reected them all with a sharpe
25 reproofe. An other time, when *Paget* fawned vpon him,
 full of play like a wanton whelpe whose worme was not
 taken out of his tongue, the good Father encountered him
 in London in an open streete with this greeting, *God send*
thee a right mind to thy crooked gate. A good Prayer
30 beleeue mee for this dogged generation, that is euer barking
 against the Moone, and as men that are troubled with sore
 eyes, they think any light or Religion better & wholsomer
 then that they haue, because they want learning to discerne
 & iudge of that they haue. Yet they think, I warrant you,
35 to carrie all away with censoricall lookes, with gogling the

7 JAME. Q. 8 tarte] g, Gro.: om. a-f.
 neither] neuer g, Gro.

16 and and e, f. 19

28 geeting e, f.

eye, with lifting vppe the hand, with vehement speeches, when the Wine which they broach vnto the people, is the very poyson of Dragons and the gall of Aspes, prest from a bitter Grape that neuer came out of Gods Vintage.

Aquitanicus Prosper found this to be the cause of all contention in the Schooles of Philosophers and Rhethoritians, *Seipsis ducibus vtebantur*. Eucry one that had a C i whirlegig in his braine, | wold haue his own conceit to goe currant for as good painment as any infallible grounde of Arte: And I perceiue the priuie traine that giues fire vnto 10 all this Gunshot, that hath beene so latelie discharged at God and good men in the Church of England, is an ouerweening that *Martin* hath of himselfe, when he would haue that to be the meaning of the holy Ghost, that his mastership imagins. It pleaseth his worship, in his Proem 15 to his cokish conclusions, to make himselfe merry with the Bishop of Winchester for saying, *I am not of opinion that Vna semper debet esse &conomia Ecclesiae*, yet presently he fetcheth his feas himselfe, and leapes very boldlie ouer head and eares, when hee auoucheth, that *Christ, his Apostles 20 and holie Martirs, are of opinion, that the gouernment of the Church, should alwaies and in all places be one &c.* without setting downe any one testimonie of Christ, or Apostle, or holy Martir in that behalfe. Good Byshop, his opinion must be refused, and *Martins* opinion must be receiued ; 25 euery Goose of mast *Martin* must goe for a Swan, and whatsoeuer he speakes must be Canoniall.

MAR. But for all that, though *Martin* forgot himselfe suddainlie in that streine, beeing somewhat eager of his Game, when hee lost the learned Fathers opinion like a ball 30 with the Racket, and made full account to bandie the whole Bishoprick away, yet in other places he quoates Scripture. *PAS.* Hee coateth Scriptures indeed, for he is light of foote, & ouer-runs them, *Marforius*, in euery place. *Qui in Euangelio quod vultis creditis, vobis potius quam Euangelio 35 creditis.* They that beleue what soeuer they lust in holy

Scriptures, are a generation that giue more credit to them-selues than to the Scriptures ; therefore it were good (saith a godly father) for such people to tell the worlde plainlie, that they make no reckoning at all of anie Scriptures.

5 And I assure thee, if that man may be taken for a fugitiue and a Rebell, that runnes to the enemie and forsakes his Prince, those simple creatures may worthilie be denounced to be runnagates from God and from her Maiestie, that forsake this sweete gouernment, vnder which they haue
 10 manie yeeres enjoyed the true preaching of the Gospell, to bespeake them a | new fashion of Religion at *Martins C 1^v* shoppe. Yet is there nothing so familiar in their mouthes, as *Templum Domini*, and *Verbum Domini*, The Temple of the Lorde, and the worde of the Lord : they take the
 15 word by the nose with a paire of Pinchers, & leade it whether soeuer it pleaseth them. But there wil be a day of account, when GOD, (by whose finger the worde was written) shall reuenge the forcible entries they haue made into his possessions, & punish euery forrow they haue
 20 plowed vpon his backe. They are the very Spawnes of the fish *Sæpia*, where the stremme is cleere, and the Scriptures euidentlie dyscouer them, they vomit vp yncke to trouble the waters, and labour to bring Religion to this passe, that as *Appio* the Gramarian reports of himselfe,
 25 he called forth *Homer* out of his graue, onely to aske him what Countriman he was, and who was his Father? So now we must either burne all the Bookes and famous Libraries in the worlde, and take *Martins* assertions for vndoubted *Maximes*, or els fetch vp the Apostles by con-
 30 iuration, to demaund of them whether we be right or no?

As I came through Fraunce, *Marforius*, I was desirous to ryde from the one ende to the other of Clara Vallis, where I found the last will and Testament of S. Bernard, standing in this forme vpon his Tombe. *Tria vobis fratres,*
 35 *obseruanda relinquo, quæ vt potui obseruavi. Primo.* S. Bernards wil stand-ing at this day vpon hys Tombe. *Ne-*
mini scandalum feci, si quando incidit sedauit vt potui. *Secundo.* *Minus semper sensui meo quam alterius credidi.*

Tertio. Læsus de lädente nunquam vindictam petii. Ecce charitatem, humilitatem, patientiam, vobis relinquo. Brethren (saith he) *there be three thinges that I bequeath vnto you to be obserued, which as well as I could I haue obserued my self. First, I neuer gaue scandale vnto any person; if I did, I pacified the matter to my power. Secondlie, I stood vpon mine owne conceite lesse then I did vpon other mens. Thirdly, when I was wronged, I neuer sought reuenge. Beholde, Charitie, Humilitie, and Patience I bequeath vnto you.* This good Father shall ryse vppe in iudgment to 10 condemne *Martin*. Had he beene scarefull of giuing anie Scandale vnto the worlde, his vncharitable Pamphlets had neuer seene the Sunne; Had hee giuen lesse credite to his c² owne | censures and opinions, than to the censures and opinions of better men, so many good Scriptures had 15 neuer been wrested, so many flowers in Gods Garden had neuer been defaced. Had he been ready to suffer wrong without wringing of reuenge out of Gods hand, he would neuer haue thundred & lightned at so many rare men, whose learning and vertue is a pricke in his 20 eye, and a strong watch that intercepts euery passage vnto his Hierarchie. Let him swell while he burst, with the worde in his mouth, so long as hee breaketh the rule of Charitie, and cares not whom he strike, so the edge of his tuske may haue a lighting place; wee may 25 easily see what is within him. *Infælix lolium & steriles dominantur auenæ.* Scripture is often in the typ of his tongue, but Cockle is the graine wee reap with him. It is the propertie of *Martin* & his followers, to measure Gods mouth, by theyr owne mouth, as you shal see in the 30 May-game that I haue promised you: for there you shall haue a number of strange Notes vpon the Text, some of them gathered from *William Dike* at S. Albanes, in his clarklie Paraphrases vpon S. *Luke* and S. *John*, some haue beene brought me from other places, & some I 35 gathered my selfe, in an assemblie of the brotherhood at

Ashford in Kent. I went thether with a Student of Cambridge to a sollemne exercise, and comming in the habite of Schollers, we pressed somewhat boldly into their companie to dine with them, assuring our selues to finde
 5 some new seruice at theyr Table. When the dinner was doone, one of them read a Chapter, euery man keeping his place still; The roome was full of Artificers, men and women, that sate rounde about vpon stooles and benches to harken to it. The Chapter was, the 1. Cor. 3, which
 10 being read, the reader began first to vtter his conceit vpon the Text, in short Notes; then it came to his next neighbours course, and so in order Glosses went a begging, and Expositions ranne a pace through the Table, till they came to me, whom they desired to open my mouth among the
 15 rest: I vtterly refused to vndertake the taske; notwithstanding, I was so wonderfully vrged, that I coulde not any way shift th̄ off, and somewhat I spake among them. When I came to the | ende of my cariere, my companion c 2^v
 was requested to pricke it for company with his freendes.
 20 I needed no Minstrill to make me merrie, my hart tickled of it selfe, when it came to his turn, because I knew him to be a Gentleman well studied in Philosophie, but he had not yet medled with Diuinitie. He chose the thirteenth verse of the Chapter to discourse vpon. Where the Apostle
 25 saith, Euery mans worke shall be tryed by fire. But to see how brauely hee trotted ouer all the Meteors bredde in the highest Region of the ayre, to see how louingly hee made the sence of the Apostle and Ouids fiction of *Phaetons* firing of the world to kisse before they parted, and then
 30 howe souldier-like hee made an ende of his manage with a double rest, was sport enough for vs to beguile the way, as we trauailed backe againe from thence to Canterbury.

I haue brought many a propper note out of that meeting, for every mans spirit at the Table, had two bowts
 35 with the Apostle before hee left him, and one, whilst

another spake, had a breathing time giuen him to whisper with the holy Ghost, to know what shold be put into his head to vtter, against it came about to his course againe.

MAR. Trust mee *Caualiero*, I take this to be the oddest peece of worke of all that hetherto you haue spent your 5 time in ; I trauaile like a woman with child, till this be out. But haue you not heard *Cooper* at Paules chayne, and the rest of the men that are commended to your eares by *Martin Senior* ? *PAS.* I haue followed them also, and I finde them fitte to preach vpon Bellowes, and Bagpipes, 10 and blowne Bladders ; they are so full of ventositie, that I cannot come at their matter for winde and words. *MAR.* What say you to *Dike* of S. Albanes, how like you him ? *PAS.* He is an Asse, he is an Asse, quoth a learned Gentleman of Lyncolnes-Inne, that went thether to heare him 15 at the last Assises, and found him so bald, so bare, and yet so bold to flie into heauen with a fewe sicke feathers, that *Mouit Cornicula risum*. Thys generation hath a little smacke of one of the plagues of Ægypt ; they skippe very lustily into priuate houses, and fill our eares full of croking 20 *C 3* like the Frogges | of Ægypt. *MAR.* What shoulde be the cause of these new Sect-maisters ? *PAS.* This mischiefe hath many fountaines, which I will reduce for thy sake into a little compasse. One cause I finde to be meere ignorauance. GODS Church is compared to an Armie, 25

CANT. 6. 9. well ordered and sette in good aray. In an Armie you haue manie Commaunders, Corporals, Sergiants, Lieutenants, Captains, and Coronels ; yet not all of equall authoritie, but all vnder the direction of one Generall, for the better leading in and out of the whole forces : and in 30 Gods Church, as it hath grown great, companies cōming daily in vnto it out of euery tongue, and Tribe, and Countrey, and Nation, so all Ecclesiasticall and Christian Histories and Antiquities teache vs, that there hath beene a diuersitie of learned and skilfull leaders, some higher, some lower 35 then others in theyr places, and all vnder the controlment

4 odde Q: odde[st] Gro.

17 tofie a-d.

27 Leuteneants Q.

of one Generall, Christ himselfe, for the greater terror of Hæreticks & enemies of the Church and for the grace, the beautie, and order of euerie Cornette and Ensigne in the same; which is a thing glorious in Gods eye, because
 5 he is the GOD of order. But the *Martinists* (sillie wretches) ignorant and vnlearned men, vnfitte for any eminent charge in the Church themselues, seeke to drawe euery place in this Campe royall to an equalitie with th̄selues. A preposterous humor noted in the Ecclesiasticall Histories, diuers that were sette beside the cushion when Bishoprickes were a dealing, sought to make Bishops equall with euery Minister. In this daungerous attempt,
 10 I finde the three plagues that GOD threatneth for peoples sinnes, to be powred out at this day vpon the Church of England. First. *The Sworde is vpon the right eye, and the right hand:* what soeuer is right in the Church of England, is wounded by the *Martinists*, a crooked generation, that loues to swym side-long with the Crabbe.
 Secondly. *Like people, like Priest* begins now to be
 15 verified: the Preachers of the faction, (like Puppets in a motion) begin to snappe and to turne, and to speake, what, and when, and howsoeuer the people will, at whose tables they are fed, like Geese in the Capitol, to gaggle at euery man that is against them. | Thirdly. *Beautie and C 3^v*
 20 *Bandes:* the two staues that God vses like a Sheepheard to guide his people, are knapt in sunder. *Beautie* is burst; for our order is turned into cōfusion: *Bandes* are burst also, for our vnitie is fallen into dissention. The maine poste whereupon the Bucklers, the Armour, the imaginarie
 25 Trophes of the faction, is hanged vppe for the simple to gaze and wonder at, is onely this, *The Church of England hath committed fornication with the Church of Rome, and tript out her foote like a strumpet, to euery deuise of mans braine that hath passed by her.*
 30 Heerein I see the Churches case, is *Susannaes* case: this accusation of incontinencie is framed against her by such as haue sought to be incontinent with her themselues.

Had *Susanna* prostituted her body to the Elders, her credit had never beene called into Question by her accusers: had the Church of England giuen vppe the keyes of her Coffers, to bawdes, beggers, and Banckrounts, the reuerend Elders of *Martinisme* had never put vppe any Billes of 5 endightment against her the last Parliament. But as the storie saith, that *Daniell* was raysed by GOD to acquite her, and conuince euery scatterer of false reports, I thinke before I end, Signor *Pasquill* of Englande wyll prooue the man that must sette a gagge in the mouth of *Martin* 10 the great, and cut vp an Anatomie of all his knauerie. Me thought *Vetus Comædia* beganne to pricke him at London in the right vaine, when shee brought foorth *Diuinitie* wyth a scratcht face, holding of her hart as if she were sicke, because *Martin* would haue forced her, 15 but myssing of his purpose, he left the print of his nayles vpon her cheekes, and poysoned her with a vomit which he ministred vnto her, to make her cast vppe her dignities and promotions.

Thys indeede is the marke that *Martin* shoothes at, 20 whereby you may see that one cause of *Martinisme*, is a collop that dropt out of *Mydas* nose, a desire of Gold. This is the roote of all the mischife, by this many men are fast lockt in the deuils snares, many soules are thrust through with many sorrowes. Thys beeing the ground 25 master *Martin* hath made his choise of, when he castes his accounts, and surueighes howe little witte and howe |

C 4 little might hee hath to goe thorough with his building, like a furious beast wrapt in the cordes where hee cannot stirre, after many a vayne plunge which he giues to breake away, 30 when he sees his labour lost, transported with a rage, he roares and he fomes, and sets himselfe downe in the Scorners Chayre.

Though Babies and fooles stagger, and stande amazed to beholde their newe pranckes, yet almost the meanest 35 in Gods Schoole knowes, it is no strange thing, that the

Church sholde be vexed with such enemies. In the time of holy *David* the King, the Church was assaulted by a kinde of people, whose mouthes were as Quiours, and theyr tongues as Shafts, that did shoothe very secretly at
 5 the best men. Vnto this kinde of people, holy men of God haue giuen sundry tytles, and thereby, as it were, clapt many Brandes vpon theyr backes, to make them knowne to be rotten Sheepe of the deuils foulde. They are termed to be *Bulles of Bashan, Foxes, Serpents, Vipers,*
 10 *Woolues, Spyders, Theeues, Firie-ouens, False-oyes, & a great many names more of like honor, they haue wonne in the fielde, and borne away the prize in euery age.*

A yeere would scarce suffer me to discouer them all at large. Yet that I may touch at euery Coast which
 15 I haue desried, they are called *Bulles*, because they dosse out theyr hornes against the truth ; *Foxes*, because theyr conspiracies, and incontinencies, theyr vnchaste and disordered life, shewes them to be tied together by the tayles like *Sampsons Foxes*, but their heads be loose, they
 20 shake off theyr obedience to their natural Prince. *Serpents*, because they glide vpon theyr bellies ; *No sin among some of them, from the nauell downward*. *Vipers*, to giue light and estimation vnto themselues, they teare open the bowels of theyr owne Damme, and liue by the death of her that
 25 bred them. *Woolues*, In outwarde appearaunce, they are like to the dogge, and make a shewe to the world they would keepe the Sheepe, but all theyr desire is to kill the Sheepe. *Spyders*, because they sucke out theyr mallice from very good hearbes, and spynne with great studie an
 30 vnprofitable webbe, good for nothing but to catch *Flyes*.

Theeues, they breake in by night into | Gods house, and C 4^v would spoyle though it were with the bloode of the Saints. *Firie-ouens*, they haue a scorching breathe, and when they are drawn, they deliuier a batch for the deuils tooth. And
 35 to wind vp their vertues in a word or two, they are *False-oyes*, their substance is brittle, and their Bookes be Glasse ; giue the but a filop, they run to powder. What grounde

they haue gotten by their practises among the witlesse, I neede not tell you, seeing *Martin Senior* is so forward to tell you himselfe, that he hath a hundred thousand in the Lande, readie to lift vppe a new Presbiterie with priuate hands. Though I know that he lyeth loudlie, yet it were 5 not amisse *Magna componere paruis*, and to looke to his fingers, that he be not as readie when hee spyes his time, to lift vp a newe Prince.

After GOD had once brought his Church out of Egipt, by the hand of *Moses*, there wanted neither Iebusite, nor 10 enemy a long time to flye in her face, and to hinder her passage to the Land of promise; And since God led his Church in this Land out of the bondage of Rome, by the conduct of her excellent Maiestie, there neuer yet wanted Papist, Atheist, Brownist, Barowist, Martinist, Anabaptist, 15 nor Familie of Loue to bid them battaile, that their course to Gods Kingdome might be stopt. But in all their attempts it fareth with them, as it dooth with the Wrastler within the Lystes; he winnes now and then, not because he is strong or impossible to be ouer-come, but because the match that 20 he deales withall is weake; *Martin* hath made some head, in some parts of her Maiesties Dominions, not because his worshippe is inuincible, but because hee hath closde with the clowted shoe, and got a little credite by mens infirmites. 25

MAR. By your leauue, *Caualiero*, they say *Martin* hath great vpholders. *PAS.* It may be so to, some few that are as readie as himselfe, to rob the Church: though hee stand in theyr bosoms like the Grasse vpon the house to scape the Clergies Sickles, *Pasquill* will haue a hooke to 30 pull him down. In the mean season, his state is as the

PSAL. 34. Grasse vpon the house; they that are wise and religious

D 1 doe passe by him, but they neuer blesse him, | as men doe the cropp vpon the grounde. Curses I haue read and heard of many that haue followed their humors, that haue 35 affected any pillage of the Church. When *Symon* the

mutinous (vpon a particular grudge hee bare to *Onias* ^{2. MAC. 3.}
 the High Priest) had enformed *Seleucus* the King of Asia,
 of the Churches Treasure, the King sent *Heliodorus* his
 Treasurer to seaze it to the Crown: *Heliodorus* came ^{Martins}
^{Visor.} like a Foxe, to visit and reforme the disorders of Cælosyria
 and Phænice. When the high Priest perceiued, that re-
 formation was his errande, but golde he sought, the graue
 countenance of *Onias* was striken down, and the people
 beholding their Father heauie, ranne some to the Temple,
 some to the Cittie-gates, some stood in their windowes
 looking out, some gadded vppe and downe the streetes,
 like *Bacchus* Froes, franticke for the time, and all ioynly
 lifted vp their hands, their eyes, and their voice to heauen,
 for the defence of the Church Treasure. *Heliodorus* was
 no sooner entred the Treasurie to take the spoyle, but
 there appeared to him a terrible man in Complet Armour
 of Gold, mounted on a barbed Horse, which ranne fiercelie
 at the Kings Treasurer, and trampled him vnder foote.
 Therewithall appeared also two men of excellent strength
 and beautie, whipping and beating him with so many
 stripes, that hee was carried out of the place speechlesse,
 and without any hope of life at all.

But because *Martin* will say the Bookes of the Macha-
 bees are Apocrypha, and *Sprignols* man told me (as he
 trimd me the other day) that there is a new Barbar in
 London, about to shauue the Bible, wherin he finds som-
 what that he would haue cleane discarded, I will deale
 with such Scriptures, as preuent them of all euasions.
 How dangerous it is to gelde the Church goods, the end
³⁰ of *Ananias* and *Saphira* shal witnes for me, for though ^{Act. 5.}
 their death was the punishment of their sinne in lying, yet
 I trust *Martin* will graunt me, that they were drawne to
 that sin by the corde of Sacriledge. And if a greedie desire
 of withholding that from the Church which th̄selues had
³⁵ giuen, was of force to open such a windowe to the deuill,
 that they were presently giuen ouer as a pray to the iawes

D^rv of hell, to lye and | dissemble with the holie Ghost ; howe many foule sinnes and howe many greeuous plagues are to be feared in this Lande, which alreadie hang at the ende of the lyne of *Martinisme*, and would speedilie be puld vpon our heads, if we should but beginne to take that from 5 the Church, which we neuer gaue ? It may be, Mast *Martin* will flappe mee in the mouth with his politique reason, that it is good for the Realme to maintaine their warres by the Church reuenewes, because forraine inuasions are dailie looked for. But to mee with his wisedome at 10

GENE. 47. 22, 26. the halfe sword, I remember that *Ægypt* in the time of *Joseph* the Patriarche, felt so extreame a famine, that the fist parte of the Lande was sold to releue the Lande, yet the Patriarche in all this care he had, both of the Countrey and the King, to succour the one, & enrich the Coffers of 15 the other, neuer attempted any sale of the lande of the Priestes, nor once diminished the same. If the holie Patriarche in so great extreamitie, neuer venturde to alienate the possessions of Idolatrous Priestes, though it were to the releefe of a whole Kingdome, with what face 20 dares anie politique in the world, curtoll the maintenance of the Church of God, and vntile the houses that by religious Princes haue beene consecrated to Gods seruice ?

Let vs see the good that ensueth of their deuices, & let England be warned by the præsidents of other Nations. 25 *Celce* the Constable of *Gertrund* King of Burgonie, hauing vnder the authoritie of the King his Maister, enriched himselfe with the goods of the Church, was one day in the Church at his deuotion, and as he hearde the Prophet read, that proclaines a woe vnto them that ioyne house 30 to house, and land to land, he gaue a shrike suddainlie in the congregation, and cried out, this is spoken to me, this curse is vpon me, and vppon my posterity ; and afterward died miserablie. In Fraunce, *Lewes* the sixt, surnamed the great, was once a protector of the priuiledges of the 35 Church, for perceiuing that the Conte de *Clerimont*, the

24 deuices] dances *Gro.*

27 king a-f.

36 Counte g, *Gro.*

Lord de *Roussi*, the Lord *de Meugn*, the Lorde *de Beuuieu*, and others, had rifled the Bishopricks and Churches within the Realme, he caried Armes in the defence of the Church against them, and compelled them to restore their robes to the Church againe. The same King *Lewes* the great, vrged wyth extreame necessitie in his age, beganne at the last, to pull the Church himselfe. But S. *Bernard*, (one of the Lampes of the Church of GOD in those dayes) sollicited the King with diuers Letters, exhorting him fatherlie to giue ouer that course: at the last, perceiuing that neither entreatie nor reprove was able to withdraw him, he began to darte out the thunderbolts of the Church, and to threaten him, that hee shoulde shortlie feele the iudgment of God vpon him; which suddainlie came to passe, for by the suddaine death of the young Prince his eldest Sonne, the staffe of his age was broken.

MAR. You haue made, Signor *Caualiero*, a sad discourse, yet I feare all this will not saue the Bishopricke of Elie, from shiuering it selfe into many peeces. *PAS.*

What remedie *Marforius*? Though I be but a stone, I am not so sencelesse to presume like a *Martinist*, to teach her excellent Maiestie how to weare a Crowne. Her highnesse beeing so richlie furnished with so rare and high graces from aboue, and knowing which way to hold the Scepter of the defenders of the faith, better by her owne experience, than by the wisedome that is euery day powred into her bosome by the counsels of others, for *Pasquil* to come in nowe with any aduice for her, were to cast (God wot) one little droppe of water into the Sea. Therefore whatsoeuer I haue alreadie spoken in this behalfe, or shall vtter hereafter, when *Martin* or his Maister prouokes me to single Combat, I cowch it heere with all dutie and humilitie at her Maiesties sacred feete.

I know the humor of a *Martinist* to be such, as *David* described long agoe, *Our tongues are our owne, who is PSAL. Lord ouer vs?* An ambitious desire to sitte in the doores

¹ *Mengu Gro.*

¹⁴ suddailie *a-f.*

of euerie mouth, to be seene and talked of, hath made th̄ surfet, and shaken them with many colde fittes of the Feuer of *Eutydimus*. Hee was a wrangling Logician, that had rather say any thing, then seeme to be conquered in disputation, which made him as a man mad and im- 5
pudent, to maintaine by argument, that *his dog was his* |

D 2^v *father, and the father of all the world*; he grew so peruerse and so slippery in his conclusions, that he proued as quick as an Eele in euyer quirke; the harder he was griped, the sooner hee slipt out of euyer hand. But *Pasquill* is made 10 of another temper, hee acknowledgeth the least Magistrate in the Land to be Lord of his tongue, & the Lawes of this Country to be the curbe that God & her Maiestie haue made for vnrulie mouthes, least her people should gore one another like brute beastes. *Pasquill* offereth his back to 15 S. *Bernards* discipline; far from the contentions of *Martin* and *Eutydimus*, he giueth lesse credit and authoritie to his own wit, than to the least of all those that he findes to be men of more learning and iudgment then himselfe.

Martin cryes out (as if he had already poysoned the 20 springs head, where the whole Realme shold fetch water) *Let the Court alone*; he saith he knowes what a wonderfull working the hope of gaine and of gold hath in that place, yet *Pasquill* is resolued, that her excellent Maiestie (as hetherto she hath doone) will continue still her princelie 25 fauour to the Priuiledges of the Church of England, and giue the blessing to it that *Moses* gaue to the Priest-hood

DEVT. of the Tribe of *Leui*, and pray for th̄. First, *That the*

33. 8. *Vrim and Thummim may be among them*, wisedom and knowledge for the peoples good, and that when they offer 30 vnto the Lord, *The work of their hands may be accepted*. Next, that God in his mercie would *Blesse their substauce, and smyte theyr enemies quite through the loynes, that they may neuer rise againe*.

MAR. Inough *Caualiero*, the Clock strikes eleuen, and 35

3 Fenes of *Eutydinus Gro.*
22 knoweth *g*, *Gro.*

17 *Eutydinus Gro.*

18 all] om. *g*, *Gro.*

the Marchants come in to the Exchange apace ; I think it were best to talke no longer here. And seeing *Martins* matters begin to be whust, it were good in my iudgment to suppresse your volume of The liues of the Saints. *PAS.*
 5 Nay *Marforius*, I must haue three courses of the Launce with *Th. Cartwright*, before I leaue. Hath *Martin* made him his God, and thinketh he to escape my fingers ? I will be with him to bring, from the very first rocking of his cradle, to the last penny that hee payd for purchasing.
 10 What ? shall I neuer take the faction without hypocrisie ?

wold a man think this companion were persecuted | by the D 3
 Church of England; that in the heate of his persecution is so braue a purchaser ? Goe toe brother *Thomas*, tell your neighbors about you, *Rogers* of *Bifield*, *Fen* of *Coutry*
 15 and the rest, that I keepe a Register of all the Puritane purchasers in the Realme, & I meane to be Clarke of their Audit for these seauen yeres ; my Patent is already sealed.
MAR. Seeing you will forwards with the works you haue taken in hand, giue me some direction for the priuie
 20 dispersing them when they come out. *PAS.* I would haue thee principally, to drop some of th̄ down at *Penrie* the Welch-mans haunt. *MAR.* Where is that ? *PAS.* Tut, I perceiue you know nothing. At the signe of the siluer forke and the tosted cheese, where the Painter to
 25 bewray both his abuse of the Scriptures, & his malice against the Church, hath drawne him his word with a Text-pen, *Zelus domus tuæ comedit me.* A speeche holy *Dauid* did vse, when the zeale of the Church did eate vp the Court, and a speeche now describing the spirit of
 30 *Penrie*, that would faine turne the Church of the Lande to a tosted cheese, that the zeale of the Court might eat vppe her. *MAR.* You said in the ende of your *Countercuffe*, that you would sende vs a Comentarie vpon *Martin Iunior*, I forgot till now to aske you what is become of
 35 that ? *PAS.* I fell that night into a traunce, wherein mee

5 *Marforius a-f.*

17 *Paten Q.*

12 his] om. *Gro.*

34 till] tell g, *Gro.*

13 bother *Thomas a-f.*

thought I saw a verie golden wit performe that matter, with so keene a tooth, and such a pleasant grace, that I gaue ouer to him, and fartherred The liues of the Saints as much as my leysure would giue me leaue. And credit me, when I came to the life of the myncing Dame of Rochester with the golden locks, whose concept was so quick, that shee caught a childe whilst her husbande was from her, as her clappe was so suddaine, that no body knowes how it came, or how it went, for since she was deliuered (passe & repasse) the childe was neuer heard of : 10 so my pen was as swyfte as the post-horse of the Towne ; I ran a great deale of ground in a litle time about her causes. But who commeth yonder *Marforius*, can you tell me ?

MAR. By her gate and her Garland I knowe her well, it 15
is *Vetus Comedia*. She hath been so long in the Country,
D 3^v that she | is somewhat altred : this is she that called in
a counsell of Phisitians about *Martin*, and found by the
sharpnes of his humour, when they had opened the vaine
that feedes his head, that hee would spit out his lunges 20
within one yere. And I promise you she prophecied very
truly of him : you may see by the Bookes that he set forth
last, that his strength is spent. PAS. I haue a tale to
tell her in her eare, of the slye practise that was vsed in
restraining of her. In the meane season *Marforius*, I 25
take my leaue of thee, charging thee vpon all our old
acquaintance, and vpon my blessing, to set vp this bill
at London stone. Let it be doone solemnly with Drom
and Trumpet, and looke you aduance my colours on the
top of the steeple right ouer against it, that euery one of 30
my Souldiers may keepe his quarter.

PASQVILS PROTESTATION
VPPON LONDON STONE.

I Causaliero Pasquill, the writer of this simple hand, a young man, of the age of some few hundred yeeres, lately 5 knighted in Englande, with a beetle and a bucking tub, to beat a little reason about Martins head, doe make this my Protestation vnto the world, that if any man, woman, or childe, haue any thing to say against Martin the great, or any of his abettors, of what state or calling soeuer they be, 10 noble or ignoble, from the very Court-gates to the Coblers stall, if it please them these dark Winter-nights, to sticke vppe their papers vppon London-stone, I will there giue my attendance to receiue them, from the day of the date heereof, to the full terme and reuolution of seuen yeeres next ensuing.
*15 Dated 20. Octobris. Anno Millimo, Quillimo, Trillimo,
Per me venturous Pasquill the Causaliero.*

MAR. Brauamente Signor. This deuice (I perswade me) will haue his working ; assure your selfe I wil put it in execution. Is there any thing els you would haue me 20 doe ? PAS. Yes, if I thought you were at leysure : you haue been very busie I perceiue about Martins death, and though he liue yet, it may be you prophecie of his end. Yester-night late, olde Martins Protestation in Octauo was brought vnto mee : I see by the | volume, hee languisheth D 4 25 euery day more and more, the pride of his flesh is so much falne, that you may tell euery bone in hys body now. I pray thee Marforius, after the Soldatescha bravura of displaying my Banners vpon London-stone, send this Pistle to Martin by the next Poste.

*Causaliero Pasquill of England, to Martin the great,
wisheth more wit and learning, and a
better minde.*

MAy it please your Masterdom to vnderstand, that by the last Butterfie you sent abroad, you tel me a tale 5 of a dry Sommer, and protest that you seek not to staunch the hote thyrst of any couetous Courtier, with the Bishoprickes of the Land, but to share thē amongst the Ministerie. Fie, fie, doe not you know that a lyer must haue no shetle memory? If you looke eyther to your former works, 10 where you vrge the spoyle of the Church for the mainte- aunce of wars, or to your son Martin Senior, a man that hath slept in his fathers bosome and knowes your minde, in exhorting his yonger brother, to resigne the care of Church reuenewes to the Court, you shal find your selfe 15 takē with an ouverture. Pasquill is not so blind, but he sees Martin to be a man that goes two manner of waies: and peraduenture he followed your last packe of Bookes to the verie Gates where they were carried in. A chip of ill chance, you haue lost your iugling stick, your con- 20 ueighance is such, that you shatter, and carrie not halfe so cleane as your freends would haue you. You say this quarrell will neuer be determined but by blood. All the better say I, Pasquill will be the first that wyll lay down his life vpon the cause. God hath hardned my face against 25 the faces of men. I haue already made vp my reckoning of euery danger that may ensue. It is neither losse of liuing nor life, nor so blind a bob as BLIND ASSE, that will scare a Causaliero from this honorable fight he hath vnder- taken. The wise & learned (to whose iudgmēts I appeale) 30 shall censure vs both. To meet with your affixes at euery great post & place of cōcourse, by Gods helpe, I will hang such a payre of pendants at both your eares, before it be long, that whosoeuer beholds you, shal say, Don Diego di Martin hath an idle braine. You brag you haue giuen 35

M. D. Bancroft such a sliue ouer the shoulders, as the credite of hys Chaplenship shall not recouer. Though the learning and honestie of the man doe very much credit him, with all that are eyther learned or honest of them-selues, yet seeing you come to his Chaplinship, I cannot forbeare you, but tell you plaine, that halfe a looke of his honourable Maister, shall giue him more credit in England in one day, then Martin or all his crew shal be able to robbe him of while the world stands, though they swell at him with enuie like a nest of foule Toades, till their bodies slyt, and poure out theyr bowels vpon the earth. I haue many other things to lay to your charge, which I purpose to wink at, vntill your Dialogue be ended ; but then Syr, because you tell me you are yet vnmaried, I wyll take downe your breeches for altogether.

Caualiero Pasquill.

THE FIRST PARTE OF PASQVILS APOLOGIE

Entry in the Stationers' Register: None.

Editions: (1) *Early*:

1590. *THE | First parte of Pasquils Apo-|logie. | Wherin he renders a reasoun to his friendes | of his long silencie: and gallops the fielde with the | Treatise of Reformation lately written | by a fugitiue, Iohn | Penrie. | [device] | Printed where I was, and where I will bee | readie by the helpe of God and my Muse, to send | you the May-game of Martinisme for an interme-|dium, betweene the first and seconde | part of the Apologie. | Anno. Dom. 1590.*

No colophon. Quarto. Not paged.

Collation: A-D⁴, E². A. j. blank, except for signature. (A 2) Title, v. blank. A. 3. 'THE FIRST PART . . .' Rom. and Ital. R-T. The first part | of Pasquils Apologie. (E 2) blank. (Lambeth Library, xxx. 6. 26. (3).)

Catch-words: A 3. (reue-)rende, B 1. (pur-)gatorie, C 1. writing D 1. (be-)ginning E 1. name

Copy used: That in the British Museum (C. 37. d. 51. (1).)¹

(2) *Modern edition*:

1883-4. *The Complete Works of Thomas Nashe . . .*, edited by A. B. Grosart. Vol. i, pp. 207-253.

From the copy in the Huth Library.

¹ For note on the printer, see the Introductory Note to the *Countercuffe*.

THE
First parte of Pasquils Apo-
logie.

Wherin he renders a reason to his friendes
of his long silence : and gallops the fielde with the
Treatise of Reformation lately written
by a fugitiue, *John Penrie.*



Printed where I was , and where I will bee
readie by the helpe of God and my Muse, to lend
you the May-game of Martinisine for an interme-
dium, betweene the first and seconde
part of the Apologie.

Anno. Dom. 1590.

THE FIRST PART

A 3

OF PASQVILS APO-
LOGIE.

5 **I**F it be a vanitie and vexation of hart, for a man to
toyle in hys life to gather treasure, when he knowes
not whither he be wise or foolish that shall inherite it :
we may thinke the sweat of our spirits to be somewhat
friuelous, which write & print, when we cannot tell whether
they will prooue sober or frantick to whom we leauue the
10 possession of our labours. It is nowe almost a full yeere,
since I first entred into the lystes against the Faction,
promising other Bookes which I keepe in yet, because the
opening of them, is such an opening of waters, as will fill
the eares of the world with a fearefull roaring. Were I but
15 a dogge, wise men would suffer me to bay in the defence of
mine own maister, but being a liuely stone, squared and
layd into Gods building, by the hands of many excellent
workmen in the Church of England, when I see the theefe,
and the sente of Church-robbers is in my nosthrils, shall
20 I not lay out my throate to keepe them off?

I know, that since the beginning of all these broyles
in our Church of England, not onely the L. Archb. of
Canterburie in his learned works, but many other reue-|rende,
religious, and worthy men, both at Paules-crosse, and the
25 Pulpits in Cittie and Country, haue with great skill and
sobrietie, toucht euery string of the holy scriptures, and
warbled sweetlie, to cast out the foule spirit of the Faction,
with Dauids harpe : but their madnesse on the contrarie
part hath so encreased, that their attempt is still to nayle
30 our best men to the wall with the speare of slander.

By these euentz you may easily perceiue what successe
they are like to haue, that deale with so leaden and sandie
braines, he that hazards his time and cost to teach them,

aduentures to waken the drowsie out of a dreame, their heads fall downe the lower for the lifting vp, and they defile vs with dust when they shake themselues.

I could for my part be well contented, to throwe my selfe at their feete with teares, and entreatie, to stop their course: that the weake (for whom Jesus Christ hath dyed,) may not see vs runne one at another like furious Bulles, foming and casting out those reproches, which heereafter we shall neuer be able to wipe awaie; and when we should ioyne to encounter the common enemie, the first view of each other, wil enforce vs to braule againe. But seeing sobrietie will doe no good, let them be well assured, that if I catch such a brimse in my pen as I caught the last August, I will neuer leauue flynging about with them, so long as I finde anie ground to beare me. Contention is 15 a coale, the more it is blowne by dysputation, the more it kindleth: I must spit in theyr faces to put it out.

Euer since the last Michelmas Tearme, many thousands of my freendes haue looked for me, whom I am loath to enforce to loose their longing: and though in silence I 20 gloate through the fingers at other matters, yet am I not carelesse of the quarrell nowe in hand. The peace of Ierusalem, which the faithfull are bound to pray for, is the

^A 4 onely thing that hath brought me to thys long | and quiet pause; wherein I haue set the example of Dauid before 25 mine eyes, seeking with my hart a surcease of Armes, euen of those that hated peace, and prepared themselues to battaile when I spake vnto them. The case so standing, I trust I am worthy to be held excused, if I muster and traine my men a newe, that the enemies of GOD and the 30 state wherein I liue, may be stopt of theyr passage and driuen backe, or vtterly foyled in the field and ouerthrown.

My labour in this peece of seruice will be the lesse, because the byshop of my soule, my L. Archb. of Cant. strooke off the head of the serpent long agone: it is nothing 35 but the tayle that moueth now. Some small rubs, as I heare, haue been cast in my way to hinder my comming

forth, but they shall not profit. It is reported, that a student at the Lawe hath vndertaken to be a stickler betweene vs all : his booke is not in print, and I came a day short of the sight of the coppie of it. For any thing I heare, he quencheth the strife with a pinte of water and a pottle of fire. I little thought his leysure would haue suffered him to haue any more then a common kinde of knowledge, in matters so farre remoued from the course of his studie, place, and calling.

10 They that are most conuersant in the Scriptures, finde the booke to be shut with many seales ; it is not for euery finger to breake them vp ; the word is a treasure kept vnder many locks, which are not to be opened with euerie key. He onely that hath the key of Dauid, hath graunted
15 out a commission to the lippes of his Priestes, to come within it. So that if I doubt of any matter there, I may not knocke for it at the Chamber-dore of a common Counsellor, but haue recourse vnto them, whom God himselfe appointed to teach Iacob before any Inne of courte
20 was reard. I can tell him that *M. Bucer, Peter Martyr*, and that auncient *Entellus* of the Church of England, the B. of Sarisburie, haue trauast our Church | with as graue A 4^v a gate as he, and founde nothing in it to stumble at. Therefore what I say to him, I say to the rest of our
25 Reformers, whose tongues are so busie to licke out the moates of their bretherens eyes, if they haue any wisedome in theyr vessels, let them be carefull howe they lende it out, least that when the suddaine shoute of the comming of the Bridegroome shall be giuen, and euerie virgin would
30 be glad to trime his owne Lampe, there be not enough for them and others.

Some other things there are that made me looke backe, and measure the rase I had runne alreadie, before I bid any man the bace againe. To this I was stirred vp by the
35 dislike that some had of the ierke which I gaue to Fryer *Sauanarol* : & quoth one, he was the first that inuented our Religion : this fellow seemes to haue a Pope in his bellie

THE FIRST PART

as bigge as *Alexander*, he would make you beleue, that our Church hath borrowed the light of her Torche at a Fryers Taper, which is far otherwise. Our Religion in England is no newe exrement of the braine of man, but drawne out of the fountaine of all trueth, God himselfe, 5 who spake in olde time to our fathers, to *Adam*, to *Enoch*, to *Noah*, to *Abraham*, and so downward, to the Patriarches & Prophets that were all vnder the clowde, and sawe the promise a farre of, which was in the latter daies made manifest to vs in Iesus Christ. Our fayth and Religion 10 is the fayth and Religion of our father *Abraham*, fulfilling the prophecie of *Zacharie* who told vs before, that all nations should take holde of the skyrte of a Iewe, and say, we wyll goe with thee, we haue heard that God is with thee. Considering what was the hope of our fathers, and the 15 hope of vs, what was preached to them, & what to vs, our Religion may say with the Sonne of God, *I came out of the mouth of the most Highest.*

I tooke another nybling like a Minew about *Bezaes Icones*, where you shall finde commendation is giuen to | 20 B i *Sauanarol*, and the fishe that was strooken with *Bezas* hooke, is *Perceuall the plaine*, but because his hande so shooke when he carried his coppie to the Presse, that he crost his accusation out againe, I will sheath every weapon I had drawne in my defence. Onelie I will giue the 25 Readers to vnderstand, that the commendations which eyther M. *Foxe*, or M. *Beza*, do giue to *Sauanarol*, are to be attributed to the best parts that were in him, that is, to the glimmering he had of the face of God in so darke a time, wherein he inueighed against the pride of the Court 30 of Rome, a matter that *Petrarche* the poeticall Priest touched as well as he; I can shewe you euen by the Sermons that spunne him a halter to stop his breath, he was no Protestant. For in some of them he taught the popish distinction of veniall and mortall sinne, in some he 35 preached merit, in some the reall presence in the sacrifice of the Masse, and in the ende of his sixt Sermon made

in *Florence*, vpon the finishing of *Noahs Arke*, consider what he sayth. *Io vi voglio rivelare uno secreto: che insino a qui, non ho voluto dirlo: perche non ho hauuto tanta certezza, come ho hauuto da diece hore in qua, ciascuno di voi credo che conoscesse el conte Giovanni della Mirandola, che stava qui in Firenze: et e morto, pochi giorni sono. Dicoui che l' anima sua per le orationi di frati & anche per alcune sue buone opere che fece in questa vita, et per altre orationi, e nel purgatorio. Orate pro eo, &c.* I wil tel you (saith he) a secrete, which to this day I haue refused to vtter, because I had no great certaintie of the matter vntill within these ten howres. I think euery one of you knew the Countie *John Mirandola*, which liued here in *Florence*, and died within these fewe dayes. I tell you that his soule, by vertue of the prayers of the Friers and of some good works he did whilst he liued, together wyth some other prayers, is now in Purgatorie: pray for him.

See heere how many blaines breake out of the Fryer in a little space. A reuelation concerning merit, purgatorie, B 1^v and prayer for the dead. Therefore as *S. Ierom* commendeth *Origen* for his memorie, labour, and sharp sight into many places of holy Scripture, yet reproueth him for his errors: so I thinke well with *M. Foxe* and *M. Beza* of that which was good in Fryer *Sauanaroll*, though I compared him with *Martin* for hys factious head, pleading in *Florence* as *Martin* did in *England*, for a newe gouernment, at such a time as Armes and inuasion clattered about their eares. It may be I am of some better sente then you take me for, and finding a Machiauellian tricke in this plot of innouation, I was the more willing to lay *Sauanarols* example before your eyes, that hauing recourse vnto *Machiaucll* in whom it is recorded, you might see *Machiauels* iudgment vpon the same. His opinion is, that when such a peaze may be drawne through the noses of the people as to beare a change, the Maisters of the Faction are most happie; they may doe what they lust without controlment.

I heard a byrd sing more then I meane to say, but riddle me, riddle me, what was he that told a very freend of his, he would owe neuer a pennie in England in one halfe yeere? His liuing considered, though it were fayre, the sale of all he possessed would hardly doe it : the time 5 was so busie when he spake it, that no such largesse could be looked for at the hands of her Ma. who had requited euery penni-woorth of duetie with many a pounde of fauour long before: no fingring of Spanish coyne mought be mistrusted ; & the Philosophers stone to turne mettles 10 into gold, is yet to seeke : I cannot deuise which way so rounde summes could be so readilie compast, but by the spoyle of Bishopricks, Deaneries, and Cathedrall Churches, which very shortly after were stoutly pushed at. Credit me, hee spake somewhat neerer the point then 15 himselfe was ware of, for if his soule be gone the way of the iust, his debt is already canceld. Let him goe, let
B 2 him goe, I could tell you myste-ries, but there is a whole Chamber full of sentences in the land, the very painting of the walles is wisedome, whence I learned this lesson, 20 *Acerbum est ab eo laudi, de quo non poteris tuto queri:* it is a shrewde matter to be wrunge by him, against whom a man cannot with anie safetie open his mouth to make complaint. Sure I am that by practises and pollicies, the garment of Christ is torne in peeces, and the Church 25 is ouertaken with such a flawe, that it is high time euery fugitiue of the faction were hurled with *Jonas* into the Sea. They thunder their sentence out of the clowdes, and contrarie to the rule of Gods Apostle, they take vpon them to iudge men before the time. Whosoeuer readeth 30 the Epistle and treatise of *John Penrie* concerning Reformation, shal discouer thys swelling and sawcie humour in him against her Maiesties right honourable priuie Counsell.

I remember the wisedome of the land in a graue Oration deliuered in the Starre-chamber, compared our Nobilitie 35 and men of marke, to the flowers that stand about the Princes Crowne, garnishing & giuing a grace vnto it: to

deface any one of them, is an open iniurie offered to the Crowne it selfe. Howe *Penrie* or any Puritane, that reacheth at the ornaments of the Crowne, can be faithfull or dutifull to her Maiestie, I leave it to the iudgement euen of the 5 meanest that is but indued wyth common sence. I will let passe the graue testimonie of so graue a Counsellor, and set the axe of the word to the roote of this withered tree.

The great commaundier of the world, hath appointed certaine boundes and land marks vnto our lips. Exo. 22. 28.
 10 *Thou shalt not rail vpon the Judges, nor speake euill of the Ruler of thy people.* You may resolute vpon this, that there is no time of the Moone sette for vs to open the Maister vaine. To charge her Ma. right honourable priuie Counsell with insolencie, iniustice, murther in the highest 15 degree, yea more, the very killing and cruſcifying of Christ a fresh, is nothing els but to remoue the Landmarks and lymits by God prescribed, that neuer a subiect heereafter might knowe his duetie. I warrant you the cunning Pap-maker knewe what he did, when he made 20 choyse of no other spoone than a hatchet for such a mouth, no other lace then a halter for such a neck. Yet is *Penrie* become a man of law, he can frame an Inditement out of the Psalmes, against such as sit & taunte at theyr bretheren in euerie corner, when the plea may be turned 25 vpon himselfe, in that none haue giuen theyr mouth vnto euill so much as he. Let me deale with him for it by interrogatories. Who had the ouersight of the Libell at Fawslie? *John* of Wales: Who was corrector to the Presse at Couentrie? *John* of Wales: Who wrote the 30 last treatise of Reformation so full of slanders, but *John* of Wales? Is it so brother *John*, can you byte and whine? then heare thy selfe indited againe by *Pasquill*. Thou hast railed vpon the Judges, and spoken euill of the Rulers of thy people: thou hast ascended aboue the clowdes 35 and made thy selfe like to the most High.

What sentence shall we looke for against him now? I must set the trumpet of *Esay* to my mouth, and deliuier

him nothing but points of warre. Thou that hast sette thy throne aboue the starres, shalt be brought downe vnto the graue, the Princes shall sleepe in glorie, euery one in his own house, but thou shalt be troden as a carcasse vnder feete, & euery one that beholdeth thee shall say, is thys 5 the iollie fellow that shooke kingdoms?

Hauing giuen many hisses of the old serpent against his betters, in the Epistle to the treatise, in the treatise it selfe he begins to rolle vp his head within his scales, and would fayne proue that Puritans be no Traytors. Wyll you see 10 his reason? Because in the treasonable attempts against her Ma. these 31. yeeres, no one Puritane can be shewed, saith he, to haue had any part in them. Is thys the best B 3 proofe he can afforde vs? I am so sicke in the | stomache when I reade it, that if some of my freends did not hold 15 my head, I shold cast euery minute of an houre: Hath the Toade no poyson before he spits it, and the Scorpion no sting in his tayle before hee thrusts it out? Be there no more Traytors in England then be taken? And is it such a matter as cannot be found, that euer anie Puritane 20 became a Traytor? Without doubt he speakes like an Iland man, that imagins there be no more beastes abroade then such as graze vpon the Mountains of Wales at home. You that are Oxford men, enquire whether *Walpoole* were not a Puritane when he forsooke you? and you that haue 25 trauailed, aunswere for me, whether he be not now a Iesuite in the Italian Colledge of Iesuites at Rome, a sworne seruaunt to the Pope and counsel of Trent? reade the oath in the end of the booke you that haue the Counsel, and then resolute me whether no one instance may be giuen 30 of any Puritane, that in all these thirtie one yeeres hath become a Traytor? I could reckon vp vnto him nowe, what excellent hope the English Cardinall conceiueth of a Puritane; he that hath such a dubble quartane of curiositie before he comes amongst them, will prooue passing 35 trecherous, and passing superstitious as soone as he is burnt with the sunne of the Alpes.

But giue me leaue a little to search what treason may be laid to Puritanes at home. Popish traytors hold that they may excommunicate their King, if he hinder the building of theyr Church, and he bcing excommunicate, they say 5 they are discharged of theyr obedience. If such a priuie Fistuloe doe not eate into the hearts of Puritans at home, I refer you to the Phisitians that dyscouered thys mischiefe before I was able to espic it. You shall finde such a matter in the Appendix to the first treatise of the Aunswer to the 10 Abstract. They pitch themselues vpon a Law of Tenures ^{Pag. 194,} for vassals & Lords, and would draw it out like a wier from ^{195.} subiects to Prin-^ces, from which they are roundly beaten ^{B 3*} by a learned Ciuilian in the land. Aboue all other, reade the defence of the Aunswer to the Admonition, in the 15 whole Treatise of the Princes right in matters Ecclesiasticall, beginning Pag. 694. My L. Archb. of Cant. hath so brused the Faction, and cut them in the scull, that they haue lyen groning and panting, breathing and bleeding euer since; many as blinde a Chirurgion as *Penrie*, 20 endeuouring to close vp their woundes hath made them wider, and left them all desperate vpon their death bed. Considering how weake his Purgation is, let vs examine his Reformation, and try whether that be any stronger.

The first petition he makes is for a preaching Ministerie: 25 he comes in very late with this request, we haue thys alreadie. Thousands of able Ministers in the Church of England; number for number, no kingdome vnder heauen can shew the like. Neuerthelesse, because the reading of the word hath his place in our Church as well as 30 preaching, it is vineger to his teeth, and maketh him very sawcie with his g. of Cant. He challengeth the Archb. for affirming reading to be preaching, wherein my Reformer doth nothing but play the Iugler. he packs vnder-boord, and shewes not how farre forth the Archb. hath affirmed it. 35 Preaching, saith the reuerend father, is taken two waies in the holie Scriptures. Generally, as it signifies euery

kind of instruction by the word. Acts. 15. 21. Where it is said that *Moses* is preached in the Citties euery Sabbath, when *Moses* is read in the Citties euery Sabbath. Particularly, strictly, and vsuallie, preaching is taken for expounding the Scriptures, and applying the playster vnto 5 the sore. He neyther sayth that reading is expounding, nor that reading is preaching, in respect of him that readeth, but in respect of Gods spryte, which watereth the word, and makes it fruitfull to conuersion in vs when it is read. For proofe wherof the testimonies of S. *Cyprian* and 10 B 4 Ma. *Foxe* are there produced, together with the example of S. *Augustine*, who was conuerted by reading the latter end of the 12. chap. to the Romans. *Cyprian* saith that God himselfe speakes vnto vs when the Scriptures are read; and Ma. *Foxe* gyueth in his euidence of many that 15 in the infancie of our Church were brought out of darknes into light by reading, and hearing the newe Testament in the English tongue.

Penrie speaks not one word of all this, because he was built but for a Flie-boate, to take and leave; when the 20 skyrmish is too hote for him to tarrie, he may sette vp his sayles and runne away. It is a wonder to see with how terrible an out-cry he takes his heele, charging the Archb. to be a deceiuer, to haue his right eye blinded, and to deserue to be condemned for an Hæretick. Tantara, 25 tantara, is he fled indeede? let me sende a Sakar after him. Is the holy Ghost a deceiuer, that saith *Moses* is preached when *Moses* is read? Is the right eye and vnderstanding of God put out, because he commaunds the

CAP. 36. message of *Ieremie* to be set downe in writing, and to 30 be read vnto his people? Are Christ and the Apostle to be condemnd for Hæreticks, because the one stooode

LVKE 4. 16. vp in the Synagogue on the Sabbath day to read, the other chargeth *Timothie* to giue attendance to reading till he com? Was the reading of the word when there went no 35

1. TIM. 4. 13. preaching with it, no better then Swines blood before the Maiestie of GOD? Howe commeth it to passe then that

God would haue it so? and why doth he attribute an effect of preaching vnto reading, Iere. 36. 2, affirming that by this meanes the people may heare and repent, and he may forgive them their iniquities?

5 I wyll thresh at his shoulders before I leauie him, let him make his complaint to his Maister *Cartwright*, and let him dresse him, if he please, when I haue done with him. It is not his emptie reply of emptie feeders, darke eyes, ill work-men to hasten the haruest, that shall stop B 4
 10 mouth. I looke for scholasticall grases, and aunswers to so graue and weightie arguments; he may not thinke to beguile mine appetite as women do their children that cry for meate, when they giue them a bable to play withall.

As a man comparing the ioy of heauen with the painfulnes REVEL. 15. 3, 4
 15 of feare, cannot say there is feare in heauen: yet as feare is taken for a reuerence, and admiration of the works, the wonders, the iustice, the trueth, and maiestie of God, it is no hard manner of speech at all, to say there is feare in heauen, feare in the holy Angels, feare in the bosoms of
 20 the blessed: so if you compare the exposition and application that are in preaching, as preaching is strictly taken, with the barenesse of reading, in respect of the person of him that readeth, you cannot say there is preaching in reading, nor that reading is preaching, without derogation
 25 vnto preaching: yet as preaching is taken in holy Scriptures for euery kinde of instruction by the word, the speech may be swallowed with ease enough, to say there is preaching in reading, and reading is preaching, as the Aunswer to the Admonition teacheth you.

30 Though they grinne with the mouth, grinde with the teeth, stampe with the feete, and take stones with the Iewes to hurle at me, this truth shall be defended against them all. Neuerthelesse, I wyll not be theyr vpholder which lye sleeping and snorting in their charges, vnapt
 35 or vnable to stand in the breach, or to run between the wrath of God and the people when the plague approcheth, for I wish with my heart that euery Parrish had a Watch-

man, who with the tongue of the learned might call vpon them: but this is such a matter as cannot by all the Bishops in the land be brought to passe. For suppose that all they who cannot preach could be remoued, where will you finde sufficient men for so manie places as would be voide? 5
If you goe to our Vniuersities, they cannot affoord you one C 1 for twentie, which | matter *T. C.* saw well enough, when he had no other shift to aunswer this, but to say he looked for help from the Innes of Court. No doubt manie excellent learned wits, and religious mindes, are nursed there, and 10 suppose the Gentleman whose vnprinted booke I speake of, could find in his hart to make such an honorable change of life, as to forsake the barre to pleade for GOD, I doubt how many hundreds would follow him.

The Church of the Lande beeing still vnfurnisht, what 15 shall we doe? I know what morsels *Penrie* would haue before he gapes, he will cry, let them be restored that are put to silence. If we should yeeld so much vnto him, (though the number of them also would not fill vp the emptie places) yet they must be examined by the Apostles 20 rule of cutting and deuiding the word a right, and not one of them should be admitted, that hath not a steddie hand to cleave iust where the ioynt is: where would they stande, trowe you, which in stead of sound doctrine to feede our soules, haue giuen vs the wine of giddines to turne our 25 braines? I wil not trouble them at this time with their triall by the touch-stone of *Contradicentes redargueret*, for then I should find them so ill appointed, that they must be throwne ouer the Pulpit as thicke as hoppes. Therefore *Penrie* began to gather his wits vnto him, when he limitted 30 his Petition to certaine bounds: he would haue able men in euerie Congregation within England, as farre as possibly they might be prouided. Heere his wit is at the fullest, and presentlie it beginneth to wane againe; fore-seeing the matter, though possible with God, impossible with vs, it 35 is verie boldly doone of him, before he knowes the waike of his own spirit, to iudge the spirite of another man, and

pronounce condemnation to a Bishop, before the tribunall seate of God, where he must stand to receiue sentence vpon himselfe.

What a watch had S. *Ierom* before his mouth when, |
 5 writing against an erroneous Bishop (which neither all C^r
 Warwicke, nor all Wales, shall euer be able to prooue by
 the Archb. of Canterburie), with great humilitie and
 humblenes of spirit, he sayd, that if the honour of the
 Priest-hoode, and reuerence of the very name of a Bishop
 10 did not with-hold him, and but that he called to minde the
 Apostles aunswer, *I knew not that he was high Priest*,
 he confesseth with what out-cryes and heate of tearmes he
 could finde in his heart to inueigh against him, If so
 learned a Father as S. *Ierom*, to whom *Cartwright* and
 15 *Penrie* may goe to schoole, had such a respect to the place
 & person of the Bishop of Ierusalem, euen then when he
 was suspected of the haeresies of *Origen* and *Arrius*, &
 refused personally to appeare in a Counsell to cleere him-
 selfe, what a reuerend regard ought euerie one of vs to haue
 20 of the Bishops of Iesus Christ, which are and haue beene
 the very hands, whereby God hath deliuered his truth vnto
 vs? He that receiueth and honors them, receiuers and
 honors not them so much as him, whose Bishops vn-
 doubtedly they are. Heerein neighbour *Cartwright* I
 25 challenge you of a daungerous *Angina* in your throate:
 how durst you presume to make so lowde a lie as to say
 the B. of Sarisburie, D. *Iucll*, cals the doctrine of the holy
 Ghost wantonnes? You would make vs beleue, that if ^{Pag. 9}
 30 humanitie stayed you not, you could breake vppe his
^{sect. 1.}
graue and bite him beeing dead, whom you durst not looke
 in the face whilst he liued. That Bishop hath a great
 many learned sonnes, first taught by him in his house,
 afterwardes maintained by his purse in the vniuersitie;
 they are all of the nature of the Elephant, the more they
 35 see the blood of their Maister shed, the more their courage
 increaseth, and they breake with the greater force into the
 battaile. They haue all vowed to hale thee out of thy

trenches by the head and eares; *Pasquill* is the meanest of them.

Moreouer brother *Penrie*, I challenge you, and the C 2 whole rabble of your confederates, for all your malepart, murderous, and bloodie rayling, against the Archb. of 5 Canterbury, one of her Maiesties right honourable priuie Counsell, against whom it appeareth your tongues are bent, to shoote still in secrete, and not to cease till sathanus quiuer be spent, and no venim left, for any Hæreticke to vse that shall come after you. 10

Assure your selfe, the more you reuile him, the greater will his honour be; the world sees it wel enough, and such as are not able to reade his works, may iustly imagine by the course you take, that whom you cannot conquere by learned writings, you goe about to kyll with words. 15 What is this, I pray you, but to fall groueling to the earth in the questions and controuersies scand betweene vs, and beeing downe, to vse the last refuge, to kicke and spurne?

As for the reuerende Bishops of our soules, they know it better then I can tell them, that this is the waie, through 20 which the Apostles of God were led, through good report and euill, as deceiuers and yet true; They are no better then the Prophets, which dwelt as it were in a nest of Hornets; They are not so good as their Ma. Christ, they must feele the scourge of euill tongues as he hath doone. 25 And though in this dogged generation and age of ours, wherein both Prelats & Princes are depraued, they liue euery day in danger to haue theyr skinnes torne, yet God for his Churches sake sprinckled ouer all the kingdoms of the world, shall giue them a bodie of brasse to with- 30 stande the enemie, and make them a patterne to other Nations.

The second venue the Welch-man hath bestowed vpon vs, is a wipe ouer the shinnes of the *Non Residents*, which me thinkes might very well be returned to the brother- 35 hood of the faction in Warwick-shire, of which I haue seene more then I meane to name, mounted vpon their dubble

Geldings, with theyr Wiues behinde | them, ryding and c²⁴
 iaunsling from place to place, to feaste among the Gentle-
 men of the Shyre, and retyre to theyr charge when the
 whole weeke is wasted in pleasure, to preache to Gods
 5 people vpon a full stomach. These be the fellowes that
 cannot away with a virgin Priest. Goe to, goe to, but for
 Cholericke diseases this scorching wether, I could point
 you out one by one, with a wette finger. Yet because
 10 that by the length of other mens frailties euery man may
 take the measure of himselfe, I will carrie my mouth in my
 hart, and let them passe, and though there be a pad in
 the straw that must be rousde, I haue taken out this lesson
 from the Wise ; there is a time for speech, and a time for
 silence.

15 I will not flie from the cause to the person of men, but
 grapple with the Reformer hand to hand. He giues vs
 a voley of Scriptures against *Non Residents*, not one of
 them proouing the matter he takes vpon him. The places
 20 shall be singled out, that you may see howe his wits
 wandred one from another, when he quoated them. Rom. 10.
 v. 14. The Apostle sayth, we cannot call vpon God
 without a Preacher. I graunt it. Nowe because we cannot
 worshippe him, before we haue learned howe to worship
 him, shall we say we cannot doe it when we haue beene
 25 taught it, except we haue a Preacher continuallie present
 with vs? I denie it. Tis to reason thus, Mystresse *Penrie*
 cannot call vpon GOD without the presence of a Preacher,
 ergo, she cannot pray in her bed without the presence of
 a Preacher. He coucheth that in the Scriptures which the
 30 Scriptures neuer meant.

To the next, to the next, more sacks to the Myll.
 1. Cor. 9. v. 16. Paule confesseth he must of necessitie
 preach the Gospell, woe is him if he doe it not. And
 1. Cor. 4. v. 2. The Minister must be faithfull. *Transeat*,
 35 for this concludeth nothing, but a necessitie of teaching
 before learning, and in them that teach, a right cutte of
 the worde, without gigges or fancies of haereticall and |

C 3 newe opinions. Thys tieth not a Preacher to one place
 continuallie. Forwarde Sir *John*, you must change your
 argument. 1. Thes. 2. v. 10. The Thessalonians were
 witnesses of Paules behauour among them. And 2. Thes.
 3. 10. He desires to see their face. Giue me thy hande, 5
 this makes for me. When he was among them, then he
 was Resident; when he did long personally to be with
 them againe to teach them farther, then he was absent.
 6 Paule art thou guiltie of the blood of the Thessalonians?
 if not, woe be to that wretched mouth of Wales. 10

These places are too short in the waste to serue hys
 turne, he will be with vs to bring anone I doubt not.
 1. Peter. 5. v. 2. The Minister must feede his flocke
 willingly. What of this? ergo he must neuer be away.
 Hoe Ball hoe, I perceiue the fellowe is bird eyed, he 15
 startles and snuffes at every shadow. Is his braine so
 bitten with the frost, that no better proose will bud out
 of it? Yes I warrant you, either we goe to the wall nowe
 or neuer. Acts. 20. v. 18, 19, 20. Paule tels the Church
 of Ephesus, that he had beene among them at all seasons, 20
 and taught through euerie house. *All seasons*, and *Euerie
 house*. How like you this? A rodde for the Grammer
 boy, he dooth nothing but wrangle about words. What
 a stur haue we heere with *All* and *Euerie*? The word
All, is taken somtimes in the Scriptures for all sorts, 25
 or all maner, as Luk. 11. v. 42. The Scribes and Pharisies
 are saide to tythe *Omne olus*, that is, all sorts and all
 manner of hearbes, Minte, Cummin, Anise and the rest.
 Sometimes the word *All* in the Scriptures is taken for
Manie. Rom. 5. v. 8. By the transgression of one, all 30
 are damned (as the Apostle there teacheth vs), but by
 the benefit of one, all are saued, that is, *Manie*: for so he
 expoundeth himselfe in the next verse folowing, where
 he saith; that as by the first man *Adam*, there be many
 slaine, so by Christ there be many saued. To the poynt 35
 now, Paul was among the Ephesians at all seasons, not
 C 3^v that he was neuer absent | from them, for howe coulde

he then haue preached in Macedonia and other places after he had preached at Ephesus? It falleth out answerable to this distinction, that his conuersation among them at all seasons, was all sorts of seasons, all manner of 5 seasons, earely, and late, & manie seasons. In his absence from Ephesus, it may be that he lost some of his sheepe among the Ephesians, as he did among the Galathians, yet when he comes to Ephesus to see them, (determining to goe from thence to Ierusalem, concerning his former 10 absence past, and his latter absence to ensue,) he washeth his handes from the blood of them all, and saith he is guiltie of none of them, in respect he had deliuered them al the counsels of God before. People may not looke to lay all vpon the Parsons shoulders, but they must 15 search, and haue recourse vnto the Scriptures, which are able to make the man of God perfect.

By the end I haue giuen the Welch-man to his *All*, he may stitch vp his *Euerie* when it pleaseth him. Iohn. 1. v. 9. The Euangelist declareth Christ to be the true 20 light, which lighteth *euerie* man that commeth into the world. Hath euery man that is borne the light of Christ? happie were it then with Turkes, Infidels, Atheists, and 25 happie were it then with *Penric*, for he should see, how vnto this day he hath reeled vp and downe like a drunken man, hauing no scriptures at all to stay himselfe vpon.

When the Apostle saith he taught the Ephesians through euerie house, he makes a difference betweene his publique preaching and priuate counsell, whereby when any were sicke or weake, or occasion required to giue them priuate 30 exhortation, he went vnto them to binde vppe the broken and bring them into the folde; not that he did thys euerie day, or that he set his foote ouer euerie threshold that was in Ephesus. And thys is performed by our Ministers, which in visiting the sicke | and breeding of peace betweene man and C 4 man, haue occasion sometime to goe from house to house.

Heere the Reformer beeing falne into the nette, and

fearing it wold be some bodies chaunce to take him vp, tumbling and strugling to gette away, he curseth all those that goe about to aunswere him, neyther considering that the curse which is causeles shall not come, nor remembreding the Apostles counsell, who exhorteth vs all to blesse, and 5 not to curse, because we are the heyres of blessing. Thys is but a stone, throwne vp with furie into the ayre, and is likelie to fall vppon his owne pate, *Motus in autorem reddit.*

To be aunswered by distinctions, that Chawlke may not beare the price of Cheese, nor copper be currant to goe for 10 painment, he thinks to fore-stall or to dyscourage vs, by terming it a scornefull reiecting of godly examples, and a matter altogether childish and vnlearned. Wherein you may behold, what violence he offereth to the holie Ghost, to the Apostle Paule, and to S. *Augustine*. Is the holie 15 Ghost a scorner? Is Paule childish? Is *Augustine* that famous piller of the Church vnlearned? The distinction wherewith I haue shaken off his proose is taught me by the holy Ghost and the Apostle in the places cited, and by S. *Augustine*, *Enchirid. cap. 13. De correpl. & Gra. cap. 14. 20* and 4. *Cont. Iul. cap. 8.*

Other excellent points I could presse and pinch him with to the like purpose, were I not contented to strike the winge, and come downe to his capacitie, whom I pittie to see so bare a schoole-man. He hath no way now to slyppe 25 out of my handes, but to take sentrie in the Hospitall of Warwick, with this or some such like shift of descant; That Paule was an Apostle, who had the whole fielde of the world to tyl: Apostles are now ceased in the Church, and euerie Minister is tied to a perticular plow-lande, from which he 30

C 4^v may not be absent, as | Paule was, from the places where he had planted. He perceiueth not in all this, that I haue his leg in a string still; though I suffer him to flye to make me sport, I can pull him in againe when I lust. Indeede, the immediate calling of the Apostles, theyr working of 35 myracles, theyr commission to quarter out the world, is ceased, but in respect of preaching the word, in any place

of the dominion wherein the Preacher liueth, though he haue a particular plow-land of his owne, Apostles cease not, but continue still in the Church, & shall doe vntil the comming of Jesus Christ. Ephe. 4. 11. The place is plaine.

5 *He gaue some to be Apostles;* for howe long I pray you? *vnto the measure of the age of the fulnes of Christ.* Let them take heede how they deale with this authorite, for thys beeing a place vpon which they haue built theyr Presbiterie, if they pull but one straw out of the nest, al 10 their egges are broken.

How lawfull a matter it is for a Minister to be from his particular plow-lande, when it tendeth to the commoditie of the same, by his conference abroad with better learned then himselfe, or when it redowndes to the benefit of the 15 whole Church of the kingdome wherein he liueth, or when he is called forth by the authoritie of his superiours, is so soundly prooued, in the defence of the Aunswere to the Admonition, by my L. Archb. of Cant. that I reioyce to trace after him aloofe, with reuerence and honour vnto his 20 steppes. To be short in thys poynt, and shut it vp, that I may the better withdrawe the Welch-man from seeking any succour of *T. C.* concerning the two points alreadie handled, I wyll shewe you three pretie brawles betweene them, and so leauе them close together by the eares.

25 *John Penrie,* in his treatise of Reformation, sayth preaching is the onely ordinary meanes to worke fayth in the peoples harts. *Tho. Cartwright* saith, it is the most ordinarie meane, and most excellent, therein confessing | a lesse ordinarie, and lesse excellent meane then preaching is. 30 Againe, *John Penrie* tyeth the Minister to a continuall feeding, vntill his Maister come, that his Maister may find MAT. 24. 45, 46. hym so dooing. Wherein he considereth not, that the Pastor eyther preaching sometimes in another place out of his charge, continewes feeding, or, conferring with the learned, 35 prouideth foode to be giuen to his fellow seruants in due time, and there-withall, hauing put out his talents to vse, and encreased them, shal at the last enter into his Maisters

Cartwright
and Penrie,
both at
buffets.

Pag. 126.
line 14.

Pag. 49.
sect. vlt.

joy. *T. C.* looseth the corde and lets it out a great deale farther, for he holdes, that a Pastor may be absent from his Parish vpon occasion of necessarie worldly busines ; it may be he meaneth about purchasing, as he hath doone.

Last of all, *John Penrie*, to snatch vp the cord again, 5 and tye him shorter, telleth vs that a Minister may put no Substitute in his roome, and so consequently cannot be
 44. 8. absent. His prooфе for it, is in Ezechiell, Where the Priestes are reprooued for appointing others to take the charge of the Sanctuarie vnder them : a common faulте of his, to 10 alleage Scripture before he vnderstandeth it. That place is not vnderstoode of euerie Substitute, but of vncircumcised Substitutes. *T. C.* seeing well enough though he say nothing, that little help could be gathered out of this place, teacheth vs, that a Pastor may prouide another in his 15 absence if he be an able man. In these three assertions, where the one of them dasheth out the others teeth, *T. C.* is the wariest of the two, for he treads nicelie, as one that daunceth vpon a lyne, mistrusting euerie foote an ouerturn : the Welch-man leapes bluntlie into the bryars with 20 a leafe on his shinne, caring not much whether head or heeles goe formost.

The last poynt of Reformation to which the treatise leadeth me, is a desire the Reformer hath, that the Bishoppes of the land should be throwne downe, and the Iewes 25
 D 1^v Synedrion set vp. And why ? because from the be|ginning of the new Testament to the latter end of it, there is not a word spoken of a Lord Archbishop, nor a Lord Bishop. Will he neuer leauе to play the lubber ? what a lazie, lowtish kind of argument is this, to reason *ab autoritate 30 negative?* it is condemned and hyssed out of all Schooles of learning : had it beene a matter of saluation, I could haue borne with him to heare him reason negatiuelie from the authoritie of holy scriptures, and all Schooles of Phylosophers shoulde haue vailed the bonet vnto GOD ; 35 the case standing as it dooth, I cannot but draw my mouth awrie. Not satis-fied wyth the slippe he hath giuen the

Vniuersities and Lawes of learning, he is as bolde with the Scriptures and schoole of Angels.

Bishops, sayth he, pollute the Church two wayes, the one is by theyr dealing in ciuill matters, the other, by theyr superioritie ouer inferiour Ministers. I might iustly scorne to looke vpon so foule a vomit, were I not perswaded, that the poyson beeing tasted before, the drinke I must giue you will be the better welcom. His proofes for these two points are these. Math. 10. 24, 25. The Disciple is not aboue his Maister, &c. Which lesson our Sauiour giueth his disciples, to encourage them to beare the persecution, hatred, nyppes, taunting, and euill speeches of the wicked, according to the patterne he had giuen the, inferring vpon it, that if they called the Maister of the house Belzebub, much more they would doe so to the seruaunt, and they must looke for the lyke intreatie. You see there is no such matter as the Reformer would force vpon vs. But you may imagine what a terrible burning fitte he is in, by his tossing and turning from place to place to recouer rest, though it torment him much the more.

From the tenth of S. Mathew, he thrustes himselfe into the 18. of S. Iohn. v. 36. *My kingdome* (saith our Sauiour) *is not of this world; if it were, my seruaunts woulde | fight D 2 for me.* There was an accusation framed against our Sauiour to put him to death, the maine poynt whereof was this, that he affected the Scepter, and sought innouation and change of the present state; whereupon Pilats interrogatorie ministred vnto him was, Art thou the king of the Iewes? Christes aunswere vnto him cleeres him of it. They might see by his proceedings that he had no such pretence, for then he would haue sought it by Armes and inuasion, as they that hunt for kingdoms doe. No broyles nor commotion beeing made by him, or by his followers, they might perceiue he was wrongfully accused, to seeke any subuersion of the state. Thys is *Caluins* iudgment vpon that place. Had he founde it to make against mingling of Ecclesiasticall and ciuil authoritie in one person, I dare

auouch he wold haue bent the nose of this Canon vpon vs presentlie.

But when Christ saith there, *His kingdome is not of this world*, he takes it to be spoken in respect of the transitorinesse of worldly kingdoms, that must passe ouer 5 the stage with all theyr pompe, and come to a winding vp at last ; when his kingdome shall haue no end.

They that abused thys place, to prooue out of it, that the cause of Religion ought not to be defended by sword, though it be by sword inuaded, had a little more tincture 10 from hence to lay vpon theyr opinion, than *Penrie* can haue, yet both are from the meaning of the texte. The other quotation of Iohn. 6. v. 15. helps him as little as this. Christes hyding himselfe out of the way when the people went about to make him king, was because he came to 15 suffer, not to raigne : and to shew them theyr error, who thought it was in theyr power to make a king, the setting vp of Princes pertaining not vnto them, but vnto God. To gather from thence, that a Minister may not deale in ciuil causes is to reason as I heard an Ironmonger did 20 in a Pulpit the last Summer ; *Moses* refused to be the D 2^v sonne of *Pharaohs* daughter, ergo a | Minister may not meddle in ciuill causes. Bounse, thers a gunne gone off, doe not the Bishops quake at thys? ô that I could drawe him out of his hole, to print me the poynts which he hath 25 preached ; the spirite of the Prophets being subiect to the Prophets, and his spirite and doctrine examined by the spirite and doctrine of the Church of England, you should see me so clapper-claw him for it, that he should haue no ioy to runne into Reformation, before he be better 30 learned. The pearle of the word must not be weighed in those scales that men commonly vse to weigh their yron ; it is a nicer work.

Now me thinkes the Reformer should smell ere I goe any further, that the rest of his reasons haue taken water, 35 and are rotten before they come to shore. I see not one of his prooues that will abide the hammer, they are so

beaten to powder by the examples of the old and new Testament. In the old you shall finde, that *Melchisedeck, Aron, Eli, and Samuel*, were both Priests & Iudges ; they both offered Sacrifices, and sate vpon ciuill causes. In the 5 newe Testament, Christ who refused to be made King of the Iewes, tooke vpon him to ouerthrow the tables of the money changers, and whipt the buiers and sellers out of the Temple. Paule also requested Timothie as a Iudge, to receiue no accusation against an Elder, but vnder two or 10 three witnesses.

Thys authoritie beeing receiued from the Prince, vnder whom we liue, and being exercised in the Church vnder her, The B. of Sarisburie iudgeth to become Ecclesiasticall, in that it serueth to the furtheraunce of the Church. The 15 matter hauing beene so well debated, and resolued vpon by so reuerend learned men, as with great studie and trauaile haue run the race before vs, to teache vs that come after howe to vse our weapons ; I wonder how these seelie snayles, creeping but yesterdaie out of shoppes and 20 Grammer-schooles, dare thrust out theyr feeble hornes, against so tough and mighty aduersaries. | Moreouer, it is D 3 very strange to consider howe many gashes the Faction haue giuen vnto themselues, in denying this iurisdiction vnto our Ministerie, and seeking it vnto theyr owne, wherein 25 they will haue some of theyr Elders to be gouerning and preaching Elders, to handle the word and the sword together ; and whereas our Bishops receivei their authoritie from her Maiestie, exercising it in her name and vnder her, would haue his authoritie to be aboue 30 her, in the ruling of the Church, and her Maiestie to be fitted vnto him, and to his Alder-men, as the hangings to the house.

Looke what a pittifull Megrim it is, that troubleth them in this poynt, thelike, God wot, maketh theyr braines to 35 crow in the superioritie of Bishoppes aboue theyr bretheren. Are all Ministers, I beseech you, of equall authoritie ? Howe then commaundeth Paule *Titus* and *Timothie*, and

they obey him in the matters he giueth them in charge? Is he that is directed and commaunded, equal with him that directeth and commaundeth? Theyr crosse-blowe of *Fellowe labourers* will not sauе theyr ribbes, if they be no better Fencers.

5

The Archb. and inferior Minister are both equal, in respect of theyr fight in the Lordes battailes, as the Generall of the fielde and the common Souldiours are, but not in respect of ordering and disposing of the fight, when euery Souldiour is appointed to his place. Thys 10 equalitie beeing hatched by *Aerius*, it is well prooued by Ma. Doctor *Bancroft* in his Sermon at Paules crosse, both out of *Epiphanius* and S. *Augustine*, to haue beene condemned for an hæresie, with the consent of the whole Church.

15

When S. *Ierom* heares of such a matter, he wonders at it. For the Bishop of Ierusalem beeing requested to appeare in a Counsell, and refusing it, sent one *Isidorus* a Priest in his stead; a Bishoppe was looked for, a Priest came, who to couer the Bishops absence, had nothing to | 20

D 3^v alleage but that it was all one, and the authoritie of the one as great as the other, because he was a man of God that sent, and a man of God that came. *Nihil interest inter Præsbyterum et Episcopum, eadem dignitas mittentis et missi: hoc satis imperite, in portu vt dicitur naufragium.* 25 What, saith S. *Ierom*, is there no difference betweene a Priest and a Bishop? is the dignitie of him that is sent, as great as his that sendeth him? This is spoken without wit or learning, and this is euen at the first putting into harbour, to cast away the shyp.

30

The first lifting vp of a Bishop, as S. *Ierom* noteth, was the very phisicke of the Church against Schisme, least every man drawing his owne priuate way, the ioynts of Gods house should be puld one from another, and so the building fall.

35

The weakest sight in the worlde may well discerne, that this busie seeking of an equalitie among the Clergie, is the

practice of *Nahash* with the men of *Iabesh* when they were besieged. He would admitte no conditions of peace with them, except he might thrust out theyr right eyes, and bring a shame vpon all Israell. Bishops were lifted vppe 5 into the highest places of the Church, as the right eyes of the people of the Lorde, to keepe watch against Schisme & Hæresie ; no peace, no truce, no silence, no agreement will be gotten at the handes of the Faction, except we suffer them to bore out these eyes, that a shame and reproche 10 may be brought vpon all Religion.

Thys is the conclusion of *Penries* prayer in his Epistle to the *Treatise*, that the Bishoppes may be thrust as one man out of the Church, and the name of them forgotten in Israell for euer. Nowe is the broode of hell broken 15 loose, the Church is a besieged *Iabesh*, the deuill hauing whetted the sword of Spayne against it, & finding open force to be nothing worth, he cals out his Pianers, and sets *Martin* and *Penrie* a worke to vndermine it. But D 4 heere is our comfort. As the spirit of God came vpon 20 *Saul*, and stung him forward to put to sword and to scatter the hoste of *Nahash*, in such sorte that there were not two of them left together ; The spirite of the Lord shall come vpon her Maiestie, and kindle her sacred hart with a newe courage to strike home, that there may not 25 one couple of the Faction be left together in the Realme of Englande, not so much as to binde vppe each others woundes, nor one to be-mone another.

What is it els to desire this equalitie, but that euery man might be his owne iudge, and teach what he wyll in 30 his owne charge, when he hath no Bishoppe aboue him to controll him ? Howe dangerous this is in the high and hidden misteries of the worde, a man may perceiue by experience in common matters, for euen in things dailie subiect vnto our sences, a mans owne aduice is commonly 35 the worst counsellor he can haue. *Salomon* who was a great deale wiser then any Sect-master euer was, or wyll be, hath giuen vs warning, That if a man beginne once

to be wise in his owne conceite, there is greater hope of a foole then of him. And I dare auouch, that whosoeuer is possessed with an ouerweening, or giues two much credit vnto himselfe, needeth not to be tempted of the deuill, because he is a tempter, and a deuill vnto himselfe. 5

Exo. 19. At the deliuery of the Lawe in Sinay, GOD com-maunded his people to be folded vp, and to stand within the barres, vpon paine of death ; At the deliuerie of the Gospell, our Sauiour branded his sheepe with these two

IoH. 10. 3. marks, *hearing*, and *following*. They must harken to the 10 voice of him that teacheth, and followe the trace of him that leadeth ; they may neither commaund, nor goe before. When they beginne to snuffe vppe the winde in theyr noses, like the wilde Asse in the Wildernessee, which tyreth all that follow her ; when they stande vpon the pinacle 15

D 4^v of euerie Tower & Castle, built in the ayre | by theyr owne conceite, and say to the Bishoppes as the people did to *Jeremie*, *What soever commeth out of our own mouth, that will we doe*, then they are verie easie to be deceiued. And then it fareth with them, as it did wyth the Disciples 20 of our blessed Sauiour, he appearing vnto them vpon the Sea, they tooke him for a spirit, and imagining theyr Maister to be a bugge, they grewe verie fearefull of a great benefit.

Such a dazzling it is that afflicteth the eyes of our Re- 25 formers, our Maister Jesus offereth himselfe vnto vs in thys excellent gouernment of the Church, by graue and learned Lorde Bishoppes, but they mistake it to be Satanicall, and tremble and quake at theyr own commoditie.

But to come to anker, if they be of one fayth, and one 30 hope with vs, let them helpe to twine vppe a threefold corde, and become of one hart with vs. Let witte, which is windie, obtaine the lesse, that Charitie, which edifieth, may gaine the more. No doubt but our Sauiour had an especiall care of the vnitie of his Church, both when he made his 35 request vnto his father, that we might be one as the father and he are one, and when he tooke his leaue of his Church

with so kinde a farewell, My peace I giue you, my peace
I leaue vnto you.

If this peace wyll not be had at theyr handes, that haue
so long troubled the Church of GOD among vs, I cast
5 them my Gauntlet; take it vp who dares, *Martin* or any
other, that can drawe out any Quintessence of villanie
beyonde *Martin*, the cause shall not want a Champion.

I haue nowe gallopped the fielde to make choyse of the
ground where my battaile shall be planted. And when
10 I haue sent you the *May-game of Martinisme*, at the next
setting my foote into the styrroppe after it, the signet
shall be giuen, and the fielde fought. Whatsoeuer hath
beene written to any purpose of eyther side, shal be ledde E 1
out into the plaine, the foote-men and horse, small shotte
15 and artilerie shall be placed; euery troupe, wing and
squadron ordered, and the banners displayed. Therwithall
I will make both Armies meete, and the battaile ioyne,
bullet to bullet, staffe to staffe, pyke to pyke, and sworde
to sworde; the blowes dealt, and the breache made vpon
20 the Puritanes shall be discouered, you shall see who be
falne and who be fledde, what Captaines are slaine, and
what Ensignes taken.

It shall be shewen howe like a good Generall the Archb.
of Canterburie hath behaued himselfe with his battle-axe,
25 and howe the braynes of *Tho. Cartwright* flye thys way
and that way, battered and beaten out, euery bone in his
bodye pittifullie broken, and his guttes trayling vpon the
grounde: heere a legge, and there an arme, of his followers
shall be gathered vppe, and the carkases of the deade, like
30 a quarrie of Deare at a generall hunting, hurled vpon
a heape. Wherein my Supplication shall be to the Queenes
most excellent Maiestie at the end, that our Conquerors
returning from the chace, may by vertue of her highnesse
fauour and authoritie, holde still the honour which they
35 haue wonne, and well deserued, in the seruice of GOD,
and the crowne of England.

Therefore as the Reformer hath made proclamation for Armour and Munition, desiring you to help him to a booke of Church discipline, which he sayth was written in the dayes of King *Edward* the sixt, the Authors whereof, he sayth, were M. *Cranmer*, and Sir *John Cheeke*; the like 5 proclamation make I in his behalfe, because mine, peraduenture, will come to more handes then his. Furnish him I pray you; the better he is prouided, the greater honour it will be to ouerthrowe him. I would be glad he should haue it, (if there be any such) and sette downe 10 what he can ere I come foorth againe, that I may drieue E 1^r all before me, and roote out the verie | name of a Puritane from vnder heauen.

In which exployt, as *Berzillai* the Gileadite refused to courte it in his age, resining that place to hys Sunnes, as 15 fitter for younger yeeres; So, I beseeche all our Bishoppes, Doctors, and auncient men, vpon whose siluer heads the Almond-tree hath blossomde, to giue vp this taske to me, and sitte and iudge of my labours. The spirite of the Lord assisting me, opportunitie and other circumstaunces con- 20 curring with it, I trust they shall see me pricke it and praunce it like a *Caualiero* that hath learned to manage Armes. From my Castell and Collours at London ston the 2. of July. *Anno. 1590.*

FINIS.

5 Cheeke. The Q.

PIERCE PENILESSE HIS SVPPPLICATION TO THE DIVELL

Entry in the Stationers' Register:

vij^o Augusti [1592]

Richarde Jones / Entred for his copie vnder th[e h]andes
of the Archbushopp of Canterbury and
master watkins / Pierce Pennilesse his
supplicacon to the Devill vj^d S.
(*S. R.*, ed. Arber, II. 619.)

Editions: (1) Early:

1592 (A). Pierce Penilesse his | Supplication to the |
Diuell. | Describing the ouer-spreading of | *Vice*, and sup-
pression of | *Vertue*. | Pleasantly interlac'd with variable
de-lights: and pathetically intermixt | *with conceipted re-
proofes.* | Written by *Thomas Nash* Gentleman. | [device] |
LONDON, | Imprinted by *Richard Ihones*, dwelling at |
the Signe of the Rose and Crowne, | nere Holburne Bridge. |
1592.

No colophon. Quarto. Leaves numbered from sig. B (1-40),
leaves 33 and 35 are misnumbered 26 and 28.

Collation: A², B-L⁴. (A 1) Title, v. blank. A 2 'The
Printer to the Gentlemen Readers.' Rom. and Ital. B 'Pierce
Penillesse, . . .' B. L., Rom. and Ital. R-T. Pierce Penillesse
his | Supplication to the Diuell.

Signatures in B. L., except A 2, B, which are in Roman. Fourth
leaves not signed.

Catch-words: B 1. *Ah* C 1. (re-)stored D 1. yeeld E 1.
next F 1. thy G 1. (a-)boue H 1. of I 1. *Persie*, K 1.
distant L 1. gesse (All in B. L. except those of B 1 and I 1, which
are in Roman.)

Copy used: That in the Library at Britwell.

1592 (B). Pierce Penilesse | HIS SVPPPLICATION | to the Diuell. | Barbaria grandis habere nihil. | Written by Tho. Nash, Gent. | [device] | LONDON, | Printed by Abell Ieffes, for | Iohn Busbie, 1592.

No colophon. Quarto. Leaves numbered from F 1 to end, (17-40). No errors in the numbering; F 1 should, however, of course be 14, if counted from beginning of text as is usual.

Collation: ¶⁴, A-C⁴, D & E (together one leaf), F-L⁴. (¶ 1) Title, v. blank. ¶ 2 'A priuate Epistle of the Author...' Rom. and Ital. R-T. *The Author to the Printer*. (¶ 3)^v blank. (¶ 4) wanting, probably blank. A 'Pierce Penilesse...' B.L., Rom. and Ital. R-T. Pierce Penilesse his | Supplication to the Diuell.

Sig. B 4 has, by error, the R-T. Pierce Penilesse his. From F 1 onwards the R-T. is larger, the number of lines to the page 37 instead of 38, and the text follows page for page edition A. In general the workmanship of the earlier part is much inferior to that of the later.

Signatures are in B. L., except A, which is in Roman. B 4 and C 4 are signed. L 3 is signed L. iii., the others with Arabic numerals.

Catch-words: ¶ 2 edi-(tion) A 1. And B 1. locks C 1. (youth-)fulnesse D & E. some F 1. the G 1. (a-)boue H 1. of I 1. Persie, K 1. distant L 1. gesse (All in B. L., except those of ¶ 2, A 1 and I 1, which are in Roman. 'the' of sig. F 1 is an error for 'thy'. Other errors are, on B 4^v-C 1. if an [c.w. English-] | drunken bezzle) if an englishman . . . C 3^v-C 4. aymeth all [c.w. at] | all at the heart.)

Copy used: That in the Bodleian Library (Malone, 566).

1592 (C). Pierce Penilesse | HIS SVPPPLICATION | to the Diuell. | Barbaria grandis habere nihil. | Written by Tho. Nash, Gent. | [device] | LONDON, | printed by Abell Ieffes, for | I. B. 1592.

No colophon. Quarto. Not paged.

Collation: One leaf unsigned, ¶ (should be ¶ 2), A-I⁴. (?) Title, v. blank. ¶ (should be ¶ 2) 'A priuate Epistle of the Author...' Rom. and Ital. R-T. *The Author to the Printer*. A 'Pierce Penilesse...' B.L., Rom. and Ital. R-T. Pierce Penilesse his | Supplication to the Diuell.

Signatures are in B. L., except A and G. Leaves C 4, D 4, and E 4 are signed.

Catch-words: C the A i. Vaine B i. encap-(tiued) C i.
 The D i. wher-(to) E i. vp F i. but G i. A H i.
 Hypocrisie I i. heads,

Copy used: That in the British Museum (C. 40. d. 19).

1593. Pierce Penileffe | HIS SVPPPLICATION | to the Diuell. | Barbaria grandis habere nihil. | Written by *Tho. Nash*, Gent. | [device] | LONDON, | printed by Abell Ieffes, for | I. B. 1593.

No colophon. Quarto. Not paged.

Collation: A-I⁴. (A 1) Title, v. blank. A 2. 'A priuate Epistle of the Author...' *Rom. and Ital.* R-T. Pierce Penilesse his (A 3) 'Pierce Penilesse . . .' B. L., *Rom. and Ital.* R-T. Pierce Penilesse his | Supplication to the Diuell.

Signatures are in B. L., except A 2, which is in Roman. All fourth leaves are signed. B 4 is misprinted A 4, H 3 misprinted G 3, and the E of E 4 is broken so as to resemble C.

Catch-words: A 2. wish A 3. And B i. lately C i. (pu-)trified D i. al E i. (beg-)garly F i. treate G i. praises H i. How I i. are

Copy used: That in the British Museum (C. 40. d. 20).

1595. [Head ornament] Pierce Pennileffe his | Supplication to the | Diuell. | Barbaria grandis habere nihil. | Written by *Tho. Nash*, Gent. | [device of N. Ling.] | LONDON | Printed for Nicholas Ling, and are to be sold at | *his shop*, at the Northwest doore of S. Paules. | 1595.

Colophon : LONDON | Imprinted by T. C. for Ni-cholas Ling.

Quarto. Not paged.

Collation: A-I⁴. (A 1) Title, v. blank. A 2 'A priuate Epistle of the Author...' *Rom. and Ital.* R-T. *The Author to the Printer.* A 3 'Pierce Penilesse . . .' B. L., *Rom. and Ital.* R-T. Pierce Penilesse his | Supplication to the Diuell.

Signatures are in B. L., except A 2, A 3, which are in Roman. D 4 is signed; E 4 is signed, in error, G 4. Other fourth leaves unsigned.

Catch-words: A 2. Other A 3. For-(giue) B i. lately, C i. (pu-)trified D i. all E i. (beg-)garly F i. treat G i. praises H i. How I i. are

Copy used: That in the British Museum (96. b. 15. (11).)

(2) *Modern Editions:*

1842 (Coll.¹) Pierce Penniless's Supplication to the Devil. By Thomas Nash. From the first edition of 1592, compared with later impressions. With an introduction and notes, by J. Payne Collier, Esq., F.S.A. London: Reprinted for the Shakespeare Society. 1842. 8vo. pp. xxxii and 108.

From edition A, perhaps from the copy now at Rowfant. It cannot be from the copy at Britwell as Collier specially notes the reading 'Conythus' for 'Cocytus' in the heading of the Supplication, whereas the Britwell copy reads 'Cocytus.' I do not know of any other perfect copy besides these.

1870 (Coll.²) Pierce Penilesse his Supplication to the Diuell, . . . by Tho. Nash, . . . 1592. (Miscellaneous Tracts Temp. Eliz. & Jac. I.)

Edited by J. P. Collier from edition B.

1883-4 (Gro.) The Complete Works of Thomas Nashe . . . edited by A. B. Grosart. Vol. ii, pp. 1-137.

From the copy of B in the Huth Library.

1903. (The present edition.)

The text is based on the copy of C in the British Museum (C. 40. d. 19), collated with copies of the other editions as specified above.

Note on the Editions:

In *Hau with you to Saffron-walden*, 1596, Nashe accuses Gabriel Harvey of using the name of Pierce Penilesse to increase the sale of one of his books, in the following words, 'he [i. e. Harvey] takes a new lesson out of *Plutarch*, in making benefit of his enemie, & borrows my name, and the name of *Piers Pennilesse* (one of my Bookes), which he knew to be most saleable, (passing at the least through the pikes of sixe Impressions) to help his bedred stufte to limpe out of *Powles Churchyard* . . .' (Sig. F 2).

I have, however, not been able to trace more than the five editions enumerated above. Mr. Hazlitt gives an edition dated 1592, as 'K in fours'; there are also slight typographical differences in the title between it and B; as

however he states that a copy is in the Malone collection at the Bodleian Library I suspect that the differences are mere errors of transcription, and that edition **B** is meant. (*Handbook*, p. 413, Nash 7 (b).)

Collier, in his reprint of **A** for the Shakespeare Society, 1842, speaking of the various editions used by him, says 'to any subsequent to 1595, it was not necessary to resort.' I do not know whether he means that he had seen any such editions; I have not been able to trace any later than 1595.

In the same book (p. xiii) Collier refers to **C** as the second edition, not having had at that time an opportunity of collating **B**. He later recognized it to be the third.

The Relation of the texts:

There is, I think, no doubt that the three editions of *Pierce Penilesse* which appeared in 1592 followed one another in the order here assigned to them by referring to them as **A**, **B**, and **C**. Further it seems equally certain that of the four texts **B**, **C**, -93, and -95 each was printed from a copy, corrected or uncorrected, of the edition immediately preceding it. If I can show that the latter contention is correct, the truth of the former follows as a matter of course; it will be simpler therefore to discuss the two questions together.

A study of the collations given would probably be sufficient to show that no other relationship is possible, but as it is shown still more clearly by certain small points which either are not recorded or cannot be sufficiently explained in the collations, I will here call attention to some of the more significant.

(1) From the epistle prefixed to all other editions it is evident that **A** was the first. We find that, from sheet F onwards, **B** corresponds, page for page, with **A**; it can therefore hardly be doubted that this part at least of **B** was printed from a copy of **A**.

(2) On p. 166, l. 1, we have the following readings, *eft-soones* **A**: *eftsoon* **B**, **C**. In **B** however the word ends a line and the

line is two letters short, *es* having evidently dropped out. It is thus probable that **B** was printed from **A** and **C** from **B**.

(3) On p. 166, the first side-note begins as follows: *i. for the freedome of gold* **A**: *I for the . . .* **B**: *Id est, for the* **C**. The reading of **B**, which is perhaps meant for *Ay, for the . . .*, can only be due to the printer misunderstanding the *i. of A*. That of **C** is a deliberate correction which will be referred to later.

(3) The use of hyphens in the various editions is often of use in determining their order, as it will frequently be found that the reason of the omission or addition of a hyphen is that in the copy used by the printer the word was divided at the end of a line, and he had thus no means of knowing whether the hyphen was an integral part of the word or not. Such evidence has of course only cumulative value and is strongest when the position or omission of the hyphen in the later editions is unnatural. I give a few instances:

On p. 172, l. 12, we have *bug-beares and scare-crowes* **A, B**: *bugbeares scar-crowes* **C**, -93. In **B** the word *bug-* ends a line.

On p. 178, l. 22, we have *hus bandmens* **A**: *husband-*
mens (*husband-* ending the line) **B**: *husband-mens* **C**, -93, -95.

On p. 189, l. 21, we have *frantick* **A**: *fran-tick* (divided at the end of a line) **B**: *fran-tick* **C**, -93.

(4) On p. 194, l. 7, *Gentles . . .* begins a new paragraph in **A, B**; but in **B** it begins a page and the preceding line is full. The mistake of running on, as is done in **C** and later editions, is thus rendered a likely one.

(5) On p. 195, l. 5, we have *extend some round liberalitie* **A**: . . . *rome sound . . .* **B**: . . . *some sound . . .* **C**.

(6) On p. 186, l. 17, we have *aymeth all at the heart* **A**: *aymeth all all at the heart* **C**. The repetition of *all* is explained by **B**, in which *aymeth all* are the last words on a page, the catch-word being correctly *at*. The next page however begins *all at*, the compositor having mistaken the word. The printer of **C**, not noticing the catch-word, printed *all all*.

I could give many other instances of the connexion between the texts, which all point in the same direction, but I think these, together with the evidence of the collations, will show sufficiently clearly that the order of the first three texts is as it was stated to be, and that **B** was printed from **A** and **C** from **B**.

There is of course no question as to the order of the two later texts, as these are dated, but I have still to show that -93 was printed from **C**, and -95 from -93.

As regards **C** and -93, it will be sufficient to call attention to the absence of numerous side-notes in -93 which were first omitted in **C**; to the way in which -93 follows **C** even in absurd mistakes such as the word *frantick* already referred to and the word *Com-mon* for *Common* on p. 189, l. 12; and to the general evidence of the collations. The very close correspondence between the two can lead to only one conclusion.

In the case of -93 and -95, there can be no doubt, for the text of the latter follows the former page for page. It is to be noticed that although -95 contains some absurd misprints the proofs seem to have been read with greater care than those of the earlier editions; a considerable number of mistakes, especially in the Latin and in the punctuation, are corrected, though none of these corrections are such as could not be made by a reasonably intelligent printer.

As an instance of the attempt which has been made at correction the following is worth notice, the change being somewhat ingenious :

The confutation of Citizens objections against Players C : The confutation of Citizens against Players -93 : The con-iuration of Citizens against Players -95 (p. 213).

Choice of the copy-text :

In accordance with the general principle of making the last edition which seems to have been corrected by the author the foundation of the text, I have followed **C**.

It was long ago noticed that **A** and **B** presented certain verbal differences which could hardly be due to the vagaries of the printer, while the facts already noticed show sufficiently clearly that it was not printed from an independent manuscript. The following may be noticed as the more important of these variants¹ :

- P. 166, l. 14, *to tel pouertie* **A** : *to tell hunger & pouerty* **B**.
- P. 169, l. 10, *Manibetter* **A** : *Swin-snout* **B**.
- P. 169, l. 17, *delaterie dye-case* **A** : *delaterye excuse* **B**.
- P. 174, l. 2, *gold-finders* **A** : *gold-finners* **B**.
- P. 183, l. 1, *jymiams* **A** : *guegawes* **B**.
- P. 189, l. 7, *hunting* **A** : *to haunt* **B**.
- P. 190, l. 3, *runnes after* **A** : *hath lost* **B**.
- P. 240, l. 3, *Lack-dropper* **A** : *Inck-dropper* **B**.
- P. 240, l. 6, *dislikers* **A** : *dishlickers* **B**.
- P. 241, l. 30, *the most Artists* **A** : *all Artists for the most part* **B**.
- P. 243, l. 29, *musicall* **A** : *misticall* **B**.

A few of these may perhaps be printer's corrections, but others can only have been made by the author or some person appointed by him.

The fact that all these corrections occur either in the sheets before F, or in the last few pages, taken together with the different printing of the first and second portions of the book (see description of edition **B**), perhaps indicate that the second portion of the book was for some reason printed first, and that Nashe's corrections arrived too late for it ; or perhaps it was given to another printer. In this connexion we may note, though it would be unwise to lay

¹ Grosart, who only knew **A** from Collier's reprint, seems to have considered the readings in which it differs from **B** as mere misprints, and no doubt some of them were, but I cannot follow him when he says that 'Lady Swin-snout' was 'misprinted' as 'Ladie Manibetter,' or that 'a paire of shoos and a Canuas-dublet' was 'misprinted' as 'a scholler bread and cheese.' (See Nashe, ed. Grosart, ii, 136.)

It may be well to mention here that in Grosart's observation (as above, p. 137) "guegawes" misprinted "jymiams" (and a nonsensical note on it),' the 'nonsensical note' is Collier's, not, as one would naturally suppose, a side-note in the original.

much stress upon it, that while Nashe in his letter only speaks of the book as 'hasting to the second impression,' the epistles¹ which he declares himself to have written and which he wished to have inserted 'to the later end' could not be used. They would most naturally have come at the end of the 'Supplication,' and it seems not altogether unreasonable to take the letter to imply that this part had been already printed, while if the whole of the book up to the end of the 'Supplication' was ready, 'hasting to the second impression' seems a singularly weak term to employ.

This however is not of much importance in any case; the main point is that **B** evidently represents, at least in part, a corrected text, and one therefore superior to **A**.

But when we come to **C** we find still clearer evidence of correction. I note here a few of the more important changes:

P. 163, l. 14, *angels* **A, B** : *angels at least* **C**.

P. 166, l. 3, *I* **B** : *Id est*, **C**.

P. 167, l. 5, *gnaws* **A, B** : *gnawd* **C**.

P. 170, l. 13, *melancholike course in his gate and countenance, and talke as though* **A** : *melancholy in his gate & countenance, course & talke, as though* **B** : *melancholy in his gate and countenance, and talke as though* **C**. I think that here we have a correction that was misunderstood in **B** and put right in **C**.

P. 171, l. 29, *hard* **A, B** : *harder* **C**.

P. 173, l. 28, *beanes* **A, B** : *bieues* **C**.

P. 174, l. 21, *wil scarce get a Scholler bread and cheese* **A** : *wil scarce get a paire of shoos and a Canuas-dublet* **B** : *will scarce get a scholler a pair of shoos and a Canuas-dublet* **C**. Another case, I think, of the printer of **B** misunderstanding a correction.

P. 177, l. 12, *Princes* **A, B** : *queene mother* **C**.

P. 177, l. 24, *in a difference from all these kindes* **A, B** : *in a different kind from all these* **C**.

¹ These epistles were for some reason or other never printed.

P. 177, l. 28, *a thrumd hat* A, B : *a redde thrumd hat* C.
 P. 178, l. 31, *Byshops, Deanes* A, B : *Bishopricks, Deanries* C.

P. 184, l. 15, *underprop heauen* A, B : *vnder-proppe heauen alone* C.

P. 185, l. 10, *where* A, B : *whence* C.

P. 193, l. 6, *wonderfull* A, B : *rough* C.

P. 193, l. 7, *wings* A, B : *minde* C.

P. 198, l. 13, *lamish* A, B : *lumpish* C.

P. 201, l. 31, *ouerslipt* A, B : *out stript* C (perhaps an error).

P. 201, l. 32, *meate* A, B : *weake* C.

P. 203, l. 33, *foure yeare* A, B : *tweluemonth* C.

P. 205, l. 8, *leapes* A, B : *healthes* C.

P. 212, l. 3, *the eldest* A, B : *idlest* C.

P. 215, l. 13, *those Tragedians admyred before Christ* A, B : *those admyred tragedians that haue liued euer since before Christ* C.

P. 217, l. 4, *Wenches & Anglers* A, B : *witches and iuglers* C (or is this but an ingenious misprint in C?)

P. 228, l. 5, *fiery* A, B : *ayrie* C.

P. 234, l. 8, *lookers on* A, B : *beholders* C (perhaps accidental ; it is a change for the worse).

In a few cases C reverts to A, the reading of B being incorrect :—

P. 163, l. 13, *some two or three hundred angels* A, C : om. *hundred* B.

P. 177, l. 33, *puff vp* A, C : *stuft vp* B.

P. 181, l. 30, *furies forheads* A, C : *furious foreheads* B.
 I cannot but think that C is correct, but -93 and -95 read as B.

Finally in C a very considerable number of side-notes are omitted. In this edition these are placed within square brackets for convenience and in order not to overload the collation-notes.

Though the changes noticed above are, I think, quite

sufficient to show that in **C** we have a deliberately corrected text, I do not mean to say that Nashe saw either of these texts in proof; I imagine that in both cases the printer was supplied with a corrected copy of the preceding edition to work from. That the author was not in London at the time of the publication of **B** is evident from his letter to the printer, and considering that the plague continued with almost equal violence during the following year, and that at Christmas he seems to have been in the Isle of Wight (*Hau^e with you to Saffron-walden*, sig. P 1^v,—it can hardly refer to any other year but this), we may feel almost certain that **C** also appeared during his absence.

The question now arises whether Nashe did not again correct the text for the edition of 1593. It is difficult to feel absolutely certain, but on the whole I am inclined to think not. Corrections there are indeed, but these are few and none of them show clearly the hand of the author; I note the most important :

P. 164, l. 11, *shame* **B**, **C**: *shape* —93 (as **A**).

P. 166, l. 9, *pure* **A**, **B**, **C**: *poore* —93 (an obvious correction).

P. 192, l. 7, *iustice* **B**, **C**: *iuice* —93 (as **A**).

On the other hand —93 contains a large number of misprints which render it generally inferior to **C**.

In the edition of 1595, as I have already remarked, a certain number of small errors in punctuation and in the spelling of Latin words were corrected, but I find no trace of corrections which could not be the work of the printer.

Thus I have come to the conclusion that **C** was the last text corrected by the author. At the same time **C** is often inferior to **A**, being much less carefully printed; indeed in the matter of misprints each text is worse than the one before it, with the possible exception of that of 1595.

There were therefore two alternatives, to print from **A**, adopting the corrections of **C**, or to print from **C**, correcting where necessary from **A**. I have chosen the latter as

being on the whole the more consistent; but bearing in mind Nashe's own statement as to the carelessness with which this book was printed (*Hau^e with you to Saffron-walden*, sig. F 1), and the evident truth of it, I have used somewhat more freedom in restoring to the text from earlier editions words which seem to have been merely accidentally omitted in C, than would have been justifiable if we had had reason to think that the author himself had read the proofs.

Pierce Penilesse his Supplication to the *Diuell.*

Describing the ouer-spreading of
Vice, and suppression of
Vertue.

Pleasantly interlac'd with variable de-
lights: and pathetically intermixt
with conceipted reprooves.

Written by *Thomas Nash Gentleman.*



L O N D O N,
Imprinted by *Richard Ibones*, dwelling at
the Signe of the Rose and Croune,
nere Holburne Bridge.

The Printer to the Gentlemen
*Readers*¹.

GEntlemen :

In the Authours absence, I haue been bold to publish this pleasaunt and wittie Discourse of *Pierce Penilesse his Supplication to the Diuell*: which Title though it may seeme strange and in it selfe somewhat preposterous, yet if you vouchsafe the Reading, you shall finde reason, aswell for the Authours vncouth nomination, as for his vnwonted beginning without Epistle, Proeme, or Dedication : al which 10 he hath inserted conceitedly in the matter; but Ile be no blab to tell you in what place. Bestow the looking, and I doubt not but you shall finde Dedication, Epistle, & Proeme to your liking.

Yours bounden in affection :

15

R. I.

¹ This epistle is found in 92^A alone.

Pierce Penilesse
HIS SVPPPLICATION
to the Diuell.

Barbaria grandis habere nihil.

Written by *Tho. Nasb*, Gent.



LONDON,
printed by Abell Ieffes, for
L.B. 1592

A priuate Epistle of the Author to ¶ *the Printer*¹.

Wherein his full meaning and purpose (in publishing this Booke) is set foorth.

5 FAith I am verie sorrie (Sir) I am thus vnawares betrayed to infamie. You write to me my book is hasting to the second impression: he that hath once broke the Ice of impudence, need not care how deepe he wade in discredit. I confesse it to be a meer toy, not 10 deseruing any iudicial mans view: If it haue found any friends, so it is; you knowe very wel that it was abroad a fortnight ere I knewe of it, & vncorrected and vnfinished it hath offred it selfe to the open scorne of the world. Had you not beene so forward in the republishing of it, 15 you shold haue had certayne Epistles to Orators and Poets, to insert to the later end; As namely, to the Ghost of *Macheuill*, of *Tully*, of *Ouid*, of *Roscius*, of *Pace* the Duke of Norfolks Iester; and lastly, to the Ghost of *Robert Greene*, telling him, what a coyle there is with 20 pamphleting on him after his death. These were prepared for *Pierce Penilesse* first setting foorth, had not the feare of infection detained mee with my Lord in the Countrey.

Now this is that I woulde haue you to do in this second edition; First, cut off that long-tayld Title, and let mee not 25 in the forefront of my Booke, make a tedious Mountebanks Oration to the Reader, when in the whole there is nothing praise-worthie.

I heare say there bee obscure imitators, that goe about to frame a second part to it, and offer it to sell in Paules 30 Church-yard, and elsewhere, as from mee. Let mee request you (as euer you will expect any fauour at my hands) to get some body to write an Epistle before it, ere you set it

¹ This epistle is not found in 92^A.

13 scorne] view 95. 17 Machiuell 95.

to sale againe, importing thus much ; that if any such lewde devise intrude it selfe to their hands, it is a coseanage and plaine knauery of him that sels it to get mony, and that I haue no manner of interest or acquaintance with it. Indeed if my leysure were such as I could wish, I might 5
 ¶ 2^v haps (halfe a yeare hence) write | the retурne of the *Knight of the Post* from hel, with the *Deuils answer to the Supplcation*: but as for a second part of *Pierce Penilesse*, it is a most ridiculous rogery.

Other news I am aduertised of, that a scald triuial lying 10 pamphlet, cald *Greens groats-worth of wit*, is giuen out to be of my doing. God neuer haue care of my soule, but vtterly renoūce me, if the least word or sillable in it proceeded from my pen, or if I were any way priuie to the writing or printing of it. I am growne at length to see 15 into the vanity of the world more than euer I did, and now I condemne my selfe for nothing so much, as playing the dolt in Print. Out vpon it, it is odious, specially in this moralizing age, wherein euery one seeks to shew himselfe a Polititian by mis-interpreting. 20

In one place of my Booke, *Pierce Penilesse* saith but to the Knight of the Post, *I pray how might I call you*, & they say I meant one *Howe*, a Knaue of that trade, that I neuer heard of before.

The Antiquaries are offended without cause, thinking 25 I goe about to detract from that excellent profession, when (God is my witnesse) I reuerence it as much as any of them all, and had no manner of allusion to them that stumble at it. I hope they wil giue me leauе to think there be fooles of that Art as well as of al other ; but to say I vtterly 30 condemne it as an vnfruitfull studie or seeme to despise the excellent qualified partes of it, is a most false and iniurious surmise. There is nothing that if a man list he may not wrest or peruerpt : I cannot forbid anie to thinke

¹⁰ Run on in 93. ¹⁸ especially 92^B. ²¹ New par. 92^B. Run on in 92^C &c. ²⁵ New par. 92^B. Run on in 92^C &c. ³⁰ saye, I 92^B: saye. I 92^C &c.

villainously, *Sed caueat emptor*, Let the interpreter beware ;
for none euer hard me make Allegories of an idle text.
Write who wil against me, but let him look his life be
without scandale : for if he touch me neuer so litle, Ile
5 be as good as the Blacke Booke to him & his kindred.

Beggerly lyes no beggerly wit but can inuent : who
spurneth not at a dead dogge ? but I am of another mettal,
they shall know that I liue as their euil Angel, to haunt
them world without end, if they disquiet me without cause.
10 Farewell, and let me heare from you as soone as it is come
forth. I am the Plagues prisoner in the Country as yet :
if the sicknesse cease before the thirde impression, I wil
come and alter whatsoeuer may be offensiuе to any man,
and bring you the latter ende.

15

Your friend, Tho. Nash. |

6 *New par. 92^B. Run on in 92^C &c.* inuent] euent 95.

Pierce Penilesse his Supplication
to the Diuell.

A 1

H Auing spent many yeeres in studying how to liue,
and liu'de a long time without mony: hauing tired
my youth with follie, and surfetted my minde with
vanitie, I began at length to looke backe to repentaunce,
& addresse my endeouers to prosperitie: But all in vaine,
I sate vp late, and rose earely, contended with the colde,
and conuersed with scarcitie: for all my labours turned
to losse, my vulgar Muse was despised & neglected, my
paines not regarded, or slightly rewarded, and I my selfe
(in prime of my best wit) laid open to pouertie. Where-
vpon (in a malecontent humor) I accused my fortune, raild
on my patrones, bit my pen, rent my papers, and ragde in
all points like a mad man. In which agony tormenting my
selfe a long time, I grew by degrees to a milder discontent:
and pausing a while ouer my standish, I resolued in verse
to paint forth my passion: which best agreeing with the
vaine of my vnrest, I began to complaine in this sort.

20 *Why ist damnation to dispaire and die,
When life is my true happinesse disease?
My soule, my soule, thy safetye makes me flie
The faultie meanes, that might my paine appease.*
Diunes and dying men may talke of hell,
But in my heart, her seueral tormentes dwell.

25 *Ah worthlesse Wit, to traine me to this woe,
Deceitfull Artes, that nourish Discontent:
Ill thriue the Follie that bewitcht me so; |
Vaine thoughts adieu, for now I will repent.*

30 *And yet my wantes perswade me to proceede,
Since none takes pitie of a Scollers neede.*

*Dicite qui
sapitis, non
hac que
scimus in-
tertes: Sed
trepidas
acies, &
fera bella
sequi.*

*Est aliquid
fatale ma-
lum per
verba
leuare.*

*[Ingenio
perij qui
miser ipse
meo.]*

A 1^v

*[Paupertas
impulit
audax vi*

¹ *Dicite 92^C &c.* ² *malum] nialum*
92^{BC}, 93. ³ *non] cum Q. Coll., Gro.* ⁴ *Paupertas*
per. 92^C ⁵ *Ingenio . . .] om. 92^B &c.* ⁶ *Paupertas*
...] om. 92^C &c.

8 *earely] 92^B: eraley 92^C contented 93. 16 milde 92^A.*

*versus
facerem.*]

*Forgiue me, God, although I curse my birth,
And ban the aire, wherein I breath a Wretch :
Since Miserie hath daunted all my mirth,
And I am quite vndone through promise-breach.*

*Pol me
occidistis,
amici.*

*Oh friends, no friends, that then vngently frowne, 5
When changing Fortune casts vs headlong downe.*

*Without redresse complaines my carelesse verse,
And Mydas-eares relent not at my moane :
In some far Land will I my grieves reherse,
Mongst them that will be mou'd when I shall groane. 10
England (adieu) the Soyle that brought me foorth,
Adieu vnkinde, where skill is nothing woorth.*

[*Hei mihi,
quam
paucos haec
mea dicta
mouent.*]

These Rymes thus abruptly set downe, I tost my imaginations a thousand waies, to see if I could finde any meanes to relieuue my estate: But all my thoughts consorted to 15 this conclusion, that the world was vncharitable, & I ordaind to be *miserable. Thereby I grew to consider how many base men that wanted those parts which I had, enjoyed content at will, and had wealth at commaund*: I cald to minde a Cobler, that was worth fие hundred pound, an 20 Hostler that had built a goodly Inne, & might dispende fortie pound yerely by his Land, a Carre-man in a lether pilche, that had whipt out a thousand pound out of his horse taile: and haue I more wit than all these (thought I to my selfe)? am I better borne? am I better brought 25 vp? yea, and better fauored? and yet am I a begger? What is the cause? how am I crost? or whence is this curse?

[*Meritis
expendite
causam.*]

Euen from hence, that men that should employ such as I am, are enamoured of heir own wits, and thinke what 30 euer they do is excellent, though it be neuer so scurie: that Learning (of the ignorant) is rated after the value of

³ *Hei mihi . . .*] om. 92^C &c.
reference-marks are generally from 92^A. They are most irregular in all editions.

⁴ *Fortuna . . .*] om. 92^C &c.

⁵ *Meritis . . .*] om. 92^C &c.

9 grieues 92^A.

13 imagination 92^A.

22 pounds 92^{AB}.

the inke and paper : and a Scriuener better paid for an obligation, than a Scholler for the best Poeme he can make ; that *euery grosse braind Idiot is suffered to come ¹*Scribimus* into print, who if hee set foorth a Pamphlet of the praise ^{inducti} ^{doctique} ^{poemata} ^{passim.} ^{A 2} 5 of Pudding-pricks, or write a Treatise of *Tom Thumme*, or the | exployts of *Vntrusse*; it is bought vp thicke and three-fold, when better things lie dead. How then can we chuse but be needy, when ther are so many Droans amongst vs ? or euer proue rich, that toyle a whole yeare for faire lookes ?

10 Gentle Sir Phillip Sidney, thou knewst what belongd to ^{Cultor et Antistes} a Scholler, thou knewst what paines, what toyle, what ^{doctorum} trauel, conduct to perfection: wel couldst thou giue euery ^{sancete} ^{virorum.} Virtue his encouragement, euery Art his due, euery writer his desert : cause none more vertuous, witty, or learned ¹⁵ than thy selfe.

But thou art dead in thy graue, and hast left too few *Heura.* successors of thy glory, too few to cherish the Sons of the ^{piumt mala} ^{fata bonos.} Muses, or water those budding hopes with their plenty, which thy bounty erst planted.

20 Beleeue me, Gentlemen, for some crosse mishapes haue ^{Fluctibus} taught me experience, ther is not that strict obseruation of ^{in mediis} ^{navigium} honour, which hath beene heeretofore. Men of great calling ^{Palinure} ^{relinquis.} take it of merite, to haue their names eternizde by Poets ; & whatsoever pamphlet or dedication encounters them, they ²⁵ put it vp in their sleevees, and scarce giue him thankes that presents it. Much better is it for those golden Pens to raise such vngratfull Peasants from the Dung-hil of obscuritie, and make them equal in fame to the Worthies of olde, when their doting selfe-loue shall challenge it of ³⁰ dutie, and not onely giue them nothing themselues, but impouerish liberality in others.

This is the lamentable condition of our Times, that men

¹ *Scribimus . . .]* Placed in 93 opposite middle of preceding paragraph, but reference-mark retained here. *inducti . . .]* 92^A, 95 : *indati doctique poemata* 92^B : *iuderi doctiqui poequiata* 92^C : *iuderi doctique poequiata* 93. ² *Cultor . . .]* om. 92^C &c. ³ *bonus* 92^C. ⁴ *Fluctibus . . .]* om. 92^C &c.

⁵ *of Tom Thumme]* om. of 92^C. ¹⁰ *New par.* 92^A. *Run on in* 92^B &c. ²¹ *me]* my 93. ²³ *eternisht* 92^A. ²⁵ *scare* 92^C.

of Arte must seeke almes of Cormorantes, and those that deserue best, be kept vnder by Dunces, who count it a policie to keepe them bare, because they should follow their bookes the better: thinking belike, that, as preferment hath made themselues idle, that were earst painefull in 5 meaner places, so it would likewise slacken the endeouours of those Students that as yet striue to excell in hope of aduaancement. A good policy to suppresse superfluous liberalitie. But, had it beene practised when they were promoted, the Yeomantry of the Realme had beene better 10 to passe than it is, and one Droane should not haue driuen so many Bees from their hony-combes.

I, I, weeble giue loosers leaue to talke: it is no matter what *Sic probo* and his pennilesse companions prate, whilst

A 2^v we haue | the gold in our coffers: this is it that will make 15 a knaue an honest man, and my neighbour *Cramptons* stripling a better Gentleman than his Grandsier. O it is a trim thing when Pride, the sonne, goes before, and Shame, the father, followes after. Such presidents there are in our Common-wealth a great many; not so much of them 20 whome Learning and Industry hath exaltered (whom I prefferre before *Genus & proauos*), as of Carterly vpstarts, that out-face Towne and Country in their Veluets, when Sir *Rowland Russet-coat*, their Dad, goes sagging euery day in his round Gascoynes of whyte cotton, and hath much a doo 25 (poore pennie-father) to keepe his vnthrift elbowes in reparations.

Marry, happy are they (say I) that haue such fathers to worke for them whilst they play; for where other men turne ouer many leaues to get bread and cheese in their 30 old age, and study twentie yeeres to distill golde out of inke, our young maisters doe nothing but deuise how to spend, and aske counsaile of the Wine and Capons how they may quickliest consume their patrimonies. As for me, I liue secure from all such perturbations: for (thankes 35 be to God) I am *vacuus viator*, and care not, though I mee

15 that it is 95.

16 *Cramptons* 92^A

22 8^v] and 92^C, 95.

the Commissioners of *Newmarket-heath* at high midnight, for any Crosses, Images, or Pictures that I carry about me, more than needes.

Than needes (quoth I), nay, I would be ashame of it, if 5 *Opus* and *Vsus* were not knocking at my doore twentie times a weeke when I am not within; the more is the pittie, that such a franke Gentleman as I, should want: but, since the dice do runne so vntowardly on my side, I am partly prouided of a remedie. For whereas those that 10 stand most on their honour, haue shut vp their purses, and shifte vs off with court-holie-bread: and on the other side, a number of hypocriticall hot-spurres, that haue God alwayes in their mouthes, will giue nothing for Gods sake; I haue clapt vp a handsome Supplication to the Diuell, and sent 15 it by a good fellow, that I know will deliuer it.

And because you may beleue me the better, I care not if I acquaint you with the circumstance.

I was informde of late dayes, that a certaine blind Retayler called the Diuell, vsed to lend money vpon 20 pawnes, or any thing, | and would lette one for a neede A 3 haue a thousand poundes vpon a Statute Merchant of his soule: or, if a man plide him thoroughly, would trust him vpon a Bill of his hande, without any more circumstance. Besides, he was noted for a priuy Benefactor to Traitors 25 and Parasites, and to aduance fooles and Asses far sooner than any; to be a greedy pursuer of newes, and so famous a Politician in purchasing, that Hel (which at the beginning was but an obscure Village) is now become a huge Cittie, whereunto all Countries are tributary.

30 These manifest coniectures of Plentie, assembled in one common-place of abilitie, I determined to clawe Auarice by the elbowe, till his full belly gaue mee a full hande, and lette him bloud with my penne (if it might be) in the veyne of liberalitie: and so (in short time) was this Paper-monster, 35 *Pierce Penilesse*, begotten.

11 Court holly-bread 92^A.
throughly 92^{AB}, 93.

15-6 it: and because (*run on*) 95.

22

But written and all, here lies the question; where shal I finde this olde Asse, that I may deliuer it? Masse, that's true: they say the Lawyers haue the Diuell and all; and it is like enough he is playing Ambodexter amongst them. Fie, fie, the Diuell a driuer in Westminster hall? it can 5 neuer be.

Now, I pray, what doe you imagine him to bee? Perhaps you thinke it is not possible he should bee so graue. Oh then you are in an error, for hee is as formall as the best Scriuener of them all. Marry, he doth not vse to 10 weare a night-cap, for his hornes will not let him; and yet I know a hundred as well headed as he, that will make a iolly shift with a Court-cup on their crownes, if the weather be colde.

To proceede with my tale: to Westminster hall I went, 15 and made a search of Enquiry, from the blacke gown to the buckram bagge, if there were any such Sergeant, Bencher, Counsellor, Attorney, or Pettifogger, as *Signior Cornuto Diabolo*, with the good face. But they al (*vna voce*) affirmed, that he was not there: marry, whether he 20 were at the Exchaunge or no, amongst the rich Merchantes, that they could not tell: but it was likelier of the two, that I should meet with him, or heare of him at the least, in those quarters. I faith, and say you so, quoth I? and Ile bestowe a little labour more, but Ile hunt him out. 25

Without more circumstance, thither came I; and, thrusting my | selfe, as the manner is, amongst the confusion of languages, I asked (as before) whether he were there extant or no? But from one to another, *Non noui Dæmonem*, was all the answer I could get. At length (as Fortune 30 serued) I lighted vpon an old, stradling Vsurer, clad in a damaske cassocke, edged with Fox fur, a paire of trunke slops, sagging down like a Shoomakers wallet, and a shorte thrid-bare gown on his backe, fac't with moatheaten budge; vpon his head he wore a filthy, course biggin, and 35

¹ Run on in 93, 95. ¹¹ for hornes 93, 95. ¹⁸ Counsailer 92^{AB}, 93,
95. ³¹ an] on 92^C. ³⁴ thred-bare 95. backt 92^C.

next it a garnish of night-caps, which a sage button-cap, of the forme of a cow-sheard, ouer spread very orderly: a fat chuffe it was, I remember, with a gray beard cut short to the stumps, as though it were grimde, and a huge, 5 woorme-eaten nose, like a cluster of grapes hanging downewardes. Of him I demaunded if hee could tell me any tidings of the partie I sought for.

By my troth, quoth he, stripling, (and then he cought) I saw him not lately, nor know I certainly where he keepes: 10 but thus much I heard by a Broker, a friend of mine, that hath had some dealings with him in his time, that he is at home sicke of the gout, and will not bee spoken withal vnder more than thou art able to giue, some two or three hundred angels at least, if thou hast anie sute to him: 15 & then, parhapes, hele straine curtesie, with his legges in childe-bed, and come forth and talke with thee: but, otherwise, *Non est domi*, hee is busie with *Mammon*, and the prince of the North, how to build vp his kingdome, or sending his spirites abroad to vndermine the maligners of 20 his gouernment.

I, hearing of this cold comfort, tooke my leave of him verie faintly, and like a carelesse malecontent, that knew not which way to turne, retired me to Paules, to seeke my dinner with Duke *Humfrey*; but, when I came there, the 25 olde souldier was not vp. He is long a rising, thought I, but thats all one, for he that hath no mony in his purse, must go dine with sir Iohn Best-betrust, at the signe of the chalk and the Post.

Two hungry turnes had I scarce fetcht in this wast 30 gallery, when I was encountered by a neat pedantical fellow, in forme of a Cittizen; who thrusting himselfe abruptly into my companie, like an Intelligencer, began very earnestly to question with me about the cause of my discontent, or what made me so sad, that seemed too

¹ which] with *92^A*, *95*.

¹¹ dealing *93*, *95*.

¹³ giue, by som *92^B*.

¹⁴ hundred] *om. 92^B*.

^{at least]} *om. 92^{AB}*.

²¹ tooke me leave *92^C*.

²⁵ vp: he *Q.*

²⁶ in his purse] *om. 93*, *95*.

³³ with] *om. 92^B*.

yoong to be acquainted with sorrow. I nothing nice to
 A 4 vn-fold my estate to any whatsoeuer, discourtst to him the
 whole circumstaunce of my care, and what toyle and paines
 I had tooke in searching for him that would not be heard
 of. Why sir (quoth he), had I beene priuie to your purpose 5
 before, I could haue easd you of this trauell ; for if it be
 the diuell you seeke for, know I am his man. I pray, sir,
 how might I call you? A knight of the Post, quoth he,
 for so I am tearmed ; a fellowe that will sweare you any
 thing for twelue pence ; but indeed, I am a spirite in nature 10
 and essence, that take vpon me this humaine shape, onely
 to set men together by the eares, and send soules by
 millions to hell.

Now trust me, a substantiall trade ; but when doe you
 thinke you could send next to your maister ? why, euery 15
 day : for there is not a cormorant that dies, or Cut-purse
 that is hanged, but I dispatch letters by his soule to him,
 and to all my friends in the Low-cuntries : wherefore, if you
 haue any thing that you would haue transported, giue it me,
 and I will see it deliuered. 20

Yes, marry haue I (quoth I) a certaine Supplication here
 vnto your Maister, which you may peruse if it please you.
 With that he opened it, and read as followeth.

11 shape] shame 92^{BC}. 21 Supplication 92^C. 22 vnto] to 92^A.

*Non bene
conducti
vendunt
peruria
testes.*

A 4^v

*To the high and mightie Prince of
Darknesse, Donsell dell Lucifer, King of A-
cheron, Stix, and Phlegeton, Duke of Tartary, marquesse of
Cocytus, and Lord high Regent of Limbo : his distressed
5 Orator, Pierce Penilesse, wisheth encrease of damnati-
on, and malediction eternall, Per Iesum Chri-
stum Dominum nostrum.*

Most humbly sueth vnto your sinfulnes, your single-
soald Orator, *Pierce Penilesse*: that whereas your
10 impious excellence hath had the poore tennement
of his purse any time this halfe yeer for your dauncing
schoole, and he (notwithstanding) hath receiued no peny
nor crosse for farme, according to the vsuall manner*, it *No: Ile be
may please your gracelesse Maiestie to consider of him,
15 and giue order to your seruant Auarice he may be dis- sworne
patched; insomuch as no man heere in London can haue
a dauncing schoole without rent, and his wit and knauerie
cannot be maintained with nothing. Or, if this be not
so plausible to your honourable infernalship, it might
20 seeme good to your helhood to make extent vpon the
soules of a number of vncharitable cormorants, who, hauing
incurd the daunger of a *Præmunire* with medling with
matters that properly concerne your owne person, deserue
no longer to liue (as men) amongst men, but to bee in-
25 corporated in the society of diuels. By which meanes the
mighty controller of fortune and imperious subuerter of
desteny, delicious gold, the poore mans God and Idoll
of Princes (that lookes pale and wanne through long im-
prisonment), might at length be restored to his powfull

¹ No ile 92^{BC}, 93.

* Cocytus] 92^A (*Britwell*): Conytus 92^A (*Rowfant*), 92^B &c. 8 humble
93, 95. 26 and the imperious 92^A.

Monarchie, and eftsoon bee sette at liberty, to helpe his friends that haue neede of him.

I knowe a great sort of good fellowes that would venture

**Id est, for
the free-
dome of
gold.*

farre for his freedom*, and a number of needy Lawyers (who now mourne in threed-bare gowns for his thraldome) 5

that would goe neere to poison his keepers with false Latine, if that might procure his enlargement: but inexorable yron detaines him in the dungeon of the night, so that now (poore creature) hee can neither traffique with B 1 the Mercers and Tailers as he was wont, nor do[minere] 10 in Tauernes as he ought.

*The de-
scription of
Greedines.*

Famine, Lent, and dessolation, sit in Onyon skind iackets before the doore of his indurance, as a *Chorus* in the Tragedy of Hospitality, to tell hunger and pouertie thers no reliefe for them there: and in the inner part of this 15 vgly habitation stands Greedinesse, prepared to deouore all that enter, attyred in a Capouch of written parchment, buttond downe before with Labels of wax, and lined with sheepes fels for warmenes: his Cappe furd with cats skins, after the Muscouie fashion, and all to be tasseld with 20 Angle-hookes, in stead of Aglets, ready to catch hold of all those to whom he shewes any humblenes: for his breeches, they were made of the lists of broad cloaths, which he had by letters pattents assured him and his 25 heyres, to the vtter ouerthrowe of Bowcases and Cushin makers, and bumbasted they were, like Beerebarrels, with statute Marchants and forfeitures. But of al, his shooes were the strangest, which, being nothing els but a couple of crab shels, were toothd at the tooes with two sharp sixpennie nailes, that digd vp euery dunghil they came 30 by for gould, and snarld at the stones as he went in the street, because they were so common for men, women, and

¹ *Id est, for]* 92^C &c: .i. for 92^A: *I* for 92^B.

1 eft-soones 92^A. 9 now] om. 92^B. poore] 93, 95: pure 92^{ABC}.
13-4 in Tragedy 93, 95. 14 hunger and] om. 92^A. 15 there?
and 92^{BC}, 93. parts 95. this] his 95. 25 Cushion 92^{AB}.
27 merchants 95.

children to tred vpon, and he could not deuise how to wrest an odde fine out of any of them.

Thus walkes hee vp and downe all his life time, with an yron crow in his hand in steed of a staffe, and a Sariants 5 Mace in his mouth (which night and day he still gnaws vpon), & either busies himselfe in setting siluer lime twigs to entangle yoong Gentlemen, and casting foorth silken shrapes to catch Woodcocks, or in syuing of Muckhils and shop-dust, whereof he will boult a whole cartload to gaine 10 a bowd Pinne.

On the other side, Dame Niggardize, his wife, in a sedge *The de-*
rug kirtle, that had beene a mat time out of minde, a course *description of*
hempen raile about her shoulders, borrowed of the one end *dame* *Nigardize.*
of a hop-bag, an apron made of Almanackes out of date
15 (such as stand vpon Screens, or on the backside of a dore
in a Chandlers shop), and an old wiues pudding pan on her
head, thrumd with the parings of her nailes, sate barrelling
vp the droppings of hir nose, in steed of oyle, to saime
wooll withall, and would not aduenture to spit without
20 halfe a dozen porrengers at her elbow.

The house (or rather the hell) where these two Earth-wormes | encaptiued this beautifull Substaunce, was vaste, B 1^v
large, strong built, and well furnished, all sauе the Kitchin ;
for that was no bigger then the Cookes roome in a ship,
25 with a little court chimney, about the compasse of a
Parenthesis in proclamation print : then iudge you what
diminutiuue dishes came out of this doues-neast. So like-
wise, of the Buttry ; for whereas in houses of such stately
foundation, that are builte to outward shewe so magnificent,
30 euery Office is answerable to the Hall, which is principall,
there the Buttry was no more but a blind Cole-house vnder
a paire of staires, wherein (vprising and downelyng) was
but one single single kilderkin of small beere, that would
make a man, with a carouse of a spoonefull, runne through
35 an Alphabet of faces. Nor vsd they any glasses or cups

4 Sergeants 95. 5 gnaws] 92^{AB}: gnawd 92^C, 93: gnaweth 95. 20 of
porrengers 92^A. 23 buildt 92^C. 24 than 92^A.

(as other men), but onely little farthing ounce boxes, whereof one of them fild vp with froath (in manner and forme of an Ale-house) was a meales allowance for the whole houshold. It were lamentable to tel what misery the Rattes and Mise endured in this hard world ; how, 5 when all supply of vittualls failed them, they went a Boot-haling one night to Siniор Greedinesse bed-chamber, where finding nothing but emptines and vastitie, they encountered (after long inquisition) with a cod-peece, wel dunged and manured with greace (which my pinch-fart penie-father 10 had retaind from his Bachelorship, vntill the eating of these presents). Vppon that they set, and with a couragious assault rent it cleene away from the breeches, and then carried it in triumph, like a coffin, on their shoulders betwixt them. The verie spiders and dust-weauers, that 15 wont to set vp their loomes in euery window, decayed and vndone through the extreame dearth of the place (that affoorded them no matter to worke on), were constrained to break, against their wills, and goe dwell in the countrey, out of the reach of the broome and the wing : and generally, 20 not a flea nor a cricket that caried any braue minde, that would stay there after he had once tasted the order of their fare. Onely vnfortunate gold (a predestinat slaye to drudges and fooles) lies in endlesse bondage ther amongst them, and may no way be releast, except you send the rot 25 halfe a yeare amongst his keepers, and so make them away with a murrion, one after another.

The complaint of pride.

O, but a far greater enormity raigneth in the hart of the Court : | Pride, the peruerter of all Vertue, sitteth appareled 20 in the Marchants spoiles, and ruine of yoong Citizens ; and 30 scorneth learning, that gaue their vp-start Fathers titles of gentry.

The nature of an upstart.

All malcontent sits the greasie son of a Cloathier, & complaines (like a decaied Earle) of the ruine of ancient houses : whereas the Weauers loomes first framed the 35

¹⁰ pinch-fart penie-father] 92^A : pinch fartpenie-father 92^C. ¹¹ had
'retaind 92^B. ¹²] om. 92^B &c. ¹⁷ (om. 92^B &c. ²⁸ but far 95.

web of his honor, & the lockes of wool, that bushes and brambles haue tooke for toule of insolent sheep, that would needs striue for the wall of a fir bush, haue made him of the tenths of their tar, a Squier of low degree ; and of the 5 collectiōs of their scatterings, a Justice, *Tam Marti quam Mercurio*, of Peace & of Coram. Hee will bee humorous, forsoth, and haue a broode of fashions by himselfe. Sometimes (because Loue commonly weares the liuerey of Wit) hee will be an *Inamorato Poeta*, & sonnet a whole quire 10 of paper in praise of Lady *Swin-snout*, his yeolow fac'd Mistres, & weare a feather of her rainbeaten fan for a fauor, like a fore-horse. Al *Italionato* is his talke, & his spade peake is as sharpe as if he had been a Pioner before the walls of *Roan*. Hee will despise the barbarisme of his 15 own Coūtrey, & tel a whole Legend of lyes of his trauails vnto *Constantinople*. If he be challenged to fight, for his delatorye excuse, hee obiects that it is not the custome of the Spaniard or the Germaine, to looke back to euery dog that barks. You shall see a dapper Iacke, that hath been 20 but ouer at *Deepe*, wring his face round about, as a man would stir vp a mustard pot, & talke English through ^ē teeth, like *Iaques Scabd-hams*, or *Monsieur Mingo de Mous-trap*: when (poore slaye) he hath but dipt his bread in wilde Boares greace, and come home againe ; or been 25 bitten by the shins by a wolfe : and saith, he hath aduentured vpon the Barricadoes of *Gurney* or *Guingan*, and fought with the yong *Guise* hand to hand.

Some thinke to be counted rare Politicians and Statesmen, by being solitary : as who would say, I am a wise 30 man, *Secreta mea mihi : Frustra sapit, qui sibi non sapit* ; and there is no man worthy of my companie or friendship : when, although he goes vngartred like a malecontent Cutpursse, & weares his hat ouer his eies like

¹ politian 92^{ABC}.

1 bushes 92^C. 10 *Swin-snout*] *Manibetter* 92^A. 12 *Italionate* 95.
 15 own] one 95. 16 for] from 92^A. 17 delaterie dye-case 92^A : delaterye
 excuse 92^B. 20 ouer] once 92^A. 22 *Moustrap*] *Monstrapo* 92^A. 29
 would] should 92^A. 31 is] 92^{AB} : om. 92^C &c.

one of the cursed crue, yet cānot his stabbing dagger, or his
 nittie loue-lock, keep him out of the legend of fantastical
 cockscombs. I pray ye, good Moūsier diuel, take some
 B 2^v order, þ the | streetes be not pestered with them so as
 they are. Is it not a pitiful thing that a fellow that eates 5
 not a good meales meat in a weeke, but beggereth his
 belly quite and cleane to make his backe a certaine kind
 of brokerly Gentleman, and nowe and then (once or twice
 in a Tearme) comes to the eighteene pence Ordenary,
 because hee would bee seen amongst Caualiers and braue 10
 courtiers, liuing otherwise all the yeere long with salt
 Butter and Holland cheese in his chamber, should take
 vppe a scornfull melancholy in his gate and countenance,
 and talke as though our common welth were but a mockery
 of gouernment, and our Maiestrates fooles, who wronged 15
 him in not looking into his deserts, not employing him in
 State matters, and that, if more regard were not had of
 him very shortly, the whole Realme should haue a misse
 of him, & he would go (I mary would he) where he should
 be more accounted of? 20

Is it not wonderfull ill prouided, I say, that this disdain-
 full companion is not made one of the fraternity of Fooles,
 to talke before great States, with some olde moth-eaten
 Polititian, of mending high waies, and leading Armies into
 Fraunce? 25

*The
 prodigall
 young
 Master.*

A yoong Heyre or Cockney, that is his Mothers Darling,
 if hee haue playde the waste-good at the Innes of the Court
 or about London, and that neither his Students pension,
 nor his vnthrifts credite, will serue to maintaine his Collidge
 of whores any longer, falles in a quarrelling humor with his 30
 fortune, because she made him not King of the *Indies*, and
 sweares and stares, after ten in the hundredth, that nere
 a such Pesant as his Father or brother shall keepe him
 vnder: hee will to the sea, and teare the gold out of the

² loue lock 92^c. 8 of a brokerly 92^{AB}. 9 in] om. 93, 95. 13-4 melan-
 cholike course in his gate and countenance, and talke 92^A: melancholy in his
 gate & countenance, course & talke, 92^B. 20 more] om. 93, 95. 23
 moth eaten 92^{BC}.

Spaniards throats, but he will haue it, byrlady: And when he comes there, poore soule, hee lyes in brine, in Balist, and is lamentable sicke of the scuruires: his dainty fare is turned to a hungry feast of Dogs & Cats, or Haberdine and poore Iohn at the most, and which is lamentablest of all, that without Mustard.

As a mad Ruffion, on a time, being in daunger of shipwrack by a tempest, and seeing all other at their vowes and praiers, that if it would please God, of his infinite goodnesse, to delyuer them out of that imminent daunger, one woulde abiure this sinne wher vnto he was adicted ; an other, make satisfaction for | that vyolemente he had committed : he, in B 3 a desperate iest, began thus to reconcile his soule to heauen.

O Lord, if it may seeme good to thee to deliuere me from this feare of vntimely death, I vowe before thy Throne and all thy starry Host, neuer to eate Haberdine more whilst I liue.

Well, so it fell out, that the Sky cleared and the tempest ceased, and this carelesse wretch, that made such a mockery of praier, readie to set foote a Land, cryed out : not without Mustard, good Lord, not without Mustard : as though it had been the greatest torment in the world, to haue eaten Haberdine without Mustard. But this by the way, what pannance can be greater for Pride, than to let it swinge in his owne halter ? *Dulce bellum inexpertis* : theres no man loues the smooke of his owne Countrey, that hath not beene syngde in the flame of an other soyle. It is a pleasante thing, ouer a full pot, to read the fable of thirsty *Tantalus* : but a harder matter to digest salt meates at Sea, with stinking water.

An other misery of Pride it is, when men that haue good parts, and beare the name of deepe scholers, cannot be content to participate one faith with all Christendome, but, because they will get a name to their vaineglorie they will

1-2 haue it byrlady : And when 92^{AB} : haue it, byrlady when 92^C, 93 : haue it : byrlady whē 95. 18 New par. Coll., Gro. Run on in Q. 24 then 95 25 *in expertis* 92^C &c. 29 hard 92^{AB}.

set their selfe-loue to studie to inuent new sects of singularitie, thinking to liue when they are dead, by hauing theyr sects called after their names, as *Donatists* of *Donatus*, *Arrians* of *Arrius*, and a number more new faith-founders, that haue made *England* the exchange of Innouations, and 5 almost asmuch confusion of Religion in every Quarter, as there was of tongues at the building of the Tower of *Babell*. Whence, a number that fetch the Articles of their Beleefe out of *Aristotle*, and thinke of heauen and hell as the Heathen Philosophers, take occasion to deride our Ecclesiasticall State, and all Ceremonies of Deuine worship, as bug-beares and scar-crowes, because (like *Herodes* souldiers) we diuide Christs garment amongst vs in so many peeces, and of the vesture of saluation make some of vs Babies and apes coates, others straight trusses and Diuell's breeches : 15 some gally-gascoines or a shipmans hose, like the Anabaptists and adulterous Familists ; others, with the Martinists, a hood with two faces, to hide their hypocrisie : &, to conclude, some, like the Barrowists and Greenwoodians, a garment full of the plague, which is not to be worne 20
 B 3^v before it be new washt. |

Hence Atheists triumph and reioyce, and talke as prophanely of the Bible, as of Beuis of Hampton. I heare say there be Mathematitians abroad that will prooue men before *Adam* ; and they are harboured in high places, who 25

The diuell hath children (as other men), but fewe of them know their owne father.

It is a shame (senior *Belzibub*) that you should suffer your selfe thus to be tearmed a bastard, or not approue to your predestinate children, not only that they haue a father, but that you are he that must owne them. These are but 30 the suburbs of the sinne we haue in hand: I must describe to you a large cittie, wholy inhabited with this damnable enormitie.

¹ mens 92C.

3 theyr] 92AB : om. 92C &c. sect 92A. 10 Ecclesiasticall 92C. 12 bug-beares scar-crowes 92C, 93 : bug-beares, scar-crowes 95. 13 amongst 92A. 17 Martinist 92C &c. 19 Greenwoodians 92B &c. 28 tearmed bastard 93, 95.

In one place let me shew you a base Artificer, that hath *The pride*
no reuenues to boast on but a Needle in his bosome, as *of Arti-*
braue as any Pensioner or Noble man. *ficers.*

In an other corner, Mistris Minx, a Marchants wife, that *The pride*
5 wil eate no Cherries, forsooth, but when they are at twenty *of Mar-*
shillings a pound, that lookes as simperingly as if she were *chants*
besmeard, and iets it as gingerly as if she were dancing the
Canaries: she is so finicall in her speach, as though she
spake nothing but what shee had first sewd ouer before in
10 her Samplers, and the puling accent of her voyce is like
a fained treble, or ones voyce that interprets to the puppets.
What should I tel how squeamish she is in her dyet, what
toyle she puts her poore seruaunts vnto, to make her
looking glasses in the pauement? how she will not go into
15 the fields, to cowre on the greene grasse, but she must haue
a Coatch for her conuoy; and spends halfe a day in prank-
ing her selfe if she be inuited to any strange place? Is not
this the excesse of pride, signior Sathan? Goe too, you
are vnwise, if you make her not a chiefe Saint in your
20 Calender.

The next obiect that encounters my eyes, is some such *The pride*
obscure vpstart gallants, as without desert or seruice, are *of peasants*
raised from the plough to be checkmate with Princes: and *sprung vp*
these I can no better compare than to creatures that are
25 bred *Sine coitu*, as crickets in chimnies; to which I resemble
poore Scullians, that, from turning spit in the chimney
corner, are on the sodaine hoised vp from the Kitchin into
the waiting chamber, or made Barons of the bieues, and
Marquesses of the Marybones: some by corrupt water,
30 as gnats, to which we may liken Brewers, that, by retayling |
filthy *Thames* water, come in few yeares to bee worth fortie B 4
or fiftie thousand pound: others by dead wine, as little
flying wormes; and so the Vintners in like case: others
by slime, as frogs, which may be alluded to Mother *Bunches*
35 slimie ale, that hath made her and some other of her fil-pot

6 shilling 93, 95.

27 on sodaine 93, 95.

15 fields] 92^{AB}: field 92^C &c.28 beanes 92^{AB}.

24 then 95.

29 mary-boanes 92^{AB}.

faulctie so wealthie: others by dirt, as wormes; and so I know many gold-finers and hostlers come vp: some by hearbes, as cankers; and after the same sort our Apothecaries: others by ashes, as *Scarabes*; and how else get our Colliers the pence? Others from the putrified flesh 5 of dead beasts, as Bees of Buls, and Butchers by fli-blown beefe; waspes of horsses, and Hackney-men by selling their lame iades to hunts-men, for carrion.

*Sparagus
a flowre
that never
groweth but
throgh
a mans
dung.*

Yet am I not against it, that these men by their mechanicall trades should come to be *Sparage* Gentlemen and 10 chuff-headed Burghomasters: but that better places should bee possessed by coystrels, and the Coblers crowe, for crying but *Aue Cæsar*, bee more esteemed than rarer birds, that haue warbled sweeter notes vnrewarded. But it is no meruaile: For as Hemlock fatteth Quailes, and Henbane 15 Swine, which to all other is poyson, so some mens vices haue power to aduaunce them, which would subuert any else that should seeke to climbe by them: and it is inough in them, that they can pare their nailes well, to get them a liuing, when as the seauen liberall Sciences and 20 a good leg, will scarce get a scholler a paire of shoos and a Canuas-dublet.

These whelpes of the first Litter of Gentilitie, these Exhalations, drawne vp to the heauen of honor from the dunghill of abiect fortune, haue long been on horseback 25 to come riding to your Diuelship: but, I knowe not howe, like Saint *George*, they are alwaies mounted, but neuer moue. Here they out-face Towne and countrey, and doo nothing but bandie factions with their betters. Theyr big limbes yeelde the Common-wealthe no other seruice 30 but idle sweate, and theyr heads, like rough hewen Gloabes, are fit for nothing but to be the blockhouses of sleepe. *Raynold*, the Fox, may well beare vp his taile in the Lions

¹ faulctie] familie *92^{AB}*.

² gold-finers *92^A*.

¹³ *Cæsar* *92^{BC}*.

²¹⁻² get a Scholler bread and cheese *92^A*: get a paire of shoos and a Canuas-dublet *92^B*: get a scholler a paire of shooes, and Canuas-dublet *93*. ²⁵
iect *92^B*. ³² of] for *92^{AB}*. ³³ *Raynard* *92^B*.

denne, but when he comes abroad, hee is afraid of euery dogge that barkes. What Cur wil not bawle, and be ready to flie in a mans face, when he is set on by his maister, who, if hee bee not by, to encourage him, he casts 5 his taile betwixt his legs, & steales away like a sheepbyter. |

Vlisses was a tall man vnder *Aiax* shield : but by himselfe B 4^v hee would neuer aduenture but in the night. Pride is neuer built but vpon some pillers : and let his supporters faile him neuer so little, you shall finde him very humble 10 in the dust. Wit oftentimes stands in stead of a chiefe arche to vnderproppe it, in souldiers strength, in women beautie.

Drudges, that haue no extraordinarie gifts of body nor *The base
of minde*, filche themselues into some Noble mans seruice, *insinuat-
ing of
drudges,
and their
practise to
aspire.* either by bribes or by flattery, and, when they are there, they so labour it with cap and knee, and plie it with priuie whisperings, that they wring themselues into his good opinion ere he be aware. Then do they vaunt themselues ouer the common multitude, and are readie to outbraue 20 any man that stands by himselfe. Their Lords authoritie is as a rebater to beare vp the Peacocks taile of theyr boasting, and any thing that is said or doone to the vnhandsoming of their ambition is straight wrested to the name of treson. Thus do weedes grow vp whilst no man 25 regards them, and the Ship of Fooles is arriued in the Hauen of Felicitie, whilst the scoutes of Enuie contemne the attempts of any such small Barkes.

But beware you that be great mens Fauorites : let not a seruile, insinuating slauē creepe betwixt your legs into 30 credit with your Lords : for pesants that come out of the colde of pouertie, once cherisht in the bosome of prosperite, will straight forget that euer there was a winter of want, or who gaue them roome to warme them. The sonne of a churle cannot chuse but prooue ingratefull, like his Father. 35 Trust not a villaine that hath beene miserable, and is

17 whispering 93, 95.
26 whilst 92^{AB}, 95.

19 braue 92^{AB}.
34 vngratefull 92^A.

22 and] om. 93, 95.

sodainly growne happie. Vertue ascendeth by degrees of desert vnto dignitie: golde and lust may lead a man a nearer way to promotion: but he that hath neither comlinesse nor coine to commend him, vndoubtedly strides ouer time by stratagems*, if of a mole-hil hee growes to 5 a mountaine in a moment. This is that which I vrge: there is no friendship to be had with him that is resolute to doe or suffer any thing rather than to endure the destinie whereto he was borne: for he will not spare his owne Father or Brother, to make himselfe a Gentleman. 10

*As by
carrying
tales, or
playing the
doutie
Pandor.

*The pride
of the
Spaniard.* *Fraunce, Italy, and Spaine,* are all full of these false hearted *Machiuillions*: but properly Pride is the disease of the Spaniard, who is borne a Bragart in his mothers

C i wombe: for, if he be i but 17 yeeres old, and hath come to the place where a Field was fought (though halfe a yeaire 15 before), he then talks like one of the Giants that made warre against Heauen, and stands vpon his honour, as much as if hee were one of *Augustus Souldiers*, of whom he first instituted the order of Heralds: and let a man sooth him in this vaine of kilcow vanitie, you may com- 20 maund his heart out of his belly, to make you a rasher on the coales, if you will next your heart.

*The pride
of the
Italian.* The Italian is a more cunning proud fellowe, that hides his humour far cleanlier, and indeed seemes to take a pride in humilitie, and will profer a straunger more curtesie than 25 hee meanes to performe. Hee hateth him deadly that takes him at his word: as, for example, if vpon occasion of meeting, he request you to dinner or supper at his house, and that at the first or second intreatie you promise to bee his guest, he will be the mortalst enemie you haue: but 30 if you deny him, he will thinke you haue manners and good bringing vp, and will loue you as his brother: marry, at the third or fourth time you must not refuse him. Of all things he counteth it a mighty disgrace to haue a man

² vnto] into 92^B. 5 mould-hill 95. 7 no] om. 93, 95. 20 this]
 92^{AB}: his 92^C &c. 23 that] and 92^{AB}. 26 hates 95. 27 vpon an
 occasion Coll., Gro. 28 requesteth 95. 33 at] om. 93, 95.

passe iustling by him in hast on a narrewe causey, and aske him no leue, which he neuer reuengeth with lesse then a stab.

The Frenchman (not altered from his owne nature) is *The pride*
 5 wholly compact of deceiuable Courtship, and for the most *of the*
French part, loues none but himselfe and his pleasure: yet though *man.*
 he be the most *Grand Signeur* of them all, he will say,
A vostre seruice & commandemente Mounseur, to the meanest
 10 vassaile he meets. Hee thinkes he doth a great fauour to
 that gentleman or follower of his, to whom he talks sitting
 on his close stoole: and with that fauour (I haue heard) the
 queene mother wanted to grace the Noble men of *France*:
 and a great man of their Nation comming in time past ouer
 15 into *England*, and beeing heere very honourably receiued,
 he in requital of his admirable entertainment, on an euening
 going to the priuie, (as it were to honour extraordinaryly
 our english Lords appointed to attend him) gaue one the
 candle, another his girdle, & another the paper: but they
 20 (not acquainted with this newe kinde of gracing) accom-
 panyng him to the priuy dore, set down the trash, & so
 left him: which he (considering what inestimable kindnes
 he extended to the therin more than vsual) took very
 hainously. |

The most grosse and sencelesse proud dolts (in a different C 1^v
 25 kind from all these) are the Danes; who stand so much *The pride*
of the dane.
 vpon their vnweldy burliboard souldiery, that they account
 of no man that hath not a battle Axe at his girdle to
 hough dogs with, or weares not a cockes feather in a redde
 30 thrumd hat like a caualier: briefly, he is the best foole
 bragart vnder heauen. For besides nature hath lent him
 a flaberkyn face, like one of the foure winds, and cheekes
 that sag like a womans dugs ouer his chin-bone, his apparel
 is so puft vp with bladders of Taffatife, and his back like

3 a] the 92^A. 10 sittting 92^C. 12 queene mother] Princes 92^{AB}.
 13 times 95. 17 attend vpon him 92^{AB}. 21 inestimable] 92^{AB}: om.
 92^C &c. 22 took] tooke it 95. very] 92^{AB}: om. 92^C &c. 24-5 in
 a difference from all these kindes 92^{AB}. 28 redde] om. 92^{AB}. 30 lent] 92^A: left 92^B &c. 33 puft] stuft 92^B.

biese stuft with Parsly, so drawne out with Ribands and deuises, and blisterd with light sarcenet bastings, that you would thinke him nothing but a swarme of Butterflies,

**If you know him not by any of these marks, look on his fingers, & you shall be sure to find half a dozen siluer rings, worth thre pence a peece.*

[The Danes enemies to al learning.]

Thus walkes he vp and downe in his Maiestie, taking a yard of ground at euery step, and stamps on the earth so terrible, as if he ment to knocke vppe a spirite, when (foule drunken bezelle) if an Englishman set his little finger to him, he falles like a hogs-trough that is set on one end. Therfore I am the more vehement people, that naturally hate learning, and all them that loue it: yea, and for they would vtterly roote it out from among them, they haue withdrawn al rewards from the Professors therof. Not *Barbary* it selfe is halfe so barbarous as they are.

15

First, whereas the hope of honor maketh a Souldior in *England*: Byshopricks, Deanries, Prebendaries, and other priuate dignities, animate our Diuines to such excelence: the ciuil Lawyers haue their degrees & consistories of honour by themselues, equal in place with Knights and Esquiers: the common Lawyers (suppose in the beginning they are but husbandmens sons) come in time to be chiefe Fathers of the land, and manie of them not the meanest of the Priuie Counsell.

No rewards amongst them for desert. There, the souldiour may fight himselfe out of his skinne, and do more exploites than he hath doytes in his purse, before from a common mercenary he come to be Corporal of the mouldcheese, or the Lieutenant get a Captainiship. None but the son of a Corporall must be a Corporall, nor any be Captaine, but the lawfull begotten of a Captaines body. Bishopricks, Deanries, Prebendaries, why they know

¹ *on*] upon 95. *the peace* 95.

² *The Danes . . .] om. 92^c &c.*

⁷ drunken bezelle) if an [c.w. English-] | drunken bezelle) if an englishman
^{92^B.} ⁹ one] om. 95. ¹² amongst 92^A. ¹⁶ New par. 92^A. *Run*
on in 92^B &c. ¹⁸ to such 92^B. *exelence*. The ciuil 92^B &c. ²⁰ in
 the place 95. ²² husband-mens 92^c &c. *be the chiefe* 92^A. ²⁷ he
 come] becom 93. ²⁸ mould Cheese 92^A. ³⁰ be a Captaine
 93, 95. ³¹ Byshops, Deanes 92^{AB}.

no such functions: a sort of ragged Ministers they haue, of whom they count as basely as water-bearers. | If any C 2
 of their Noblemen refraine three howers in his life time from drinking, to study the Lawes, hee may perhaps haue
 5 a little more gouernment put into his hands than another: but otherwise, Burgomasters and Gentlemen beare all the
 swaye of both swords, spirituall and temporall. It is death there for anie but a husbandman to marry a husbandmans
 daughter, or a Gentlemans childe to ioyne with any but
 10 the sonne of a Gentleman. Marry this, the King may well banish, but hee cannot put a Gentleman vnto death in any cause whatsoeuer, which makes them stand vpon it so proudly as they doe. For fashion sake some will put their
 children to schoole, but they set them not to it till they
 15 are foureteene yeere olde: so that you shall see a great boy with a beard learne his A B C. and sit weeping vnder the rod, when he is thirtie yeeres old.

I will not stande to inferre what a preuidice it is to *What it is
to make
men labor
without
hope.*
 the thirst of a florishing State, to poyson the growth of
 20 glory by giuing it nought but the puddle water of penury
 to drinke: to clippe the wings of a high towring Faulcon,
 who, wheras she wont in her feathered youthfulness, to
 looke with an amiable eye vpon her gray breast, and her
 speckled side sayles, all sinnowed with siluer quilles, and to
 25 dryue whole Armies of fearefull fowle before her to her
 maisters Table; now she sits sadly on the ground, picking
 of wormes, mourning the cruetie of those vngentleman-
 like idle hands, that dismembred the beauty of her trayne.

You all knowe that man (insomuch as hee is the Image
 30 of God) delighteth in honour and worship, and all holy
 Writ warrantes that delight, so it bee not derogatory to
 any part of Gods owne worship: now, take away that
 delight, a discontented idlenesse ouertakes him. For his

¹ men] om. 92^{AB}.

2 count] account 92^A. 3 these] the 92^A. 10 Gentleman, marry this
 the 92^B &c. 11 vnto] to 92^A. 12 cause] case 95. 17 yeare 93, 95.
 21 touring 92^A: soring 93, 95. 23 an] om. 92^A. 28 dismembreth 92^{AB}.
 gray] gay 95. 25 foules 92^{AB}.

hire, any handycraft man, be he Carpenter, Ioyner, or Painter, wil ploddingly do his day labor: but to adde credit and fame to his workmanship, or to winne a maistery to himselfe aboue all other, hee will make a further assay in his trade than euer hitherto he did; hee will haue 5 a thousand florishes, which before he never thought vpon, and in one day ridde more out of hand, than earst hee did in ten: So in Armes, so in Artes; if titles of fame and glory be proposed to forward minds, or that soueraigntie (whose sweetnes they haue not yet felt) be set in likely 10 view for them to sore too, they will make a ladder of cord C 2^v of the | links of their braines, but they will fasten their handes, as wel as their eies, on the imaginatiue blisse which they already enioy by admiration. Experience reproves me for a foole, for dilating on so manifest a case. 15

The Danes are bursten-bellied sots, that are to bee confuted with nothing but Tankards or quart pots, and *Ouid* might as well haue read his verses to the *Getes* that vnderstood him not, as a man talk reason to them that haue no eares but their mouths, nor sense but of that which they 20 swallowe downe their throates. God so loue me, as I loue the quicke-witted Italians, and therefore loue them the more, because they mortally detest this surley swinish Generation.

I need not fetch colours from other countries to paint the vglie visage of Pride, since her picture is set forth in so 25 many painted faces here at home. What drugs, what sorceries, what oiles, what waters, what oyntments, doe our curious Dames vse to inlarge their withered* beauties. Their lips are as lauishly red, as if they vsed to kisse an okerman every morning, and their cheeks suger-candied and cherry 30 blusht so sweetly, after the *colour of a newe Lord Mayors postes, as if the pageant of their wedlocke holiday were

[* Withered flowers
need much
watering.]

[* And will
endure all
wethers as
wel as
they.]

¹ And that . . .] om. 92^C &c. ² Withered . . .] om. 92^C &c. Reference-marks in the margin, to this and the ten notes following, are only found in 92^A. ³ And will . . .] om. 92^C &c.

3 or winne 95. 5 hee] om. 95. 9 that any soueraigntie 92^A. 12 of
of their 92^{BC}. 27 oiles] toyles 95. 28 their] our 92^B. beauties 92^{BC}.
29 a moker man 93: a mokerman 95.

harde at the doore: so that if a Painter were to drawe any [^{*They} of their *Counterfets on a Table, he needes no more but wet ^{may well be called} his pencil, and dab it on their cheekes, and he shall haue ^{counter-fautes,} since the vermillion and white enough to furnish out his worke,^{beauty they imitate is} though he leauie his tar-boxe at home behind him. Wise ^{counter-feyted.]} was that sin-washing Poet that made the Ballet of Blue starch and poaking stickes, for indeed the *lawne of licentiousnesse hath consumed all the wheat of hospitalitie. It [^{*Marke these two letter-leaping Metaphors,} is said, Laurence Lucifer, that you went vp and downe London crying then like a lanterne & candle man. I meruaile no Laundresse would giue you the washing and starching of your face for your labour, for God knowes it is as blacke as the *blacke Prince.

It is suspected you haue beene a great *Tobacco taker in your youth, which causeth it to come so to passe: but Dame Nature, your nurse, was partly in fault, else she might haue remedied it. *She should haue noynted your face ouernight with *Lac virginis*, which baking vpon it in bed till the morning, she might haue pild off the scale like the skin of a custard, and making a pos-set of vergis mixt with the oyle of Tartary and Camphire, bathde it in it a quarter of an houre, and you had been as faire as the floure of the frying pan. I warrant we haue old hacksters in this great Grandmother of Corporations, Madame *Troy-taker.* nouant, that haue not backbited any of their neighbours with the *tooth of envy this twentie yeare, in the wrinkles of whose face ye may hide false dice, and play at cherry-pit in the dint of their cheekes: yet these aged mothers of iniquitie will haue their deformities newe plaistred ouer, and weare nosegayes of yeolow haire on their furies foreheads, when age hath written, Hoe God, be here, on their

¹ They may . . .] om. 92^C &c. ² Marke . . .] om. 92^C &c. ³ So saieith . . .] om. 92^C &c. ⁴ The diuell . . .] om. 92^C &c. ⁵ A medicin . . .]

om. 92^C &c. ⁶ He that . . .] om. 92^C &c.

² on a Table] 92^{AB}: on Table 92^C &c. ⁶ Balled 93: Ballad 95.
¹⁰ then] there 92^B. ¹¹ Laundresse 92^C. ¹⁹ pild] puld 95. ²¹ Camphire, and bathde 92^{AB}. ²³ flower 95. ²⁹ iniquitie] antiquitie 95.
³⁰ furies] 92^{AC}: furious 92^B, 93, 95.

bald burnt parchment pates. Pish, pish, what talke you of old age or balde pates? men and women that haue gone vnder the *South pole, must lay off their furde night-caps in spight of their teeth, and become yeomen of the Vineger bottle: a close periwig hides all the sinnes of an olde 5 whore-master; but *Cucullus non facit Monachum*: *tis not their newe bonnets will keepe them from the old boan-ach. Ware when a mans sins are written on his ey-browes, and that there is not a haire bredth betwixt them and the falling sicknes. The times are daungerous, and this is an 10 yron age, or rather no yron age, for swordes and bucklers goe to pawne a pace in Long-Lane: but a tinne age; for tinne and pewter are more esteemed than Latine. You that bee wise, despise it, abhorre it, neglect it; for what shoulde a man care for gold that cannot get it? 15

*The commendation
of Anti-
quaries.
Laudamus
veteres, sed
nostris
utimur
annis.*

An Antiquarie is an honest man, for hee had rather scrape a peece of copper out of the durt, than a crowne out of *Ploydens* standish. I know many wise Gentlemen of this mustie vocation, who, out of loue with the times wherein they liue, fall a retayling of *Alexanders* stirrops, because (in 20 veritie) there is not suche a strong peece of stretching leather made now adayes, nor yron so well tempred for any money. They will blow their nose in a boxe, & say it is the spettle that *Diogenes* spet in ones face: who being inuited to dinner to his house, that was neat & braue in all points 25 as might be deuised, and the grunting Dogge, somewhat troubled with the rheume (by meanes of his long fasting and staying for dinner more than wont), spet full in his Hosts face: and beeing askt the reason of it, said it was the foulest place he could spie out in all his house. Let 30 C 3^v their Mistresse (or some other woman) | give them a feather of her fanne for her fauour, and if one aske them what it is, they make answer, a plume of the Phenix, whereof there is

¹ *Alias . . .] om. 92^C &c.* ² *Translated . . .] om. 92^C &c.* ³ *noster 95.*

⁶ *worne-master 93 (broken n), 95.* ²⁴ *spit 93, 95.* ²⁷ *his] om. 93, 95.*
²⁸ *wont] want 92^C.* ²⁹ *Hosts] 92^A: Hostes 92^B: Hostesse 92^C &c.*
³⁰ *could 92^C.* ³² *for a fauour 92^A.*

but one in all the whole world. A thousand guegawes and toyes haue they in their chambers, which they heape vp together, with infinite expence, and are made beleeue of them that sell them, that they are rare and pretious thinges, 5 when they haue gathered them vpon some dunghill, or rakte them out of the kennell by chance. I know one sold an old rope with foure knots on it for foure pound, in that he gaue it out, it was the length and breadth of Christs Tombe. Let a Tinker take a peece of brasse worth a halfe 10 penie, and set strange stamps on it, and I warrant he may make it more worth to him of some fantasticall foole, than all the kettels that euer he mended in his life. This is the disease of our newfangled humorists, that know not what to doe with their welth. It argueth a very rusty witte, so to 15 doate on worme-eaten Elde.

*The complaint of
Enuie.*

O Vt vpon it, how long is Pride a dressing her selfe? Enuie, awake, for thou must appear before *Nicalao Maleuolo*, great Muster maister of hell. Marke you this slie mate, how smoothly hee lookes? The Poets were ill 20 aduised, that fained him to be a leane, gag-toothd Beldam, with hollow eyes, pale cheeks, and snakie heire: for he is not onely a man, but a iolly lusty old Gentleman, that will winke, and laugh, and ieast drily, as if he were the honestest of a thousand: and I warrant you shall not heare a foule 25 word come from him in a yeare. I wil not contradict it, but the Dog may worry a sheepe in the dark, & thrust his necke into the collar of clemency & pity when he hath don: as who shold say, God forgiue him, hee was a sleepe in the shambles, when the innocent was done to death. 30 But openly, Enuie sets a ciuil, fatherly countenance vpon it, & hath not so much as a drop of bloud in his face, to attaint him of murther. I thought it expedient, in this my Supplication, to place it next to Pride: for it is his adopted

¹ *Enuie] pride- 93: Pride 95.*

1 guegawes] 92^{BC}; iymiams 92^A: gurgawes 93: gugawes 95. 8 Christ 93.
20 gag toothd 92^C. 21 haire 92^{AB}, 95: heyre 93. 33 next vnto Pride 92^A.

sonne. And hence comes it, that proud men repine at others prosperitie, and greeue that any should be great but themselues. *Mens cuiusque, is est quisque;* it is a Proverbe that is as hoary as Dutch-butter. If a man wil go to the diuell, he may go to the diuell: there are a thousand iugling 5 tricks to be vsed at hey passe come aloft; & the world hath cords enough to trus vp a calf that stands in ons way. |

C 4 Enui is a Crocodile that weepes when he kils, and fights with none but he feedes on. This is the nature of this quick-sighted monster, he will endure any paynes to 10 endamage another, waste his body with vnder-taking exploytes that would require tenne mens strengths, rather than any should get a penny but himselfe, bleare his eyes to stand in his neighbours light, and to conclude, like *Atlas* vnder-proppe heauen alone, rather than any should be in 15 heauen that hee likte not of, or come vnto heauen by any other meanes but by him.

You goodman wandrer about the world, how doe yee spende your time, that you do not rid vs of these pestilent members? you are vnworthy to haue an office, if you 20 can execute it no better. Behold another enemy of mankind, besides thy selfe, exalted in the South, *Philip* of Spaine; who not content to bee the God of gold, and chiefest commaunder of content that Europe affords, but now he doth nothing but thirst after humane bloud, when 25 his foot is on the thresholde of the graue: and as a Wolfe, beeing about to deuoure a horse, doth balist his belly with earth, that hee may hang the heauier vpon him, and then forcibly flyes in his face, neuer leauing his hold till he hath eaten him vp; so this woluish vnnaturall vsurper, being 30 about to deuoure all Christendom by inuasion, doth cram his treasures with Indian earth to make his malice more forcible, and then flyes in the bosome of *Fraunce* and *Belgia*, neuer withdrawing his forces (as the Wolfe his fastning) till

⁴ Dutch-bnitter 92^C. ⁸ Enui c.w. ¹¹ another] other 95. ¹⁵
alone] om. 92^{AB}. ¹⁶ like not off 93, 95. ^{vnto]} to 92^A. ¹⁸ yee]
you 95. ²³ contented 92^{AB}. ²⁹ forcible 95. ³⁴ fastning] fast-
ing 93, 95.

*Philip of
Spaine as
great an
enemy to
mankind
as the
diuell.*

he hath devoured their welfare, & made the war-wasted carcases of both kingdomes a pray for his tyranny. Onely poore *England* giues him bread for his cake, and holdes him out at the armes end. His Armadoes (^t like a high wood ouer-shadowed the shrubs of our low ships) fled from the breath of our Cannons, as vapors before the Sun, or as the Elephant flies from the Ram, or the Sea-whale from the noyse of parched bones. The winds, enuying that the aire should be dimmed with such a *Chaos* of wodden clouds, raised vp high bulwarks of bellowing waues, whence Death shot at their disordred Nauy: and the Rockes with their ouer-hanging iawes eate vp all the fragments of oake that they left. So perisht our foes; so the Heauens did fight for vs. *Præterit Hippomenes, resonant spectacula 15 plausu.*

I do not doubt (Doctor Diuell) but you were present in this | action, or passion rather, and helpt to bore holes C 4^v in ships to make them sinke faster; and rence out Galley-foistes with salt water, that stunk like fustie barrels with ²⁰ their Maisters feare. It will be a good while ere you doe as much for the King, as you did for his subiects. I would haue ye perswade an Armie of goutie Vsurers to go to Sea vpon a boon voyage: trie if you can tempt Enuy to embrake himself in the mal'aduenture, and leaue troubling ²⁵ the streeme, that Poets and good fellowes may drinke, and Souldiers may sing *Placebo*, that haue murmured so long at the waters of strife.

But that wil neuer be: for so long as Pride, Riot, and whoredome are the companions of yoong Courtiers, they ³⁰ wil alwayes bee hungry, and ready to bite at euery Dog that hath a boane giuen him beside themselues. Iesu, what secret grudge and rancor raignes amongst them, one being ready to dispaire of himself, if he see the Prince but giue

⁷ Sea Whale 92^C. ¹⁰ whence] where 92^{AB}. ¹⁵ *plausis* 92^B. ¹⁹
stanke 92^A. with] wit 92^C. ²⁰ ere] hre 92^C. ²² Vsurers] vsurpers 95.
²⁶ may] om. 92^A. ²⁸ so] as 92^A. ³⁰ euery] anie 92^A. ³¹
besides 95.

his fellow a faire looke, or to die for griefe if he be put down in brauery neuer so little. Yet this custome haue our false harts fetcht from other countries, that they will sweare and protest loue, where they hate deadly, and smile on him most kindly, whose subuersion in soule they haue 5 vowed. *Fraus sublimi regnat in aula.* Tis rare to finde a true frend in Kings Pallaces: Either thou must be so miserable that thou fall into the hands of scornful pitie, or thou canst not escape the sting of enuy. In one thought assemble the famous men of all ages, and tel me which of 10 them all sate in the sun-shine of his soueraignes grace, or wext great of low beginnings, but he was spiteblasted, heaued at, & ill spoken of: and that of those that bare them most countenaunce. But were enuy nougnt but wordes, it might seeme to bee onely womens sinne: but it 15 hath a lewde mate hanging on his sleeue, called Murther, a sterne fellowe, that (like a Spanyard in fight) aymeth all at the heart: hee hath more shapes than *Proteus*, and will shifte himselfe, vpon any occasion of reuengement, into a mans dish, his drinke, his apparell, his ringes, his stirrops, 20 his nosegay.

*Murder,
the com-
panion of
Enuie.*

**Italie, the storehouse of all murderous inuentiones.* O Italie,* the Academie of man-slaughter, the sporting place of murther, the Apothecary-shop of poyson for all Nations: how many kind of weapons hast thou inuented for malice? Suppose I loue a mans wife, whose husband 25

D i yet liues, and cannot enjoy | her for his iealous ouer-look-
ing: Physicke, or rather the art of murther (as it may be
vsed), will lend one a Medicine which shall make him away,
in the nature of that disease he is most subiect to, whether
in the space of a yeare, a moneth, halfe a yeare, or what 30
tract of time you will, more or lesse.

In Rome the Papal Chayre is washt, euery fие yeare
at the furthest, with this oyle of Aconitum. I pray God,
the King of Spayne feasted not our holy father *Sextus*,

I for] in 95. 11 his] this 95. 12 waxt 93, 95. 17 all [c.w. at] |
all at 92^B: all all at 92^C. 18 then 95. 23 Apothecary shop 92^{BC}: Apoti-
caries shop 93, 95. 33 with the Oyle Aconitum 93, 95.

that was last, with such conserue of Henbane, for it was credibly reported hee loued him not, & this that is now, is a God made with his owne hands ; as it may appear by the *Pasquil* that was set vp of him, in manner of a note, *The Pas-quil that was made upon this last Pope.*
 5 presently after his election, *Sol, Re, Me, Fa.* that is to say, *Solus Rex me facit* ; onely the K. of Spaine made me Pope. I am no Chronicler from our owne Countrey, but if probable suspition might bee heard vpon his oath, I *As Cardinal Wolsey, for example.*
 10 that on the earth did sway it as Monarchs.

Is it your will and pleasure (noble *Lants-graue of Lymbo*) to let vs haue lesse carousing to your health in poison, fewer vnder hand conspirings, or open quarrels executed onely in wordes, as they are in the world now a dayes :
 15 & if men wil needs carouse, conspire, and quarrell, that they may make Ruffians hall of Hell : and there bandy balles of Brimstone at one anothers head, and not trouble our peaceable Paradise with their priuate hurliburlies about strumpets, where no weapon (as in *Adams Paradise*) should
 20 bee named : but onely the Angell of prouidence stand with a fiery sword at the gate, to keep out our enemies ?

A Perturbation of mind (like vnto Enuy) is Wrath, which looketh farre lower than the former : For, whereas Enuie cannot be saide to bee, but in respect of our Super-
 25 riours, Wrath respecteth no degrees nor persons, but is equally armed agaynst all that offend him. A hare-braind little Dwarfe it is, with a swarth visage, that hath his hart at his tongues end, if he be contrarie, and will be
 30 sure to do no right nor take no wrong. If hee bee a Judge or a Iustice (as some-times the Lyon comes to giue sentence against the Lamb), then he sweares by nothing but by Saint Tyborne, & makes Newgate a Nowne Substantiuie, | where-
Newgate, a common D 1^v

² *Wholsey 92C.*

4 in a manner 92^A. 6 King 92^A, 93, 95. 9 would not bee 92^C &c.
 to it] om. 95. Monarchies 92^{AB}. 11 It is 93, 95. 13 vnder-hand
 92^{AB} : vnder had 95. 15 & if] as if 92^{AB}. 18 our] your 95. 23
 then 95. 26-7 hare-braine 93, 95. 32 wher- c.w.

*name for
al prisons,
as Homo is
a common
name for a
man or a
woman.* to all his other words are but Adiectuies. Lightly, hee is an olde man (for those yeares are most wayward and teatish), yet be he neuer so old or so foward, since Auarice like-wise is a fellow vice of those fraile yeares, wee must set one extreame to striue with another, and alay the anger ⁵ of oppression by the sweet incense of a newe purse of angels: or the doting Planet may haue such predominance in these wicked Elders of *Israel*, that, if you send your wife, or some other female, to plead for you, shee may get your pardon vpon promise of better acquaintance. But ¹⁰ whist, these are the workes of darknesse, and may not be talkt of in the day time: Fury is a heate or fire, & must bee quencht with maides water.

*A tale of a
wise
Justice.* Amongst other cholericke wise Iustices, he was one, that hauing a play presented before him and his Towne- ¹⁵ ship by *Tarlton* and the rest of his fellowes, her Maiesties seruants, and they were now entring into their first meriment (as they call it), the people began exceedingly to laugh, when *Tarlton* first peopt out his head. Whereat the Iustice, not a little moued, and seeing with his beckes ²⁰ and nods hee could not make them cease, he went with his staffe, and beat them round about vnmercifully on the bare pates, in that they, being but Farmers & poore countrey Hyndes, would presume to laugh at the Queenes men, and make no more account of her cloath in his ²⁵ presence.

*The nature
of the Irish
man.* The causes conducting vnto wrath are as diuers as the actions of a mans life. Some will take on like a mad man, if they see a pigge come to the table. *Sotericus*, the Surgeon, was cholericke at the sight of Sturgeon. The ³⁰ Irishman will drawe his dagger, and bee ready to kill and slay, if one breake winde in his company: and so some of our English men that are Souldiers, if one giue them the lye: but these are light matters, whereof *Pierce* complaineth not. .

Be aduertised, Master *Os fætidum*, Bedle of the Blackesmithes, that Lawyers cannot deuise which way in the world to begge, they are so troubled with brabblements and sutes euery Tearme, of Yeomen and Gentlemen that 5 fall out for nothing. If *John a Nokes* his henne doo but leap into *Elizabeth de Gappes* close, shee will neuer leauue to haunt her husband, till he bring it to a *Nisi prius*. One while, the Parson sueth the | parishioneer for bringing home D 2 his tythes: another while, the Parishioner sueth the Parson 10 for not takinge away his Tythes in time.

I heard a tale of a Butcher, who drijing two Calues *A merry tale of a Butcher & his Calues.* ouer a Common, that were coupled together by the neckes with an Oken With, in the way wher they shold passe, there lay a poore, leane Mare, with a galde backe; to whome 15 they comming (as chance fell out), one of one side, and the other of the other, smelling on her (as their manner is), the midst of the With that was betwixt their necks rubd her and grated her on the sore backe, that shee started and rose vp, and hung them both on her backe as a beame; which 20 being but a rough plaister to her raw vlcer, shee ran away with them (as she were frantick) into the Fens, where the Butcher could not follow them, and drownde both her selfe and them in a Quagmyre. Now the owner of the Mare is in lawe with the Butcher for the losse of his Mare, 25 and the Butcher enterchangably endites him for his Calues.

I pray ye, Timothy Tempter, bee an Arbitrator beetwixt them, and couple them both by the neckes (as the Calues were) and carry them to Hel on your backe, and then, I hope, they wyll be quiet.

30 The chiefe spur vnto wrath is Drunkennes, which, as the touch of an Ashen bough causeth a gidinesse in the Vipers head, and the Batte, lightly strooke with the leafe of a Tree, loseth his remembrance: so they, being but lightly sprinckled with the iuyce of the Hop, become

⁴ sutes in euery 95. ⁵ If *John . . .] New par. 92^c &c.* ⁷ to haunt] 92^{BC}: hunting 92^A: to hunt 93, 95. ¹² Com-mon 92^c, 93. ¹⁶ their] the 95. ²¹ fran-tick 92^c, 93. ²³⁻⁴ this Mare 95. ²⁶ bee twixt 92^c.
³¹ Ashenbough 92^c.

sencelesse, and haue their reason strooken blind, as soone as euer the Cup scaleth the Fortresse of their Nose. Then run their words at random, like a dog that hath lost his master, and are vppe with this man and that man, and generally inuay against al men, but those that keep a wet corner for a friend, and will not thinke scorne to drinke with a good fellowe and a Souldiour: and so long do they practise this vaine on their Ale-bench, that when they are sober, they cannot leauue it. There be those that get their liuing al the yeere long, by nothing but rayling.

10

*A tale of
one Fryer
Charles,
a foule
mouthde
knaue.*

Not farre from *Chester*, I knewe an odde foule mouthde knaue, called *Charles* the Fryer, that had a face so parboyled with mens spitting on it, and a backe so often knighted in *Bridewell*, that it was impossible for any

D 2^v shame or punishment to terri-fie him from ill speaking.

Noblemen he would likен to more vgly things than himself: some to After my hartie commendations, with a dash ouer the head: others, to guilded chines of beefe, or a shoomaker sweating, when he puls on a shoo: another to an old verse in *Cato*, *Ad consilium ne accesseris, antequam voceris*: another, to a Spanish Codpisſe: another, that his face was not yet finiſht, with ſuch like innumerable absurd illuſions: yea, what was he in the Court but he had a comparison in ſtead of a Capcase to put him in. Vpon a time, being challenged at his owne weapon in a priuate Chamber, 25 by a great personage (rayling, I meane), he ſo far outſtript him in vilainous words, and ouerbandied him in bitter tearmes, that the name of ſport could not perswade him patience, nor containe his furie in any degrees of ieast, but needs hee muſt wreake himſelfe vpon him: neither 30 would a common reuenge ſuffice him, his diſpleaſure was ſo infinite (and, it may be, common reuenges he tooke before, as far as the whipcord would ſtretch, vpon like prouokements) wherefore he cauſed his men to take him,

3 hath lost] runnes after 92^A. 8 vaine] traine 92^A. 10 their] the 92^A.
9 those] them 92^A. 11 Farre 92^{BC}. 17 my most hearty 92^{AB}. 18 other
93, 95. 23 illuſions] alluſions 92^A. 27 vilainous 92^C, 93. 29 nor] or 92^A.

and brickt him vp in a narrow chimney, that was *Neque maior neque minor corpore locato*; where he fed him for fifteene dayes with bread and water through a hole, letting him sleep standing if he would, for lye or sit he could not, 5 and then he let him out to see if he could learne to rule his tongue any better.

It is a disparagement to those that haue any true sparke of Gentilitie, to be noted of the whole world so to delight in detracting, that they should keepe a venemous toothd
10 Cur, and feed him with the crums that fall from their table, to do nothing but bite euery one by the shins that passe by. If they will needes be merry, let them haue a foole and not a knaue to disport them, and seeke some other to bestow their almes on, than such an impudent begger.

15 As there be those that rayle at all men, so there be those that raile at all Arts, as *Cornelius Agrippa, De vanitate scientiarum*, and a Treatise that I haue seene in dispraise of learning, where he saith, it is the corrupter of the simple, the schoolemaister of sin, the storehouse of
20 treacherie, the reuiuer of vices, and mother of cowardize ; alledging many examples, how there was neuer man egre- giously euill but he was a Scholler: that when the | vse D 3 of letters was first inuented, the Golden World ceased,
Facinusque inuasit mortales: how studie dooth effeminate
25 a man, dim his sight, weaken his braine, and ingender a thousand diseases. Small learning would serue to confute so manifest a scandale, and I imagine all men, like my selfe, so vnmoueable resolued of the excellencie thereof, that I will not, by the vnderpropping of confutation, seeme
30 to giue the idle witted aduersarye so much encouragement, as hee should surmize his superficiall arguments had shaken the foundation of it: against which hee could neuer haue lifted his penne if her selfe had not helpt him to hurte her selfe.

1 bricke 92^{AB} : prickt 93, 95.
them 92^A. 16 those] them 92^A. 31 surmize] surprize 95.

10 their] his 92^{AB}. 24 inuasit 92^C. 32 against 92^A.
15 those]
25 weaken] weak 95.

*An invective against
enemies of
Poetrie.*

With the enemies of Poetrie, I care not if I haue a bout, and those are they that tearme our best Writers but babling Ballat-makers, holding them fantasticall fooles that haue wit, but cannot tell how to vse it. I my selfe haue beeene so censured among some dul-headed *Diunes: who 5 deeme it no more cunning to wryte an exquisite Poem, than to preach pure *Caluin*, or distill the iuice of a Commentary in a quarter Sermon. Prooue it when you will, you slowe spirited Saturnists, that haue nothing but the pilfries of your penne, to pollish an exhortation withall: 10 no eloquence but Tautologies, to tie the eares of your Auditorye vnto you: no inuention but heere is to bee noted, I stoale this note out of *Beza* or *Marlorat*: no wit to mooue, no passion to vrge, but onelye an ordinarie forme of preaching, blowne vp by vse of often hearing and 15 speaking; and you shall finde there goes more exquisite paines and puritie of witte, to the writing of one such rare Poem as *Rosamond*, than to a hundred of your dunsticall *Sermons.

**Such Sermons I
meane as
our sec-
tuaries
preach in
ditches,
and other
Con-
uenticles,
when they
leape from
the Coblers
stal to their
pulpits.*

[The vse of
Poetry.]

Should we (as you) borrowe all out of others, and gather 20 nothing of our selues, our names should bee baffuld on euerie Booke-sellers Stall, and not a Chandlers Mustard-pot but would wipe his mouthe with our wast paper. Newe Herrings, new, wee must crye, euery time wee make our selues publique, or else we shall bee christened with 25 a hundred newe tytles of Idiotisme. Nor is Poetrie an Arte whereof there is no vse in a mans whole lyfe, but to describe discontented thoughts and youthfull desires: for there is no studie, but it dooth illustrate and beautifie.

D 3^v How admirablie shine those Di-juines aboue the common 30 mediocritie, that haue tasted the sweete springs of *Perrassus*?

Encomium H. Smithi. Siluer tongu'd *Smith*, whose well tun'd stile hath made

¹ against the enemies 92^{AB}. ⁴ The vse . . .] om. 92^C &c.

¹ enemy 93, 95. about 95. 3 Ballad makers 93: Ballade makers 95.
⁷ iuice] 92^A, 93, 95: iustice 92^{BC}. 8 in] into 92^A. 17 paines]
²¹ names 93, 95. 21 should] would 92^A. 23 with our] without 93.
²⁶ is] 92^{AB}: in 92^C &c. 30 aboue] 92^{AB}: about 92^C, 93.

thy death the generall teares of the Muses, queintlie couldst thou devise heauenly Ditties to *Apolloes Lute*, and teach stately verse to trip it as smoothly as if *Ouid* and thou had but one soule. Hence alone did it proceed, that 5 thou wert such a plausible pulpit man, that before thou entredst into the rough waies of Theologie, thou refinedst, preparedst, and purifidest thy minde with sweete Poetrie. If a simple mans censure may be admitted to speake in such an open Theater of opinions, I neuer saw abundant 10 reading better mixt with delight, or sentences which no man can challenge of prophanc affectation sounding more melodious to the eare or piercing more deepe to the heart.

To them that demaund, what fruites the Poets of our time bring forth, or wherein they are able to proue them-
 15 selues necessary to the state? Thus I answer. First and formost, they haue cleansed our language from barbarisme and made the vulgar sort here in *London* (which is the fountaine whose riuers flowe round about *England*) to aspire to a richer puritie of speach, than is communicated 20 with the Comminaltie of any Nation vnder heauen. The vertuous by their praises they encourage to be more vertuous, to vicious men they are as infernall hags, to haunt their ghosts with eternall infamie after death. The Souldier, in hope to haue his high deeds celebrated by 25 their pens, despiseth a whole Armie of perills, and acteth wonders exceeding all humane conjecture. Those that care neither for God nor the diuell, by their quills are kept in awe. *Multi famam* (saith one) *pauci conscientiam* *Plin. lib. 3.*
verentur.

30 Let God see what he will, they would be loath to haue the shame of the world. What age will not praise immortal *Sir Phillip Sidney*, whom noble *Salustius* (that thrice

* *Plin. . . .] Opposite 'Let God' in 92^c &c.*

1 thy Muses 95. 4 alone] along 92^{AB}. 5 were 95. man: before
 92^{AB}. 6 enterest 95. rough] wonderfull 92^{AB}. 6-7 refines, preparest
 95. 7 minde] wings 92^{AB}. 9 such] om. 93, 95. 11 affection
 95. 14 proue] approue 92^A. 16 for most 92^{BC}. 19 then 95.
 27 keep 92^C. 30 see] say 93, 95.

singuler french Poet) hath famoused, together with *Sir Nicholas Bacon*, Lord keeper, & merry sir *Thomas Moore*, for the chiefe pillers of our english speech. Not so much but *Chaucers host*, *Baly* in Southwarke, & his wife of Bath, he keeps such a stirre with, in his *Canterbury tales*, shalbe 5 talkt of whilst the Bath is vsde, or there be euer a bad house in Southwark.

The dis-praise of late chroni-graphers.

D 4 Gentles, it is not your lay Chro[ni]graphers, that write of nothing but of Mayors and Sheriefs, and the deare yeere, and the great Frost, that can endowe your names with 10 neuer dated glory: for they want the wings of choise words to fly to heauen, which we haue: they cannot sweeten a discourse, or wrest admiration from men reading, as we can, reporting the meanest accident. Poetry is the hunny of all flowers, the quintessence of all Sciences, the Marrowe 15 of Witte, and the very Phrase of Angels: how much better is it then to haue an eligant Lawier to plead ones cause, than a stutting Townsman, that loseth himselfe in his tale, and doth nothing but make legs: so much it is better for a Nobleman, or Gentleman, to haue his honours story 20 related, and his deedes emblazond, by a Poet than a Citizen.

Alas poore latinlesse Authors, they are so simple they know not what they doe; They no sooner spy a new Ballad, and his name to it that compilde it: but they put 25 him in for one of the learned men of our time. I maruell how the Masterlesse men, that set vp their bills in Paules for seruices, & such as paste vp their papers on euery post, for Arithmetique and writing Schooles, scape eternity amongst them; I beleue both they and the Knight 30 Marshals men, that naile vp *Mandates* at the Court gate, for annoying the Pallace with filth or making water, if they set their names to the writing, will shortly make vp the number of the learned men of our time, and be as famous

I singuler 9^aBC. 4 Southworke 9^aC. 5 with, in] within 9^a, 9^a.
 7 Southwork 9^aC. 8 Run on in 9^aC &c. it is] its 9^a. 12 sweetē 9^a:
 sweetē 9^a. 19 is it better 9^aA: it is the better 9^a. 31 gat 9^aBC.

as the rest. For my part, I do challenge no praise of learning to my selfe, yet haue I worne a gowne in the Vniuersitie, and so hath *caret tempus non habet moribus*: but this I dare presume, that, if any *Mecænas* binde me 5 to him by his bountyn, or extend some round liberalitie to mee worth the speaking of, I will doo him as much honour as any Poet of my beardlesse yeeres shall in *England*. Not that I am so confident what I can doe, but that I attribute so much to my thankfull minde aboue others, 10 which I am perswaded would enable me to worke myracles.

On the contrary side, if I bee euill intreated, or sent away with a Flea in mine eare, let him looke that I will raile on him soundly: not for an houre or a day, whiles the iniury is fresh in my memory, but in some elaborate, 15 pollished Poem, which I will leauue to the world when I am dead, to be a liuing Image | to all ages, of his beggerly D 4^v parsimony and ignoble illiberaltie: and let him not (whatsoeuer he be) measure the weight of my words by this booke, where I write *Quicquid in buccam venerit*, as fast 20 as my hand can trot; but I haue tearmes (if I be vext) laid in steepe in *Aquafortis*, & Gunpowder, that shall rattle through the Skyes, and make an Earthquake in a Pesants eares. Put case (since I am not yet out of the Theame *I wold tell* of Wrath) that some tired Iade belonging to the Presse, *you in* what book 25 whom I neuer wronged in my life, hath named me ex- it is, but I pressely in Print (as I will not do him), and accused me am afraid of want of learning, vpbraiding me for reuiuing, in an make his epistle of mine, the reuerent memory of Sir Thomas Moore, *bookes sell in* his latter Sir John Cheeke, Doctor Watson, Doctor Haddon, Doctor daies, 30 Carre, Maister Ascham, as if they were no meate but for which his Maisterships mouth, or none but some such as the son hath lien of a ropemaker were worthy to mention them. To shewe dead, and how I can raile, thus would I begin to raile on him. Thou great losse that hadst thy hood turnd ouer thy eares when thou wert to the Printer.

⁵ extēd his some 95. some round] 92^A: rome sound 92^B: some sound
92^C &c. 17 liberality 93, 95. 18 measure 92^C. 19 *Quic quid* 92^C.
21 steepe] sleepe 92^{BC}. 26 accuse 92^C &c. 28 reuerend 92^{AB}.

a Batchelor, for abusing of *Aristotle*, & setting him vp on the Schoole gates, painted with Asses eares on his head: is it any discredit for me, thou great *babound*, thou *Pigmie Braggart*, thou Pamphleter of nothing but **Peans*, to bee censured by thee, that hast scorned the Prince of Philo-⁵ sopers; thou, that in thy Dialogues soldst Huny for a halpeny, and the choycest Writers extant for cues a peece, that camest to the Logicke Schooles when thou wert a Fresh-man, and wristt phrases; off with thy gowne and vntrusse, for I meane to lash thee mightily. Thou hast ¹⁰ a Brother, hast thou not, student in Almanackes? Go too, Ile stand to it, he fatherd one of thy bastards (a booke I meane) which, being of thy begetting, was set forth vnder his name.

Gentlemen, I am sure you haue hearde of a ridiculous ¹⁵ Asse that many yeares since sold lyes by the great, and wrote an absurd *Astrologicall Discourse* of the terrible Coniunction of *Saturne* and *Jupiter*, wherein (as if hee had lately cast the Heauens water, or beene at the anatomizing of the Skies intrailes in Surgeons hall) hee prophecieth of ²⁰ such strange wonders to ensue from stars destemperature and the vnusuall adultrie of Planets, as none but he that is Bawd to those celestiall bodies could euer discry. What expectation there was of it both in towne | and country, the amazement of those times may testifie: and the rather, ²⁵

**Which at home twas, was worth halters at I haue wrote, let me for euer hereafter loose the credit least, for if of my Astronomie. Well, so it happened, that he happened not to be a man of his word; his Astronomie broke his day* ³⁰

¹ *vp in] vpon* *92^C &c.*

Iopean *92^C &c.*

¹ *vpon* *92^C &c.* ³ *baboune* *92^{AB}.* ⁴ *Peants* *92^C &c.* ⁵ *that] thou*
93, 95. ⁶ *in] om. 93, 95.* ⁷ *exant* *92^{BC}.* ⁸ *cam'st* *92^{AB}.* ⁹ *Fresh-*
man] frenchman *95.* ¹⁰ *meane] mind* *93, 95.* ¹¹ *Almanackes, go too*
92^{ABC}: *Alminacks go too 93:* *Almanaks? go too 95.* ¹² *he] 92^{AB}:* *om. 92^C &c.*
16 lyes] *92^{AB}:* *lyers* *92^C &c.* ¹⁷ *obsurd* *92^C.* ¹⁸ *Coniunctions*
95. ²¹ *such] om. 93, 95.* ²² *vnusuall]* *93, 95:* *vnuseall* *92^C:* *vniversall* *92^{AB}.*
23 *Baudy* *93:* *Baudy* *95.* *those]* *the 93, 95.* ²⁶ *creditid* *92^{AB}.* ²⁷ *tearmes]*
wordes *93, 95.*

with his creditors, and *Saturne* and *Jupiter* prou'd honester deceived.
 men then all the World tooke them for: whereupon the his father
 poore Prognosticator was ready to runne himselfe through was a
 with his *Jacobs* Staffe, and cast himselfe headlong from the Rope-
 5 top of a Globe (as a mountaine) and breake his necke. maker.
 The whole Vniuersitie hyst at him, *Tarlton* at the Theator made iests of him, and *Elderton* consumd his ale-crammed nose to nothing, in bearbayting him with whole bundles
 10 of balets. Would you, in likely reason, gesse it were possible for any shame-swolne toad to haue the spet-proofe
 face to out liue this disgrace? It is, deare brethren, *Viuit,*
imo viuit; and, which is more, he is a Vicar.

Poor Slaue, I pitie thee that thou hadst no more grace
 but to come in my way. Why, could not you haue sate
 15 quiet at home, and writ Catechismes, but you must be
 comparing me to *Martin*? and exclayme against me for
 reckoning vp the high Schollers of worthy memory?
Iupiter ingenii præbet sua numina vatum, saith *Ouid*;
Seque celebrari quolibet ore sinit. Which if it be so, I hope
 20 I am *Aliquis*, and those men, *quos honoris causa nominaui*,
 are not greater than gods. Me thinks I see thee stand
 quiuering and quaking, and euen now lift vp thy hands to
 heauen, as thanking God my choler is somewhat asswag'd:
 but thou art deceiued, for how euer I let fall my stile
 25 a little, to talke in reason with thee that hast none, I do
 not meane to let thee scape so.

Thou hast wronged one for my sake (whom for the name
 I must loue) T. N., the Maister Butler of Pembroke Hall,
 a farre better Scholler than thy selfe (in my iudgement)
 30 and one that sheweth more discretion and gouernment in
 setting vp a sise of Bread, than thou in all thy whole booke.
 Why man, thinke no scorne of him, for he hath held thee
 vp a hundred times, whiles the Deane hath giuen thee

² than 92^{AB}. ⁷ ale-crammed 92^C &c. ⁸ bearebaiting of him 95.
 11 outliue 92^A: out-liue 93, 95. ¹⁴ not you] you not 93, 95. ¹⁵ write
 92^C, 93. ¹⁷ the] om. 93, 95. ¹⁸ *præbat* 92^{BC}: *probat* 93, 95.
 27 wronge done 93. ²⁸ Penbrooke 93, 95. ²⁹ a] and 93, 95. ³² no]
 not 93, 95.

correction, and thou hast capt and kneed him (when thou wert hungrie) for a chipping. But thatts nothing, for hadst
 E^r thou neuer beene beholding to him, nor holden I vp by
 him, he hath a Beard that is a better Gentleman than all
 thy whole body, and a graue countenance, like *Cato*, able 5
 to make thee run out of thy wits for feare, if he looke
 sternly vpon thee. I haue reade ouer thy Sheepish dis-
 course of the Lambe of GOD and his enemies, and entreated
 my patience to be good to thee whilst I reade: but for all
 that I could doe with my selfe, (as I am sure I may doe as 10
 much as another man) I could not refraine, but bequeath it
 to the Priuie, leafe by leafe as I read it, it was so vgly,
 dorbellicall, and lumpish. Monstrous, monstrous, and palp-
 able, not to bee spoken of in a Christian Congregation:
 thou hast skumd ouer the Schoolemen, and of the froth of 15
 theyr folly made a dish of diuinite Brewesse, which the
 dogges will not eate. If the Printer haue any great deal-
 ings with thee,hee were best to get a priuiledge betimes,
Ad imprimendum solum, forbidding all other to sell waste
 paper but himselfe, or else he will bee in a wofull taking. 20
 His owne
 words.
 The Lambe of God make thee a wiser Bell-weather then
 thou art, for else I doubt thou wilt be driuen to leauie all,
 and fall to thy fathers occupation, which is, to goe and
 make a rope to hang thy selfe. *Neque enim Lex æquior*
vlla est, quam necis artifices arte perire sua: and so I leauie 25
 thee till a better opportunity, to bee tormented world with-
 out end of our Poets and Writers about London, whome
 thou hast called piperlye Make-playes and Make-bates: not
 doubting but hee also whom thou tearmest the vaine *Pap-*
hatchet will haue a flurt at thee one day: all ioyntly driu- 30
 ing thee to this issue, that thou shalt bee constrained to go
 to the chiese Beame of thy Benifice, and there beginning
 a lamentable speech with *cur scripsi, cur perii*, end with
prauum praua decent, iuuat inconcessa voluptas, and so with

9 read it 92^{AB}.18 to] om. 92^A.

perii 93.

13 lumpish] lamish 92^{AB}.21 than 92^A.34 prauum] 92^{AB}: parauum 92^C, 93.

16 Brewish 93, 95.

22 for] 92^A: or 92^B &c.

33 cū

50] om. 92^{AB}.

a trice, trusse vp thy life in the string of thy Sancebell. So be it, pray Pen, Incke, and paper, on their knees, that they may not bee troubled with thee any more.

Redeo ad vos, mei Auditores, haue I not an indifferent
 5 pritty vayne in Spurgalling an Asse? if you knew how extemporall it were at this instant, and with what hast it is writ, you would say so. But I would not haue you thinke that all this that is set downe heere is in good earnest, for then you goe by S. *Gyles*, the wrong way to *Westminster*:
 10 but onely to shewe howe for a neede I could rayle, if I were throughly fyred. So ho, *Honiger* | *Hammon*, where are E 2
 you all this while, I cannot be acquainted with you? Tell me, what doe you thinke of the case? am I subiect to the sinne of Wrath I write against, or no, in whetting my penne
 15 on this blocke? I know you would faine haue it so, but it shall not choose but be otherwise for this once. Come on, let vs turne ouer a new leafe, and heare what Gluttonie can say for her selfe, for Wrath hath spet his poyson, and full platters doe well after extreame purging.

20 **T**He Romaine Emperours that succeeded *Augustus* were *The complaint of Gluttonie.*
 exceedingly giuen to this horrible vice, whereof some of them would feed on nothing but the tongues of Phesants and Nightingales: other would spend as much at one banquet, as a kings reuenues came to in a yeare; whose
 25 excesse I would decypher at large, but that a new Laureat hath sau'd me the labor: who, for a man that stands vpon paines and not wit, hath performd as much as any Storie dresser may doo, that sets a new English nap on an old Latine Apothegs. It is enough for me to licke dishes heere
 30 at home, though I feed not mine eyes at any of the *Romane* feasts. Much good doe it you, Maister *Dives*, heere in *London*: for you are he my pen meanes to dine withall. *Miserere mei*, what a fat churle it is? Why, he hath

¹ *The complaint . . .] om. 95.*

1 life] self 95. 2 their] thy 95. 3 may] way 92C. 4 an] a 92ABC.
 7 writhen 93, 95. 10 for need 93, 95. 11 thoroughly 95. 16 but be] to be 95.
 29 enongh 92C.

a belly as big as the round Church in *Cambridge*, a face as huge as the whole bodie of a base viall, and legs that, if they were hollow, a man might keepe a mill in eyther of them. *Experto crede Roberto*, there is no mast like a Marchants table. *Bona fide*, it is a great misture, that we haue not men 5 swine as well as beasts, for then we should haue porke that hath no more bones than a pudding, and a side of bacon that you might lay vnder your head in stead of a bolster.

Nature in England is but plaine Dame, but in Spaine and Italy (because they haue more vse of her than we) she is dubbed a Ladie.

It is not for nothing that other Countries, whom we vpbraide with Drunkennesse, call vs bursten-bellied Gluttons: 10 for wee make our greedie paunches powdring tubs of beefe, and eat more meat at one meale, than the Spaniard or Italian in a moneth. Good thrifty mē, they draw out a dinner with sallets, like a *Swart-rutters* sute, and make *Madona Nature* their best Caterer. We must haue our 15 Tables furnisht like Poulters stalls, or as though we were to victual *Noahs Arke* again (wherin there was al sorts of liuing creatures that euer were), or els the good-wife

E 2^v wil not | open her mouth to bid one welcome. A stranger that should come to one of our *Magnificoes* houses, when 20 dinner were set on the boord, and he not yet set, would thinke the goodman of the house were a Haberdasher of Wilde-fowle, or a Merchant venturer of daintie meate, that sels commodities of good cheere by the great, and hath Factors in *Arabia, Turkey, Egipt, and Barbarie*, to prouide 25 him of straunge Birdes, *China Mustard*, and odde patterns to make Custards by.

Lord, what a coyle haue we, with this Course and that course, remoouing this dish higher, setting another lower, and taking awaye the third. A Generall might in lesse 30 space remooue his Campe, than they stand disposing of their gluttonie. And whereto tends all this gurmandise, but to giue sleepe grosse humors to feede on, to corrupt the braine, and make it vnapt and vnweldie for any thing?

2 viall] voiall 95. 4 credo 92^C. 7 then 95. 13 month 92^{AB}.
 16 Poultres 92^{AB}. 17 wherin] whereas 95. 23 Merchant ventarer 93 :
 Merchant venture 95. 26 Chiua 92^C &c. 30 taking] making 95.

The *Romane* Censors, if they lighted vpon a fat corpulent man, they straight tooke away his horsse, and constrained him to goe a foote : positively concluding his carkasse was so puft vp with gluttonie or idlenesse. If we had such 5 horse-takers amongst vs, and that surfit-swolne Churles, who now ride on their foot-cloathes, might be constrained to carrie their flesh budgets from place to place on foote, the price of velvet and cloath would fall with their belies, and the gentle craft (*alias* the red herrings kinsmen) get 10 more and drinke lesse. *Plenus venter nil agit libenter, & plures gula occidit quam gladius.* It is as desperate a peece of seruice to sleepe vpon a full stomacke, as it is to serue in face of the bullet : a man is but his breath, and that may as well be stopt by putting too much in his mouth at once, 15 as running on the mouth of the cannon. That is vereified of vs, which *Horace* writes of an outragious eater in his time, *Quicquid quæsierat ventri donabat auaro*, Whatsoeuer he could rap or rend, he confiscated to his couetous gut. Nay, we are such flesh-eating Saracens, that chast fish 20 may not content vs, but we delight in the murder of innocent mutton, in the vnpluming of pullerie, and quartering of Calues and Oxen. It is horrible and detestable, no godly Fishmonger that can digest it. Report (which *A rare wittie iest of Doctor Watson.*) puts me in memorie 25 of a notable iest I heard long a goe of Doctor *Watson*, *Watson.* verye conducible to the reprooфе of these | fleshly minded E₃

**Belials.* He beeing at supper on a fasting or fish night at **Or rather Belly-als,* least, with a great number of his friends and acquaintance, because all there chanced to be in the company an outlandish Doctor, their minde 30 who, when all other fell to such victuals (agreeing to the is on their time) as were before them, he ouerslipt them, and there belly.

being one ioynt of flesh on the table for such as had weake stomackes, fell freshly to it. After that hunger (hafse con-

¹ *Watsons* 92^{AB}.

7 budges 95. 9 kinsman 93, 95. 19 flesh-eaten 95. 21 pul-
ttery 93, 95. 24 clepe 92^{AB}. 31 he ouerslipt them] 92^{AB}: he out stript
them 92^C: om. 93, 95. 32 weake] meat 92^{AB}.

quered) had restored him to the vse of his speach, for his excuse he said to his friend that brought him thither, *Profecto, Domine, ego sum malissimus piscator*, meaning by *piscator*, a Fishman; (which is a liberty, as also *malissimus*, that outlandish men in theyr familiar talke do 5 challenge, at least vse aboue vs). *At tu es bonissimus carnifex*, quoth Doctor Watson, retorting very merily his owne licentious figures vpon him. So of vs may it be said, we are *Malissimi piscatores*, but *bonissimi carnifices*. I would English the iest, for the edification of the temporalitie, but that it is not so good in English as in Latine: and though it were as good, it would not conuert clubs and clowted shoone from the flesh pots of *Egipt*, to the Prouant of the Lowe-countries, for they had rather (with the Seruингman) put vp a Supplication to the Parliament house, 15 that they might haue a yard of pudding for a penie, than desire (with the Baker) there might bee three ounces of bread sold for a halfe penie.

The moderation of Fryer Alfonso, K. Phillips Confessor.

Alphonsus, King *Phillips* Confessor, that came ouer with him to *England*, was such a moderate man in his dyet, 20 that hee would feed but once a day, and at that time he would feed so slenderly and sparingly, as scarce serued to keepe life and soule together. One night, importunately inuited to a solemne banquet, for fashion sake he sate downe among the rest, but by no entreatie could be 25 drawne to eate any thing: at length, fruite beeing set on the boord, he reacht an apple out of the dish, and put it in his pocket, which one marking, that sat right ouer against him, askt him, *Domine, cur es solitus in crastinum?* *Sir, why are you carefull for the morrow?* Whereto he 30 answered most soberly, *Imo hoc facio, mi amice, vt ne sim solitus in crastinum.* *No, I doo it, my friend, that I may not be carefull for the morrow:* as though his appetite

¹ *K.] king 92^{AB}.*

5-6 talke do challenge] talked to challeng 93. 8 figures] singures 93.
15-6 Seruингmen 95. 21 at] om. 93, 95. 23 together, one 92^B &c,
27 an] one 93, 95. 30 the morrow] to morrowe 95.

were a whole day contented with so little as an apple, and that it were enough to paye the morrowes tribute to Nature. |

Rare, and worthy to be registered to all posterities, is the E 3^v
 5 Countie Molines (sometime the Prince of Parmaes Com- *The strang
alteration
of the
Countie
Molines,
the Prince
of Parmae
Com-
panion.*
 panion) altered course of life, who being a man that liued in as great pompe and delicacie as was possible for a man to doo, and one that wanted nothing but a kingdome that his heart could desire. Vpon a day entering into a deepe
 10 melancholy by himselfe, hee fell into a discoursie con-
 sideration what this world was, how vaine and transitory the pleasures thereof, and how manie times he had offended God by surfetting, gluttony, drunkennes, pride, whoredome, and such like, and how hard it was for him that liu'd in
 15 that prosperitie that he did, not to bee entangled with those pleasures: whereupon he presently resolu'd, twixt God and his owne conscience, to forsake it and al his allurements, and betake hime to the seuerest forme of life vsed in their state. And with that cald all his Souldiers
 20 and acquaintance together, and, making knownen his intent vnto them, he distributed his liuing and possessions (which were infinite) amongst the poorest of them: and hauing not left himselfe the worth of one farthing vnder heauen, betooke him to the most beggerly new erected Order of
 25 the Fryer Capuchines. Their Institution is, that they shall possesse nothing whatsoeuer of their owne, more than the cloathes on their backes, continually to go bare foote, weare haire shirts, and lie vpon the hard bords, winter and summer time; they must haue no meate, nor
 30 aske any but what is giuen them voluntarilly, nor must they lay vp any from meale to meale, but giue it to the poore, or els it is a great penaltie. In this seuere humilitie liues this devout Countie, and hath done this tweluentonth, submitting himselfe to all the base drudgery of the house,

12 pleasure 93, 95. 18 the] his 92^B. 24 newerected 92^C. 27 then
 93, 95. to] om. 92^C. 31 any from] 92^A, 95: from any 92^{BC}, 93. 33
 tweluentonth] foure yeare 92^{AB}.

as fetching water, making cleane the rest of their chambers, insomuch as he is the *Junior* of the Order. O what a notable rebuke were his honourable Lowlines to succeeding pride, if this prostrate spirit of his were not the seruaunt of Superstition; or hee mispent not his good works on 5 a wrong Faith.

Let but our English belly-gods punish their pursie bodies with this strict penaunce, and professe Capuchinisme but one month, and Ile be their pledge they shall not grow so like dry-fats as they doo. O it will make them iolly long 10' winded, to trot vp and downe the Dorter staires, and the E 4 water-tankard wil | keepe vnder the insurrection of their shoulders, the haire shirt will chase whordome out of their boanes, and the hard lodging on the boards take their flesh downe a button hole lower. 15

But if they might be induced to distribute all their goods amongst the poore, it were to be hoped Saint Peter would let them dwell in the suburbs of heauen, whereas, other wise, they must keepe aloofe at *Pancredge*, and not come neere the liberties by fие leagues and aboue. It is your 20 dooing (*Diotrepes Diuell*) that these stal-fed cormorants to damnation must bung vp all the welth of the Land in their snap-haunce bags, and poore Scholers and Souldiers wander in backe lanes and the out-shiftes of the Citie, with neuer a rag to their backes: but our trust is, that 25 by some intemperance or other, you will turne vp their heeles one of these yeares together, and prouide them of such vnthrifts to their heires, as shall spend in one weeke amongst good fellowes what they got by extortion and opression from Gentlemen all their life time. 30

*The com-
plaint of
drunken-
ness.*

F Rom Gluttony in meates, let me descend to superfluitie in drinke: a sinne, that euer since we haue mixt our selues with the Low-countries, is counted honourable: but

3 his] this 95. 3-4 succeed in pride 93, 95. 8 professe the Capuchinisme
 92^{AB}. 11 dorter-slaites 93, 95. 14 their] the 93, 95. 19 not]
 cannot 93, 95. neerer 92^C 23 snaphaunce 92^C &c. 24 and] as
 95. 26 turnd 93.

before we knew their lingring warres, was held in the highest degree of hatred that might be. Then, if we had seene a man goe wallowing in the streetes, or line sleeping vnder the boord, we would haue spet at him as a toade,^{Drinking super nagulum,} a devise of drinking new come out of Fraunce; which is, after a man hath turnd vp the bottom of the cup, to drop it on his naile, & make a pearle with that is left; which, if it shed, & he cannot make stand againe for his pennance.

5 and cald him foule drunken swine, and warnd al our friends out of his company: now, he is no body that cannot drinke *super nagulum*, carouse the Hunters hoop, quaffe *vpsey freeze crosse*, with healthes, gloues, mumpes, frolickes, and a thousand such dominiering inuentions. He is reputed
10 a pesaunt and a boore that wil not take his licour profoundly. And you shall heare a Caualier of the first feather, a princockes that was but a Page the other day in the Court, and now is all to be frenchified in his Souldiers sute, stand vpon termes with, Gods wounds, you dis-
15 honour me sir, you do me the disgrace if you do not pledge me as much as I drunke to you: and, in the midst of his cups, stand vaunting his manhood, beginning euerie sentence with When I first bore Armes, when he neuer bare any thing but his Lords rapier after him in his life. If he E 4^o by
20 haue beene ouer and visited a towne of Garrison, as a trauailer or passenger, he hath as great experience as the greatest Commander and chiefe Leader in England. A mightie deformer of mens manners and features, is this vnecessary vice of all other. Let him bee indued with
25 neuer so many vertues, and haue as much goodly proportion and fauour as nature can bestow vpon a man: yet if hee be thirstie after his owne destruction, and hath no ioy nor comfort, but when he is drowning his soule in a gallon pot, that one beastly imperfection will vtterlie
30 obscure all that is commendable in him; and all his good qualities sinke like lead down to the bottome of his carowsing cups, where they will lie, like lees and dregges, dead and vnregarded of any man.

¹ *supernagulum* 92^C &c. *shed*] *slide* 92^{AB}.

I the] 92^{AB}: that 92^C &c. 3 line] liene 93: laine 95. 8 healthes] leaps 92^{AB}. 14 God-wounds 95. 16 drinke 95. middest 95. 18 with when 92^B &c. bare 95. 20 haue] hath 95.

Clim of the clough, thou that vsest to drinke nothing but scalding lead and sulpher in hell, thou art not so greedie of thy night geare. O, but thou hast a foule swallow, if it come once to carousing of humane bloud; but thats but seldome, once in seauen yeare, when theres 5 a great execution, otherwise thou art tide at rack and manger, and drinkest nothing but the *Aqua vitæ* of vengeance all thy life time. The Prouerbe giues it forth, thou art a knaue, and therefore I haue more hope thou art some manner of good fellowe: let mee intreate thee (since thou 10 hast other iniquities inough to circumuent vs withall) to wipe this sin out of the catalogue of thy subtillties: helpe to blast the Vines, that they may beare no more grapes, and sowre the wines in the cellers of Marchants store-houses, that our Countrey-men may not pissee out all their 15 witte and thrift against the walles. King *Edgar*, because his subiects should not offend in swilling, and bibbing, as they did, caused certaine yron cups to be chained to euery fountaine and wells side, and at euery Vintners doore, with yron pinnes in them, to stinte euery man how 20 much he should drinke: and he that went beyond one of those pinnes forfeited a penny for euery draught. And, if Stories were well searcht, I beleue hoopes in quart pots were inuented to that ende, that euery man should take

*King
Edgars
ordinance
against
drinking.*

*The
wonderful
abstinence
of the Mar-
quesse
of Pisana,
ques
of Pi-
sana, yet
living.*

25 a trueth by great Personages, that the olde Marquesse of *Pisana* (who yet liues) drinkest not once in seauen yeare: F 1 and I haue read of one *Andron* of *Argos*, that | was so seldome thirstie, that he traualied ouer the hote burning sands of *Lybia*, and neuer dranke. Then why should our 30 colde Clime bring foorth such fierie throates? Are we more thirstie than *Spaine* and *Italy*, where the Sunnes force is doubled? The *Germaines* and lowe Dutch, me thinkes, should bee continually kept moyst with the foggie

¹ *driuking 92c.*

6 tide] om. 95. 10 of a good 92^{AB}. 14 cellars 92^A: sellers 95. of] and 92^A. Merchants 92^A, 95. 18 yron-cups 92^c, 93. 19 well side 95. 28 Aneron 95. 34 keept 92^c.

aire and stinking mistes that arise out of their fennie soyle : but as their Countrey is ouer-flowen with water, so are their heads alwaies ouer-flowen with wine, and in their bellies they haue standing quag-mires and bogs of English
5 beere.

One of their breedē it was that writ the Booke *De Arte bibendi*, a worshipfull treatise, fitte for none but *Silenus* and his Asse to set forth : besides that volume, we haue generall rules and iniunctions, as good as printed precepts, or
10 Statutes set downe by Acte of Parliament, that goe from drunkard to drunkard ; as still to keepe your first man, not to leauē any flockes in the bottome of the cup, to knock the glasse on your thumbe when you haue done, to haue some shooing horne to pul on your wine, as a rasher of the
15 coles, or a redde herring, to stirre it about with a candles ende to make it taste better, and not to holde your peace whiles the pot is stirring.

Nor haue we one or two kinde of drunkards onely, but
20 eight kindes. The first is Ape drunke, and he leapes, and sings, and hollowes, and daunceth for the heauens : the nesse.
The eight kinds of drunkenness.
second is Lion drunke, and he flings the pots about the house, calls his Hostesse whore, breakes the glasse windowes with his dagger, and is apt to quarrell with any man that speaks to him : the third is Swine drunke, heauy, lumpish,
25 and sleepie, and cries for a little more drinke, and a fewe more cloathes : the fourth is Sheepe drunke, wise in his owne conceipt, when he cannot bring foorth a right word : the fifth is Mawdlen drunke when a fellowe will weepe for kindnes in the midst of his Ale, and kisse you, saying ;
30 By God, Captaine, I loue thee ; goe thy waies, thou dost not thinke so often of me as I do of thee, I would (if it pleased GOD) I could not loue thee so well as I doo ; and then he puts his finger in his eie, and cries : the sixt is Martin drunke, when a man is drunke, and drinkes himselfe
35 sober ere he stirre : the seuenth is Goate drunke, when,

¹ priuat] eriuat 92^{BC}.

13 your] their 95.

14 of] on 93, 95.

24 bumpish 92^C.

F^r in his drunckenes, he hath no minde | but on Lechery: the eighth is Foxe drunke, when he is craftie drunke, as many of the Dutch men bee, that will neuer bargaine but when they are drunke. All these *species*, and more, I haue seene practised in one Company at one sitting, when I haue 5
beene permitted to remaine sober amongst them, onely to note their seuerall humors. Hee that plies any one of them harde, it will make him to write admirable verses, and to haue a deepe casting head, though hee were neuer so verie a Dunce before.

*The dis-
commodi-
ties of
drunken-
nesse.*

Gentlemen, all you that will not haue your braines twise sodden, your flesh rotten with the Dropsie, that loue not to goe in greasie dublets, stockings out at the heeles, and weare alehouse daggers at your backes, forswearre this slauering brauery, that will make you haue stinking 15 breathes, and your bodies smell like Brewers aprons: rather keepe a snusse in the bottome of the glasse to light you to bed withall, than leaue neuer an eye in your head to lead you ouer the threshould. It will bring you, in your olde age, to be companions with none but Porters and Car-men, 20 to talke out of a Cage, railing as drunken men are wont, a hundred boies wondering about them; and to die sodainly, as *Fol Long*, the Fencer, did, drinking *Aqua vitæ*. From which (as all the rest) good Lord deliuer *Pierce Penilesse*.

*The com-
plaint of
Sloth.*

THe nurse of this enormitie (as of all euills) is Idlenes, 25 or sloth, which, hauing no painfull Prouidence to set himselfe a worke, runnes headlong, with the raines in his owne hand, into all lasciuiousnesse and sensualitie that may be. Men, when they are idle, and know not what to do, saith one, let vs goe to the Stilliard, and drinke 30 Rhenish wine. Nay, if a man knew where a good whorhouse were, saith another, it were somwhat like. Nay, saith the third, let vs goe to a dicing-house or a bowling alley, and there we shall haue some sport for our money.

^{3 that]} 92^A: om. 92^{BC}: which 93, 95. ^{4 I haue]} haue I 92^{AB}. 9 and]
92^{AB}: om. 92^C &c. ^{26 Prouidence]} 92^B: Prouince 92^{AC} &c.

To one of these three (at hand, quoth pick-purse) your euill Angelship, maister mani-headed beast, conducts them, *Vbi quid agitur* betwixt you and their soules be it, for I am no Drawer, Box-keeper, or Pander, to be priuie to 5 their sports. If I were to paint Sloth (as I am not seene in the sweetening) by Saint John the | Euangelist I sweare, F 2 I would draw it like a Stationer that I knowe, with his thumb vnder his girdle, who if a man come to his stall and aske him for a booke, neuer stirs his head, or looks 10 vpon him, but stands stone still, and speakes not a word: onely with his little finger points backwards to his boy, who must be his interpreter, and so all the day, gaping like a dumbe image, he sits without motion, except at such times as he goes to dinner or supper: for then he 15 is as quicke as other three, eating sixe times euery day.

If I would raunge abroad, and looke in at sluggards key *Videlicet,*
holes, I should finde a number lying a bed to sauе charges *before he
come out* of ordinances, & in winter, when they want firing, losing *of his bed,*
halfe a weeks Commons together, to keepe them warme *then a set
breakfast,* 20 in the linnen. And hold you content, this Summer an *then dinner, then
vnder-meale* of an afternoone long doth not amisse to *afternoons*
exercise the eies withall. Fat men and Farmers sonnes, *nunchings,*
that sweate much with eating harde cheese and drinking *a supper,
olde wine, must haue some more ease than yoong boyes *reresupper.**
25 that take their pleasure all day running vp and downe.

Setting iesting aside, I hold it a great disputable ques- *Which is
tion, which is a more euill man, of him that is an idle better of
glutton at home, or a retchlesse vnthrift abroad? The *the idle
glutton, or
vagrant
vnthrift.**
30 pamper his flesh vnto lust, and is good for none but his
owne gut: the vnthrift abroad exerciseth his bodie at
dauncing schoole, fence schoole, tennis, and all such re-
creations: the vintners, the victuallers, the dicing houses,

¹ *Fidelicet 95.*

4 Box-keeper 92^C. 6 sweetenings 92^{AB}. 9 and] to 92^A. looke
95. 14 time 95. 17 should] could 95. 18 &] 92^{AB}: om. 92^C &c.
26 a side 92^C. 30 but for his 93, 95. 31 owne] om. 95.

and who not, get by him. Suppose he lose a little now and then at play, it teacheth him wit: and how should a man know to eschew vices, if his own experience did not acquaint him with their inconueniences? *Omne ignotum pro magnifico est:* that villany we haue made no 5 assaies in, we admire. Besides, my vagrant Reueller haunts Plaies, & sharpens his wits with frequenting the company of Poets: he emboldens his blushing face by courting faire women on the sodaine, and lookest into all Estates by conuersing with them in publike places. Nowe 10 tell me whether of these two, the heauie headed gluttonous house douse, or this liuelie, wanton, yoong Gallant, is like to prooue the wiser man, and better member in the Common-wealth? If my youth might not be thought partiall,
 F 2^v the fine qualified Gentleman, although | vnstaide, should 15 carrie it cleane away from the lazie clownish droane.

*The effects
of sloth.* Sloath in Nobilitie, Courtiers, Schollers, or any men, is the chiefest cause that brings them in contempt. For, as industrie and vnfatigable toyle rayseth meane persons from obscure houses to high thrones of authoritie: so Sloath, 20 and sluggish securitye, causeth proud Lords to tumble from the towers of their starrie discents, and be trod vnder foote of euery inferiour Besonian. Is it the loftie treading of a Galliard, or fine grace in telling of a loue tale amongst Ladies, can make a man reuerenst of the multitude? no, 25 they care not for the false glistering of gay garments, or insinuating curtesie of a carpet Peere; but they delight to see him shine in armour, and oppose himselfe to honourable daunger, to participate a voluntarie penurie with his Souldiers, and relieue part of their wants out of his owne 30 purse. That is the course he that will be popular must take, which, if he neglect, and sit dallyng at home, nor will be awakt by any indignities out of his loue-dreame, but suffer euery vpstart groome to defie him, set him at

4 their] the 95. 7 wit 93, 95. 9 looke 92^c. 12 like] likely 95.
 15 vnstaide c.w. 22 starrie] high 95. 23 feete 95. 24 among 95.
 29 penurie] penny 92^A: penie 92^B.

naught, and shake him by the beard vnreuengde, let him straight take orders, and be a Church-man, and then his patience may passe for a vertue: but otherwise, he shall be suspected of cowardise, and not car'd for of any. The <sup>The means
to auoyde
Sloth.</sup> 5 onely enemie to Sloth is contention and emulation; as to propose one man to my selfe, that is the onely myrrour of our Age, and striue to out-go him in vertue. But this strife must be so tempered, that we fall not from the eagerness of praise, to the enuying of their persons: for then 10 wee leauue running to the goale of glorie, to spurne at a stone that lyes in our waye; and so did *Atlante*, in the middest of her course, stoope to take vp the golden Apple that her enemie scattered in her way, and was out-runne by *Hippomenes*. The contrarie to this contention and 15 emulation is securitie, peace, quiet, tranquillitie; when we haue no aduersarie to prie into our actions, no malicious eye, whose pursuing our priuate behauour might make vs more vigilant ouer our imperfections than otherwise we would be.

20 That State or Kingdome that is in league with all the world, and hath no forraine sword to vexe it, is not hafse so strong or confirmed to endure, as that which liues euery houre in feare of in|vasion. There is a certaine waste of F 3 the people for whome there is no vse, but warre: and these 25 men must haue some employment still to cut them off. *Nam si foras hostem non habent, domi inuenient.* If they haue no seruice abroad, they will make mutinies at home. Or if the affayres of the State be such, as cannot exhale all these corrupt excrements, it is very expedient they 30 haue some light toyes to busie their heads withall, cast before them as bones to gnaw vpon, which may keepe them from hauing leisure to intermeddle with higher matters.

To this effect, the pollicie of Playes is very necessary, <sup>The defence
of Playes.</sup>

3-4 he shall be] to be 92^{AB}. 8 be so] so be 92^A. 11 *Atlante*
 92^C &c. 12 midst 92^A. 13 that] om. 92^A. 30 withall, to cast
 92^{AB}.

PIERCE PENILESSSE HIS

howsoeuer some shallow-braind censurers (not the deepest serchers into the secrets of gouernment) mightily oppugne them. For whereas the after-noone beeing the idlest time of the day ; wherein men that are their owne masters (as Gentlemen of the Court, the Innes of the Courte, and the 5 number of Captaines and Souldiers about *London*) do wholy bestow themselues vpon pleasure, and that pleasure they deuide (howe vertuously it skils not) either into gameing, following of harlots, drinking, or seeing a Playe : is it not then better (since of foure extreames all the world 10 cannot keepe them but they will choose one) that they should betake them to the least, which is Playes ? Nay, what if I prooue Playes to be no extreme ; but a rare exercise of vertue ? First, for the subiect of them (for the most part) it is borrowed out of our English Chronicles, 15 wherein our forefathers valiant acts (that haue lene long buried in rustie brasse and worme-eaten booke) are reuiued, and they themselues raised from the Graue of Obliuion, and brought to pleade their aged Honours in open presence : than which, what can be a sharper reprooche 20 to these degenerate effeminate dayes of ours ?

How would it haue ioyed braue *Talbot* (the terror of the French) to thinke that after he had lyne two hundred yeares in his Tombe, hee should triumphe againe on the Stage, and haue his bones newe embalmed with the teares 25 of ten thousand spectators at least (at seuerall times), who, in the Tragedian that represents his person, imagine they behold him fresh bleeding.

I will defend it against any Collian, or clubfisted Vsurer of them all, there is no immortalitie can be giuen a man 30 F 3^v on earth | like vnto Playes. What talke I to them of immortalitie, that are the onely vnderminers of Honour, and doe enuie any man that is not sprung vp by base Brokerie like themselues ? They care not if all the auncient

1 howsoeuer] howeuer 92^A. 2 censures 92^C &c. 3 the idlest] 95 : the eldest 92^{AB} : idlest 92^C, 93. 5-6 the number] a number 93, 95. 7 vpon 92^C. 20 then 95. 24 yeare 92^{AB}. 29 Cullian 95.

houses were rooted out, so that, like the Burgomasters of the Low-countries, they might share the gouernment amongst them as States, and be quarter-maisters of our Monarchie. All Artes to them are vanitie: and, if you tell them what a glorious thing it is to haue *Henrie* the fifth represented on the Stage, leading the French King prisoner, and forcing both him and the Dolphin to sweare fealty, I, but (will they say) what do we get by it? Respecting neither the right of Fame that is due to true Nobilitie deceased, nor what hopes of eternitie are to be proposed to aduentrous mindes, to encourage them forward, but onely their execrable luker, and filthie vnquenchable auarice.

They know when they are dead they shall not be brought vpon the Stage for any goodnes, but in a merriment of the Vsurer and the Diuel, or buying Armes of the Herald, who giues them the Lyon, without tongue, tayle, or tallents, because his maister whome hee must serue is a Townesman, and a man of peace, and must not keepe any quarrelling beasts to annoy his honest neighbours.

In Playes, all coosonages, all cunning drifts ouer-guylded with outward holinesse, all stratagems of warre, all the cankerwormes that breed on the rust of peace, are most liuely anatomiz'd: they shew the ill successe of treason, the fall of hastie climbers, the wretched end of vsurpers, the miserie of ciuill dissention, and how iust God is euermore in punishing of murther. And to proue euery one of these allegations, could I propound the circumstances of this play and that play, if I meant to handle this Theame otherwise than *obiter*. What should I say more? they are sower pils of reprehension, wrapt vp in sweete words. Whereas some Petitioners of the Counsaile against them obiect, they corrupt the youth of the Cittie, and withdrawe

¹ *The use . . .] Opposite par.* 'They know' ⁱⁿ 95. ² *confutation] con-*

iuration 95. *objections] om.* 93, 95. *Playes* 92^A.

⁷ *to] om.* 92^A. ⁹ *of] om.* 93, 95. ²¹ *ouer-guiled* 95. ²³ *cank-*
kard-wormes 93. ³⁰ *should] would* 95. ³² *of] to* 92^{AB}. ³²⁻³ *against*
the obiect 95.

*The use of
Playes.*

*The con-
futation
of Citizens*

*objections
against
Players.*

Prentises from theyr worke ; they heartily wishe they might bee troubled with none of their youth nor their prentises ; for some of them (I meane the ruder handicrafts seruants) neuer come abroade, but they are in danger of vndoing : F₄ and as for corrupting them when | they come, that's false ; 5 for no Play they haue, encourageth any man to tumults or rebellion, but layes before such the halter and the gallowes ; or praiseth or approoueth pride, lust, whoredome, prodigalitie, or drunkennes, but beates them downe vtterly. As for the hindrance of Trades and Traders of the Citie ¹⁰ by them, that is an Article foysted in by the Vintners, Alewiues, and Victuallers, who surmise, if there were no Playes, they should haue all the companie that resort to them, lye bowzing and beere-bathing in their houses euery after-noone. Nor so, nor so, good brother bottle-ale, for ¹⁵ there are other places besides where money can bestow it selfe : the signe of the smock will wipe your mouth cleane : and yet I haue heard yee haue made her a tenant to your tap-houses. But what shall hee doo that hath spent himselfe ? where shall hee haunt ? Faith, when Dice, ²⁰ Lust, and Drunkennesse, and all haue dealt vpon him, if there be neuer a Playe for him to goe too for his pennie, he sits melancholie in his Chamber, deuising vpon felonie or treason, and howe he may best exalt himselfe by mischiefe.

25

In *Augustus* time (who was the Patron of all wittie sports) there happened a great Fraie in *Rome* about a Player, insomuch as all the Cittie was in an vprore : wherevpon the Emperour (after the broyle was somewhat ouerblowne) calde the Player before him, and askt what was ³⁰ the reason that a man of his qualitie durst presume to make such a brawle about nothing. Hee smilinglye replyde, *A Players wittie answeres to Augustus.* *It is good for thee, O Cæsar, that the peoples heads are troubled with brawles and quarrels about vs and our light matters : for otherwise they would looke into thee and thy* ³⁵

⁴ came 92^c.
baiting 93, 95.

10 and Traders] and Trades 93 : om. 95.
19 tap-house 93, 95.

14 beere-

matters. Read *Lipsius* or any prophane or Christian Polititian, and you shall finde him of this opinion. Our ^{A com-} Players are not as the players beyond sea, a sort of ^{parison} ^{twixt our} squirting baudie Comedians, that haue whores and com- ^{Plaiers} ^{and the} ^{Players} ^{beyond the} ^{Sea.}
 5 mon Curtizens to playe womens partes, and forbear no immodest speech or vnchast action that may procure laughter; but our Sceane is more statelye furnisht than euer it was in the time of *Roscus*, our representations honourable, and full of gallant resolution, not consisting,
 10 like theirs, of a Pantaloun, a Whore, and a Zanie, but of Emperours, Kings, and Princes; whose true Tragedies (*Sophocleo cothurno*) they do vaunt. |

Not *Roscus* nor *Aesope*, those admyred tragedians that F 4^v haue liued euer since before Christ was borne, could euer ^{The due} ^{commenda-} ^{tion of Ned} ^{Allen.}
 15 performe more in action than famous *Ned Allen*. I must accuse our Poets of sloth and partialitie, that they will not boast in large impressions what worthy men (aboue all Nations) *England* affords. Other Countries cannot haue a Fidler breake a string but they will put it in print, and
 20 the old *Romanes* in the writings they published, thought scorne to vse any but domestical examples of their owne hom-bred Actors, Schollers, and Champions, and them they would extoll to the third and fourth Generation: Coblers, Tinkers, Fencers, none escapt them, but they mingled them
 25 all in one Gallimafrey of glory.

Heere I haue vsed a like Method, not of tying my selfe to mine owne Countrie, but by insisting in the experience of our time: and, if I euer write any thing in Latine (as I hope one day I shall), not a man of any desert here amongst vs, but I will haue vp. *Tarlon, Ned Allen, Knell, Bentlie*, shall be made knowne to *France, Spaine, and Italie*: and not a part that they surmounted in, more than other, but I will there note and set downe, with the manner of theyr habites and attyre.

1 *Lipsius* any prophane 93, 95.

92^c &c.

13 nor] or 93, 95.

13-4 those Tragedians admyred before

Christ was borne 92^{AB}.

9 resolution 92^C.

13 those Tragedians admyred before

18 Countries 92^C.

10 of Pantaloun

*The
seventh
and last
complaint,
of Lecherie.*

THE childe of Sloath is Lecherie, which I haue plac't last in my order of handling: a sinne that is able to make a man wicked that should describe it; for it hath more starting holes than a sieue hath holes, more Clyents than *Westminster-hall*, more diseases than *Newgate*. Call a 5 Leete at *Byshopsgate*, and examine how euery second house in *Shorditch* is maintayned: make a priuie search in *Southwarke*, and tell me how many Shee-Inmates you finde: naye, goe where you will in the Suburbes, and bring me two Virgins that haue vowd Chastitie, and Ile builde 10 a Nunnerie.

Westminster, Westminster, much maydenhead hast thou to answeare for at the day of Iudgement; thou hadst a Sanctuarie in thee once, but hast few Saints left in thee now. Surgeons and Apothecaries, you know what I speake 15 is true, for you liue (like Sumners) vpon the sinnes of the people; tell me, is there anye place so lewde as this Ladie *London*? not a Wench sooner creepes out of the G 1 shell, but she is of the Religion. Some wiues | will sowe Mandrake in their gardens, and crosse-neighborhood with 20 them is counted goodfellowship.

The Court I dare not touch, but surely there (as in the Heauens) be many falling starres, and but one true *Diana*. *Consuetudo peccandi tollit sensum peccati*. Custome is a Lawe, and Luste holdes it for a Lawe, to liue without 25 Lawe. *Lais*, that had so manie Poets to her Louers, could not alwayes preserue her beauty with their praises. Marble will weare away with much raine: Gold will rust with moyst keeping; and the richest garments are subiect to Times Moath-frets: *Clitemnstra*, that slew her husband 30 to enioye the Adulterer *Aegistus*, and bathde her selfe in Milke euery day to make her yoong againe, had a time when shee was ashamed to viewe her selfe in a looking Glasse, and her body withered, her minde being greene. The people pointed at her for a murtherer, yoong children 35

howted at her as a strumpet: shame, misery, sicknesse, beggery, is the best end of vncleannessesse.

5 *Lais, Cleopatra, Helen*, if our Clyme hath any such, noble Lord warden of the witches and iuglers, I commend them
 with the rest of our vncleane sisters in *Shorditch, the Spittle, Southwarke, Westminster, & Turnbull strcete*, to the protection of your Portership: hoping you will speedily carrie them to hell, there to keepe open house for all young Diuels that come, and not let our ayre bee contaminated
 10 with theyr six-pennie damnation any longer.

*Your Diuelships
 bounden execrator,
 Pierce Penilesse.*

15 **A** Supplication calst thou this? (quoth the Knight of the G 1^v
 post) it is the maddest Supplication that euer I sawe; me thinks thou hast handled all the seuen deadly sinnes in it, and spared none that exceeds his limits in any of them. It is well done to practise thy witte, but (I beleue) our Lord will cun thee little thanks for it.

20 The worse for me (quoth I), if my destinie be such, to lose my labour euery where, but I meane to take my chance, be it good or bad. Well, hast thou any more that thou wouldest haue mee to doo (quoth he)? Onely one sute (quoth I), which is this, that sith opportunitie so
 25 conuenientlie serues, you would acquaint mee with the state of your infernall regiment: and what that hel is, where your Lord holdes his throne; whether a world like this, which spirites like outlawes doo inhabit, who, being banisht from heauen, as they are from their Country, enuy
 30 that any shall bee more happy than they; and therefore seeke all meanes possible, that Wit or Arte may inuent, to make other men as wretched as themselues: or, whether

3 our] your 93, 95. 4 witches and iuglers] 92^C, 93 : Witches . . . 95 :
 Wenches & Anglers 92^{AB}. 5 siffers 92^C. 19 thanke 92^{AB}.
 20 qouth 92^C. 24 sith] since 95. 30 shall] should 95. then 92^A.

it be a place of horror, stench, and darknesse, where men
see meat, but can get none, or are euer thirstie and readie
to swelt for drinke, yet haue not the power to taste the
coole streames that runne hard at their feet: where (*per-*
mutata vicissitudine) one ghost torments another by turnes,⁵
and he that all his life time was a great fornicator, hath
all the diseases of lust continually hanging vpon him,
and is constrained (the more to augment his misery) to
haue congresse euery houre with hagges and olde witches:
and he that was a great drunkard here on earth, hath his ¹⁰
penance assigned him, to carouse himselfe drunke with
dish-wash and Vineger, and surfeit foure times a day with
scower Ale and small Beere: as so of the rest, as the
vsurer to swallow moulten gold, the glutton to eate nothing
but toades, and the Murtherer to bee still stabd with ¹⁵
daggers, but neuer die: or whether (as some phantasticall
refyners of philosophie will needs perswade vs) hell is
nothing but error, and that none but fooles and Idiotes
and Machanicall men, that haue no learning, shall be
damned: of these doubts if you will resolute me, I shall ²⁰
thinke my selfe to haue profited greatly by your company.

He hearing me so inquisitiue in matters aboue humane |

G 2 capacity, entertained my greedie humour with this answere.
Poets and Philosophers, that take a pride in inuenting newe
opinions, haue sought to renoume their wittes by hunting ²⁵
after strange conceits of heauen and hell; all generally
agreeing, that such places there are, but how inhabited,
by whom gouerned, or what betides them that are tran-
sported to the one or other, not two of them iumpe in one
tale. We, that to our terror and grieve do know their ³⁰
dotage by our sufferings, reioyce to thinke how these sillie
flyes plaie with the fire that must burne them.

But leauing them to the Laborynth of their fond curi-
ositie, shall I tell thee in a word what Hell is? It is a
place where the soules of vntemperate men, and ill liuers ³⁵

I a] om. 92c.
vnto 93, 95.

10 here] om. 93, 95.

23 capacicie, c.w.

33 to]

of all sorts, are detayned and imprisoned till the generall Resurrection, kept and possessed chiefly by spirites, who lye like Souldiours in Garison, ready to be sent about any seruice into the world, whensoeuer *Lucifer*, their 5 Liestenaunt Generall, pleaseth. For the scituacion of it in respect of heauen, I can no better compare it than to *Callis* and *Douer*: for, as a man standing vpon *Callis* Sands may see men walking on *Douer* Clyffes, so easily may you discerne Heauen from the farthest part of hell, 10 and behold the melodie and motions of the Angels and Spirits there resident, in such perfect manner as if you were amongst them; which, how it worketh in the mindes and soules of them that haue no power to apprehend such felicity, it is not for me to intimate, because it is pre- 15 iudicall to our Monarchie.

I would bee sorrie (quoth I) to importune you in anie matter of secrecie: yet this I desire, if it might bee done without offence, that you would satisfie me in full sort, and according to truth, what the Diuell is whome you 20 serue? as also howe he began, and howe farre his power and authoritie extends?

Persie, beleue me, thou shriuest me very neere in this latter demaund, which concerneth vs more deeply than the former, and may worke vs more damage than thou art 25 aware of: yet in hope thou wylt conceale what I tell thee, I will laye open our whole estate plainly and simply vnto thee as it is: but first I wil begin with the opinions of former times, and so hasten forwarde | to that *manifeste G 2v verum* that thou seekest. Some men there be that, building too much vpon reason, perswade themselues that there 30 are no Diuels at all, but that this word *Dæmon* is such another morall of mischiefe, as the Poets Dame Fortune is of mishap: for as vnder the fiction of this blinde Goddesse we ayme at the folly of Princes and great men in 35 disposing of honours, that oftentimes preferre fooles and disgrace wise men, and alter their fauours in turning of

3 lye] liue 95.

28 *manifestum* 93, 95.

32 morall] mortal 95.

an eye, as Fortune turnes her wheele: so vnder the person of this olde *Gnathonicall* companion, called the Diuell, we shrowd all subteltie masking vnder the name of simplicitie, all painted holines deuouring widowes houses, all gray headed Foxes clad in sheepes garments; so that the 5 Diuell (as they make it) is onely a pestilent humour in a man, of pleasure, profit, or policie, that violently carries him away to vanitie, villanie, or monstrous hypocrisie: vnder vanitie I comprehend not onely all vaine Arts and studies whatsoeuer, but also dishonourable prodigalitie,¹⁰ vntemperate venery, and that hatefull sinne of selfe-loue, which is so common amongst vs: vnder villanie I comprehend murder, treason, theft, counsage, cut-throat couetise, and such like: lastly, vnder hypocrisie, all Machiauilisme, puritanisme, and outward gloasing with a mans enemie,¹⁵ and protesting friendship to him that I hate and meane to harme, all vnder-hand cloaking of bad actions with Common-wealth pretences; and, finally, all Italionate conueyances, as to kill a man, and then mourne for him, *quasi vero* it was not by my consent, to be a slauie to him²⁰ that hath iniur'd me, and kisse his feete for opportunitie of reuenge, to be seuere in punishing offenders, that none might haue the benefite of such meanes but my selfe, to vse men for my purpose and then cast them off, to seeke his destruction that knowes my secrets; and such²⁵ as I haue imploied in any murther or stratagem, to set them priuile together by the eares, to stab each other mutually, for feare of bewraying me; or, if that faile, to hire them to humor one another in such courses as may bring them both to the gallowes. These, and a thousand³⁰ more such sleights, hath hypocrisie learned by trauailing strange Countries. I will not say she puts them in practise here in *England*, although there be as many false brethren G 3 and crafty knaues here | amongst vs, as in any place: witnes the poore Miller of *Cambridge*, that, hauing no roome for³⁵

² *Gnathonicall* 92^{C.} ¹¹ vntemperate] vnrepentant 95.

^{92^{AB.}} ²⁰ my] om. 95.

¹² among

his hen-loft but the Testor of his bed, and it was not possible for any hungry Poultres to come there, but they must stande vpon the one side of it, and so not steale them but with great hazard ; had in one night notwithstanding (when hee and his wife were a snorting) all the whole progenie of their Pullery taken away, and neither of them heard any stirring : it is an odde tricke, but what of that ? we must not stand vpon it, for we haue grauer matters in hand then the stealing of Hennes. Hypocrisie, I remember, was our Text, which was one of the chiefe morall Diuels our late Doctors affirme to bee most busie in these daies ; and busie it is, in trueth, more than any Bee that I know : nowe you talke of a Bee, Ile tell you a tale of a Battle-dore.

The Beare on a time, beeing chiefe Burgomaster of all the Beasts vnder the Lyon, gan thinke with himselfe how hee might surfeit in pleasure, or best husband his Authoritie to enlarge his delight and contentment. Wyth that hee beganne to prye and to smell through euery corner of the Forrest for praye, to haue a thousands imagynations with himselfe what daintie morsell he was master of, and yet had not tasted : whole Heards of sheepe had hee deououred, and was not satisfied ; fat Oxen, Hayfers, Swine, Calues, and yoong Kiddes, were his ordinary vyands : he longed for Horse-flesh, and went presently to a medowe, where a fat Cammell was grazing, whom, fearing to encounter with force, because he was a huge beast and well shod, he thought to betray vnder the colour of demaunding homage, hoping that, as he should stoope to doo him truage, he might seaze vpon his throat, and stifle him before he should be able to recouer himselfe from his false embrace : but therein he was deceiued ; for, comming vnto this stately Beast with this imperious message, in stead of doing homage vnto him, he lifted vp one of his hindmost heeles, and stroake him such a blowe on the forehead that hee ouer-

² Poulters 93, 95. ⁶ Pultery 95. ⁹ than 92^{AB}. ¹¹ morall] mortall 95. ¹² then 95. ¹⁸ his] him 95. ²³ satisfied? 92^C.

threw him. Thereat not a little mou'd, and enrag'd, that he should be so dishonored by his inferiour, as he thought, he consulted with the Ape how he might be reuenged.

The Ape, abhorring him by nature, because he ouer-
G 3^v lookt | him so Lordly, and was by so many degrees greater 5
 than he was, aduised him to digge a pit with his pawes
 right in the way where this big boord Gentleman should
 passe, that so stumbling and falling in, he might lightly
 skip on his back, and bridle him, and then he come and
 seaze on him at his pleasure. No sooner was this per- 10
 swaded than performed: for enuie, that is neuer idle, could
 not sleepe in his wrath, or ouer-slip the least opportunitie,
 till hee had seene the confusion of his enemie. Alas,
 goodly Creature, that thou mightest no longer liue. What
 auailleth thy gentlenes, thy prowesse, or the plentifull 15
 pasture wherein thou wert fed; since malice triumphs ouer
 all thou commaundest? Well may the Mule rise vp in
 armes, and the Asse bray at the Authors of thy death: yet
 shall their furie be fatall to themselues, before it take hold
 on these Traitors. What needeth more words? the 20
 deuouer feedes on his captiue, and is gorged with bloud.
 But as auarice and crueltie are euermore thirstie, so far'd it
 with this hungrie Vsurper: for hauing flesht his ambition
 with this treacherous conquest, he past along through
 a groue, where a Heard of Deare weare a ranging; whom, 25
 when he had stedfastly surveyed from the fattest to the
 leanest, he singled out one of the fairest of the company,
 with whom he meant to close vp his stomack in stead of
 cheese: but because the Wood-men were euer stirring there-
 about, and it was not possible for one of his coate to com- 30
 mit such outrage vndescrid, and that, if he were espyed,
 his life were in perill, though not with the Lyon, whose
 eyes he could blinde as hee list, yet with the lesser sort of
 the brutish Comminaltie, whome no flatterie might pacifie.

⁴ New par. 92^c &c. Run on in 92^{AB}. ⁹ hee [could] come Gro.
 11 then 95. ¹⁵ the] thy 95. ¹⁸ bray] pray 93, 95. ²³ flesh
 95. ²⁴ a long 92^c, 93.

Therefore, he determined slylie and priuilie to poyson the streame where this iolly Forrester wonted to drinke; and as he determined, so he did: whereby it fell out, that when the Sunne was ascended to his height, and all the nimble 5 Cittizens of the Wood betooke them to their Laire, this youthfull Lorde of the Lawnds, all fainte and malecontent (as prophecying his neere approching mishap by his languishing) with a lazie, wallowing pace, strayed aside from the rest of his fellowship, and betooke him all care-
10 lessly to the corrupted fountaine that was prepared for his Funerall.

Ah, woe is me, this poyson is pittilesse. What neede I saye more, since you know it is death with whome it encounters? And ^{G 4} yet cannot all this expence of life set 15 a period to insatiable Murther: but still it hath some Anuile to worke vpon, and ouer-casts all opposite prosperitie, that may any waye shadow his glorie.

Too long it were to rehearse all the practises of this sauadge blood-hunter: how he assailed the Vnicorne as he 20 slept in his den, and tore the heart out of his breast ere he could awake: how hee made the lesser beasts lye in wayte one for the other, and the Crocodyle to coape with the Basiliske, that when they had enterchangeably weakened each other, he might come and insult ouer them both as hee 25 list. But these were lesser matters, which daily vse had worne out of mens mouthes, and he himselfe had so customable practised, that often exercise had quite abrogated the opinion of sinne, and impudencie throughlie confirmed an vndaunted defiance of vertue in his face. Yet 30 newfangled lust, that in time is wearie of welfare, and will bee as soone cloyed with too much ease and delicacie, as Pouertie with labour and scarcitie, at length brought him out of loue with this greedy, bestiall humour; and nowe hee affected a milder varietie ⁱⁿ his dyet: hee had bethought 35 him what a pleasant thing it was to eate nothing but honie

¹² New par. in 92^C &c. Run on in 92^{AB}. ¹⁸ New par. in 92^C &c.
Run on in 92^{AB}. ²⁷ practise 93. ²⁸ impudence 92^A.

another while, and what great store of it there was in that Countrey.

Nowe did hee cast in his head, that if hee might bring the Husbandmen of the soyle in opinion that they might buie honey cheaper than beeing at such charges in keeping 5 of Bees, or that those Bees which they kept were most of them Drones, and what should such idle Drones doe with such stately Hyues, or lye sucking at such pretious Honny-combes ; that if they were tooke awaye from them, and distributed equally abroade, they would releue a great 10 many of painfull labourers that had neede of them, and would continually liue seruiceable at theyr commaund, if they might enioy such a benefite. Naye more, let them giue Waspes but onely the waxe, and dispose of the honie as they thinke good, and they shall humme and buzz 15 a thousand times lowder than they, and haue the huie fuller at the yeares ende (with young ones, I meane) than the Bees are woont in ten yeere.

To broach this deuice, the Foxe was addrest like a shep-
G 4^v heardes | dogge, and promist to haue his Pattent seald, to 20 be the Kings Poulterer for euer, if he could bring it to passe. Faith, quoth he, and Ile put it in a venter, let it hap how it wil. With that he grew in league with an old Camelion, that could put on all shapes, and imitate any colour, as occasion serued, and him he addrest, sometime 25 like an Ape to make sport, and then like a Crocodile to weep, sometime like a Serpent to sting, and by and by like a Spaniell to fawne, that with these sundrie formes, (applyde to mens variable humors) he might perswade the world he ment as he spake, and onely intended their good, when he 30 thought nothing lesse. In this disguise, these two deceiuers went vp and downe, and did much harme vnder the habite of Simplicity, making the poore silly Swaines beleue they were cunning Phisitions, and well seene in all Cures, that they could heale any maladie, though neuer so daungerous, 35 and restore a man to life that had beene dead two daies,

onely by breathing vpon him: aboue all things they per-swaded them, that the honny that their Bees brought foorth was poysonous and corrupt, by reason that those floures and hearbs, out of which it was gathered and exhaled, were
 5 subiect to the infection of cuery Spider and venimous Canker, and not a loathsome Toade (how detestable soever) but reposde himselfe vnder theyr shadow, and lay sucking at their rootes continually: wheras in other Countries, no noisome or poisnous creature might liue, by reason of the
 10 imputed goodnes of the Soyle, or carefull diligence of the Gardners aboue ours, as for example, *Scotland, Denmarke,* and some more pure partes of the seauenteene Prouinces.

These perswasions made the good honest Husbandmen to pause, and mistrust their owne wits very much, in
 15 nourishing such dangerous Animals, but* yet, I know not [^{*Inter-}
^{dum} ^{vulgus} ^{rectum} ^{videt, est} ^{vbi peccat.}] how antiquitie and custome so ouer-rulde their feare, that none would resolute to abandon them on the sodaine, till they sawe a further inconuenience: whereby my two cun-
 ning Philosophers were driuen to studie *Galen* anew, and
 20 seeke out splenatiue simples, to purge their popular Patients of the opinion of their olde Traditions and Customes: which, howe they wrought with the most parte that had least wit,
 it were a world to tell. For now nothing was Canonical but what they speake, no man would conuerse with his wife
 25 but I first askt their aduise, nor pare his nailes, nor cut his ^{H 1} beard, without their prescription: so senceles, so wauering is the light vnconstant multitude, that will daunce after euerie mans pipe; and sooner prefer a blind harper that can squeake out a new horne-pipe, than *Alcinous* or *Apolloes*
 30 varietie, that imitates the right straines of the *Doryan* melody. I speake this to amplifie the nouell folly of the hedlong vulgar, that making their eyes and eares vassailles to the legerdemaine of these iugling Mountebanks, are pre-

¹ *Interdum . . .] om. 92^C &c. est] et Q.*

5 infection] inferiour 95. 11 Gardiners 95. 12 seauenteene] 17. 92^{AB}.
 13 New par. in 92^C &c. Run on in 92^{AB}. 19 a new 92^C &c. 24 speake]
 92^{AB}: speake 92^C &c. 30 right] eight Coll., Gro. 33 Mountbanks 92^C &c.

sentlie drawne to contemne Art and experience, in comparison of the ignorance of a number of audatious idiots. The Fox can tell a faire tale, and couers all his knauerie vnder conscience, and the Camelion can addresse himself like an Angell whensoever he is disposed to worke mischefe 5 by myracles: but yet in the end, their secret drifts are laide open, and *Linceus* eyes, that see through stone walles, haue made a passage into the close couerture of their hypocrisie.

For one daie, as these two Deuisers were plotting by themselves how to drive all the Bees from their Honny 10 combs, by putting wormwood in their Hyues, and strewing Henbane and Rue in euerie place where they resort: a Flye that past by, and heard all their talke, stomaking the Foxe of olde, for that he had murdred so many of his kindred with his flail-driuing tail, went presentlie and buzzd in 15 *Linceus* eares the whole purport of their malice; who awaking his hundred eies at these vnxpected tidings gan persue them wheresoever they went, and trace their intents as they proceeded into action, so that ere half their baits were cast forth, they were apprehended and imprisoned, and 20 all their whole counsaile detected. But long ere this, the Beare, impatient of delaies, and consumed with an inward greife in himselfe, that hee might not haue his will of a fat Hind that outran him, he went into the woods all melancholie, and there died for pure anger: leauing the Foxe 25 and the Camelion to the destinie of their desert, and mercie of their Judges. How they scapte I know not, but some saie they were hanged, and so weele leaued them.

H 1^v How likest thou of my tale, friend *Persie*? Haue I not described a right earthly Diuell vnto thee, in the discourse 30 of this bloodie minded Beare? Or canst thou not attract the true image of | hypocrisie, vnder the description of the Fox and the Camelion?

Yes, very well (quoth I); but I would gladly haue you

8 into] in 93, 95. 14 murthred 92^{AB}. 16 purport] purpose 93, 95.
19 into every action 93, 95. 27 scape 92^C &c. 28 wee] wee 93, 95.
29 lik'st 92^{AB}. 31 minded] om. 93, 95. 32 Hypocrisie c.w.

returne to your first subiect, since you haue mooued doubts in my mind, which you haue not yet discust.

Of the sundrie opinions of the Diuell, thou meanest, and them that imagin him to haue no existence, of which sort 5 are they that first inuented the prouerbe, *Homo homini Dæmon*: meaning thereby, that that power which we call the Diuill, and the ministring Spirits belonging to him and to his kingdom, are tales and fables, and meere bugge-beares to scarre boies: and that there is no such essence at 10 all, but only it is a terme of large content, describing the rancor, grudg, and bad dealing of one man toward another: as, namely, when one friend talkes with another subtilly, and seeks to diue into his commoditie, that he may deprive him of it craftelie; when the sonne seeks the death of the 15 father, that he maie be infeoffed in his welth: and the step-dame goes about to make awaie her sonne-in-law, that her children may inherit: when brothers fall at iarres for portions, and shall, by open murther or priuie conspiracie, attempt the confusion of each other, only to ioine house to 20 house, and vnite two Liuelihoods in one: when the seruant shall rob his master, and Men put in trust start away from their oathes and vowes, they care not how.

In such cases and manie more, may one man be said to be a diuell to another, and this is the second opinion. 25 The third is that of *Plato*, who not onely affirmeth that there are diuels, but deuided them into three sorts, euerie one a degree of dignitie aboue the other; the first are those whose bodies are compact of the purest airie Element, combined with such transparant threeds, that neither 30 they doo partake so much fire as should make them visible to sight, or haue anie such affinitie with the earth, as they are able to be prest or toucht; and these he setteth in the hiest incomprehensible degree of heauen. The second, he maketh these whom *Apuleius* doth call reasonable creatures,

1 haue] om. 93, 95. 5 homini 92^C. 7 to him and] om. 92^{AB}.
 9-10 bugge-bearers 92^C &c. 11 towards 92^{AB}. 13 seeke 93, 95. 14
 sons seeks 93, 95. 16 sonne in-law 92^{BC}. 32 these] thrise 93, 95.

passive in mind and eternall in time, being those *Apostata* spirits that rebelled with *Belzebub*: whose bodies, before their fall, were bright and pure all like to the former; but, after their transgression, they were obscured with a thick, ayrie matter, & euer after assigned to darknes. The third,⁵

^{H 2} he attributes to those men that, by some | diuine knowledge or vnderstanding, seeming to aspire aboue mortalitie, are called *Dæmona*, (that is) Gods: for this word *Dæmon* contayneth either, and *Homer* in euery place doth vse it both for that omnipotent power that was before al things,¹⁰ and the euill spirit that leadeth men to error: so doth *Syrianus* testifie, that *Plato* was called *Dæmon*, because he disputed of deepe Common-welth matters, greatly auailable to the benefite of his Countrye; and also *Aristotle* because he wrote at large of all things subiect to mouing¹⁵ and sence. Then belike (quoth I) you make this word *Dæmon*, a capeable name of Gods, of men, and of diuels, which is farre distant from the scope of my demand: for I doo onlie inquire of the diuel, as this common appellation of the Diuel signifieth a malignant spirit, enimie to man²⁰ kind, and a hater of God and all goodnes. Those are the second kinde, said he, vsuallie termed detractors or accusers, that are in knowledge infinit, insomuch as, by the quicknes of their wits and agreeable mixtures of the Elements, they so comprehend those seminarie vertues²⁵ to men vnknown, that those thinges which, in course of time or by growing degrees, Nature of it selfe can effect, they, by their Art and skill in hastening the works of nature, can contrive and compas in a moment: as the Magitians of *Pharao*, who, wheras nature, not without³⁰ some interposition of time and ordinarie causes of conception, brings forth frogs, serpents, or any liuing thing else, they, without all such distance of space, or circumscription of season, euen in a thought, as soon as their K. commanded, couered the land of *Aegypt* with this³⁵

⁵ ayrie] fiery *92^{AB}*. ⁹ contayneth *92^C*. ¹³ dispnted *92^C*. ¹⁴ also] om. *92^{AB}*. ²⁷⁻⁸ effect. They *Q.* ³⁴ assoon *92^{BC}*, *93*. ³⁵ King *92^{AB}*.

monstrous increase. Of the originall of vs spirits, the scripture most ample maketh mention, namelie, that *Lucifer* (before his fall) an Archangel, was a cleer bodie, compact of the purest and brightest of the aire, but after 5 his fall he was vailed with a grosser substance, and tooke a new forme of darke and thick ayre, which he still reteineth. Neither did he onlie fall, when he stroue with *Michael*, but drew a number of Aungels to his faction ; who ioint partakers of his proud reuolt, were likewise 10 partakers of his punishmente, and all thrust out of heauen togither by one judgement : who euer since do nothing but wander about the Earth, and tempt and inforce fraile men to enterprise all wickednesse that maie be, and commit | most horrible and abhominable things against H 2^v

15 God. Maruell not that I discouer so much of our estate vnto thee : for the scripture hath more than I mention, as S. Peter, where he saith that *God spared not his Angels that sinned*: and in another place, where he saith that *they are bound with the chaines of darknes, and throwne* 20 *headlong into hell* : which is not meant of anie locall place in the earth, or vnder the waters ; for, as *Austin* affirmeth, we doo inhabite the Region vnder the moone, and haue the thick aire assigned vs as a prison, from whence we maie with small labour cast our nets where we list : yet 25 are we not so at our disposition, but that we are still commanded by *Lucifer* (although we are in number infinite), who retaining that pride wherewith he arrogantlie affected the maiestie of God, hath still his ministring Angels about him, whome he emploies in seuerall charges, 30 to seduce and deceiue as him seemeth best : as those spirites which the Latines call *Iouios* and *Antemeridianos*, to speake out of Oracles, and make the people worship them as gods, when they are nothing but deluding Diuels that couet to haue a false Deitie ascribed vnto them, and

³ Archangel] Angel 93, 95.
¹⁸ sinned. And 92^c &c.

⁴ pnrest 92^c.
²³ as in a prison 93, 95.

¹⁷ Saint 93, 95.
³¹ cals 93, 95.

³² of the Oracles 93, 95.

drawe men vnto their loue by wonders & prodigies, that else would hate them deadlie, if they knew their maleuolence and enuie. Such a monarchizing spirit it was that said to Christ, *If thou wilt fall downe and worship me, I wil giue thee al the kingdoms of the earth:* and such 5 a spirit it was that possest the *Libian Sapho*, and the Emperor *Dioclesian*, who thought it the blessedest thing that might be, to be called God. For the one being wearie of humane honour, and inspired with a supernaturall follie, taught little birds that were capable of speech, to pronounce 10 distinctlie, *Magnus Deus Sapho*; that is to saie, *A great God is Sapho*: Which words, when they had learned readilie to caroll, & were perfect in their note, he let them flie at randon, that so dispersing themselues euerie where, they might induce the people to account of him as a God. 15 The other was so arrogant, that he made his subiectes fall prostrate on their faces, and lifting vp their handes to him as to heauen, adore him as omnipotent.

The second kind of Deuils which he most imploith, are those Northerne *Marcij*, called the spirits of reuenge, & 20 the authors of massacres, and seedesmen of mischiefe; H 3 for they haue com-mission to incense men to rapines, sacrilege, theft, murther, wrath, furie, and all manner of cruelties, and they commande certein of the Southern spirits (as slaues) to waite vpon them, as also great *Arioch*, 25 that is tearmed the spirit of reuenge.

These know how to dissociate the loue of brethren, and to break wedlock bands with such violence, that they may not be vnited, and are predominant in manie other domisti-call mutinies: of whom, if thou list to heare more, read the 30 39. of *Ecclesiasticus*. The Prophet *Esay* maketh menteon of another Spirit, sent by God to the *Egyptians*, to make them straie and wander out of the way, that is to say, the Spirit of liing, which they call *Bolychym*. The Spirits that entice men to gluttonie and lust, are certaine watry spirits 35

4 to] vnto 92^{AB}. 14 randome 92^{AB}. 20 Martij 93, 95. 29
predominant 92^C: predominate 95. 30 thou] you 92^{AB}.

of the West, and certaine Southerne spirits as *Nefrach* & *Kelen*, which for the most part prosecute vnlawfull loues, and cherish all vnnaturall desires: they wander through lakes, fish ponds, and fennes, and ouerwhelme ships, cast
 5 boates vpon ankers, and drowne men that are swimming: therefore are they counted the most pestilent, troublesome, and guilefull spirits that are: for by the helpe of *Alrynach*, a Spirite of the West, they will raise stormes, cause earth-
 10 quaks, whirlwinds, raine, haile or snow in the clerest daie
 10 that is: and if euer they appeare to anie man, they come in womens apparell. The spirits of the aire will mix them-
 selves with thunder & lightening, and so infect the Clime where they raise any tempest, that suddenlie great mortalitie shall ensue to the inhabitants from the infectious
 15 vapors which arise from their motions: of such S. *John* maketh mention in the 9. of the Apocalips; their patron is *Mereris*, whoe beareth chiefe rule about the middle time of the daie.

The spirits of the fire haue their mansions vnder the
 20 regions of the Moon, that whatsoeuer is committed to their charge they maie there execute, as in their proper consistorie, from whence they cannot start. The spirites of the earth keepe, for the most part, in Forrests and woods, and doo hunters much noiance, & sometime in
 25 the broade fieldes, where they lead trauellers out of the right waie, or fright men with deformed apparitions, or make them run mad through excessiue melancholie, lik
Ajax Telamonius, & so proue hurtfull to themselues, and dangerous to others: of this number the chiefe are *Samaab*
 30 and *Achymael*, spirits of the east, | that haue no power to H 3^v
 do anie great harme, by reason of the vnconstancie of their affections. The vnder-earth spirits are such as lurke in dens & little cauerns of the earth, and hollow creuises of mountaines, that they maie diue into the bowels of the

7 *Alrynach* 92^{AB}: *Altynach* 93, 95. 14 to] of 95. infectious 95.
 15 their] the 93, 95. 16 9.] ninth 92^{AB}. 19 *New par. Coll., Gro.*
Run on in Q. 19-20 vnder regions 92^C &c. 29 *Saniaab* 92^C, 93.

earth at their pleasure: these dig mettals and watch treasures, which they continuallie transport from place to place, that none should haue vse of them: they raise winds that vomit flames, and shake the foundation of buildings, they dance in rounds in pleasant launds and 5
greene medowes, with noises of musicke and minstrelsie, & vanish awaie when anie comes neere them: they will take vpon them anie similitude but of a woman, and terrifie men in the likenesse of dead mens ghostes in the night time: and of this qualitie and condition the Necro-
mancers hold *Gaziel*, *Fegor*, and *Anarazel*, Southern spirits, to be. Besides, there are yet remaining certeine lieng spirits, whoe (although all bee giuen to lie by nature) yet are they more prone to that vice than the rest, being named *Pythonists*, of whome *Apollo* comes to be called 15
Pytheus: they haue a prince as well as other spirits, of whom mention is made in the 3. booke of kings, when he saith he will be a lieng spirit in the mouth of all *Ahab*s prophets: from which those spirits of iniquitie do little differ, which are called the vessels of wrath, that assist 20
Belial (whom they interpret a spirit without yoke or controuler) in all damnable deuises and inuentions. *Plato* reports them to be such as first deuised cards and dice, and I am in the mind, that the Monke was of the same order, that found out the vse of Gunpowder, and the 25
engins of war therto belonging. Those that write of these matters call this *Belial Chodar* of the East, that hath all witches & coniurors spirits vnder his iurisdiction, & giues them leaue to helpe Iuglers in their tricks, & *Simon Magus* to doo miracles; alwaies prouided they bring a soule home 30
to their Maister for his hire.

Yet are not these all, for there are spirits called spies & tale carriers, obedient to *Ascaroth*, whom the Greeks call *Daimona*, and *S. Iohn*, *The accuser of the brethren*:

1 pleasures 92^A. dig-mettals and wach-treasures 95. 11 *Gazel* 93:
Gazzell 95. 13 (]) before whoe Q. 16 *Pythæus* 92^{AB}. 26 writ
 92^A. 32 New par. Coll., Gro. Run on in Q.

also tempters, whoe for their interrupting vs in al our good actions are cald our euil Angels. Aboue all thinges they hate the light, and reioyce in darkenesse, disquieting men maliciouslie in the night, and somtimes hurt them by 5 pinching them or blasting them as they sleep : | but they H 4 are not so much to be dreaded as other spirits, bicause if a man speak to them, they flee awaie and will not abide. Such a spirit *Plinius Secundus* telleth of, that vsed to haunt a goodlie house in *Athens* that *Athenodorus* hired ; 10 and such another *Suetonius* describeth to haue long houered in *Lamianus* Garden, wher *Caligula* lay buried, who for bicause he was onlie couered with a few clods, and vnreuerentlie thrown amongst the weeds, he meruelouslie disturbed the owners of the garden, & woulde not 15 let them rest in their beds, till by his Sisters, returned from banishment, he was taken vp, and intoombed solemnlie. *Pausanias* auoucheth (amongst other experiments) that a certain spirit called *Zazilus* doth feed vpon dead mens corses, that are not deeplie interred in the earth as they 20 ought : which to confirme, there is a wonderfull accident set downe in the Danish history of *Asuitus* and *Asmundus*, who, being two famous friends (well knowne in those parts) vowed one to another, that which of them two out liued the other, should be buried alive with his friende that first 25 died. In short space *Asuitus* fell sick and yeelded to nature : *Asmundus*, compelled by the oath of his friendship, tooke none but his horsse and his dog with him, and transported the dead bodie into a vast caue vnder the earth, & there determined (hauing victualed himselfe for a long 30 time) to finish his daies in darkenesse, and neuer depart from him that he loued so deerelie.

Thus shut vp and inclosed in the bowels of the earth, it hapened *Eritus*, K. of *Sweueland*, to passe that waie with his armie, not full two months after ; who comming

9 *Athenadorus* 92^C &c. 13 vnreuerentlie 92^C, 93. 19 courses 95.
25 spabe 92^C. 32 New par. Coll., Gro. Run on in Q. 33 King
92^{AB}. 34 moneths 92^{AB}, 95.

to the toomb of *Asuitus*, & suspecting it a place where tresure was hidden, caused his Pioners with their spades and mattockes to dig it vp: where vpon was discouered the lothsome bodie of *Asmundus*, all to besmeared with dead mens filth, & his visage most vglie and fearefull; 5 which, imbruued with congeald blood and eaten & torn like a raw vlcer, made him so gastlie to behold, that all the beholders were afrighted. He, seeing himselfe restord to light, and so manie amazed men stand about him, resolued their vncertain perplexity in these terms. Why stand 10 you astonisht at my vnusual deformities? when no liuing man conuerseth with the dead but is thus disfigured. But other causes haue effected this change in mee: for I know

H 4^v not what audacious spirit, sent by *Gorgon* from the | deep, hath not onelie most rauenously deuoured my horse & my 15 dog, but also hath laid his hungrie pawes vpon me, and, tering downe my cheekes as you see, hath likewise rent awaie one of mine eares. Hense is it that my mangled shape seems so monstrous, and my humane image obscured with gore in this wise. Yet scaped not this fell Harpie 20 from me vnreuenged: for, as he assailde me, I raught his head from his shoulders, and sheathd my sword in his bodie. Haue spirits their visible bodies, saide I, that may be toucht, wounded, or pierst? Beleeue me, I neuer heard that in my life before this. Why, quoth he, although 25 in their proper essence they are creatures incorporall, yet can they take on them the induments of anie liuing bodie what soeuer, & transform themselues into all kind of shapes, wherby they maie more easilie deceiue our shallow wits and senses. So testifies *Basilius*, that they can put on 30 a material forme when they list. *Socrates* affirmeth that his *Dæmon* did oftentimes talke with him, and that he saw him and felt him manie times. But *Marcus Cher-*

4 to be smeared 95. 8 beholders] lookers on 92^{AB}. 11 you] ye
 92^A. 13 effecte, his 93. change] alteration 92^{AB}. 14 sent (with
 broken s) 93: lent 95. 17 tearing 92^{AB}: taring 95. 21 raught]
 caught 93, 95. 27 on] vpon 92^{AB}. 30 *Bastlius* 93: *Bastilus* 95.
 32 *Damon* 92^C.

ronesius (a wonderfull discouerer of Diuels) writeth, that
 those bodies which they assume are distinguisht by no
 difference of sex, bicause they are simple, and the dis-
 cernance of sex belongs to bodies compound: yet are
 5 they flexible, motiue, and apt for any configuration; but
 not all of them alike; for the spirits of the Fire and Aire
 haue this power aboue the rest. The spirits of the water
 haue slow bodies resembling birdes & women, of which
 kind the *Naiades* & *Nereieds* are much celebrated amongst
 10 Poets. Neuerthelesse, how euer they are restrained to
 their seuerall similitudes, it is certeine that all of them
 desire no forme or figure so muche, as the likenesse of
 a man, and doo thinke themselues in heauen when they
 are infeost in that hue: wherefore I know no other reason
 15 but this, that man is the neerest representation to God,
 insomuch as the scripture saith, *He made man after his
 own likenesse and image*; and they affecting, by reason
 of their pride, to be as like God as they may, contend most
 seriouslie to shroud themselues vnder that habit.
 20 But, I pray, tell me this, whether are there (as *Porphirius*
 holdeth) good Spirits as well as euill? Naie, certeinlie
 (quoth he) we are all euill, let *Porphirius*, *Proclus*, *Apuleius*,
 or the *Platonists* dispute to the contrarie as long as they
 will: which I | will confirm to thy capacitie by the names 25
 25 that are euerie wher giuen vs in the Scripture; for the
 diuell, which is the *Summum genus* to vs all, is called
Diabolus, quasi deorsum ruens, that is to say, falling downne-
 ward, as he that aspiring too high, was thrown from the
 top of felicitie to the lowest pit of despaire; and sathan,
 30 that is to saie, an Aduersarie, who, for the corruption of
 his malice, opposeth himselfe euer against God, whoe is the
 chiefest good. In *Job, Behemoth* and *Leuiathan*; and in
 the 9. of the *Apocalips, Apolyon*, that is to saie, a Subuerter;
 bicause the foundation of those vertues, which our high
 35 Maker hath planted in our soules, he vndermineth and
 subuerteth. A serpent for his poisoning, a Lyon for his

10 Poete 92^c. 20 New par. Coll., Gro. Run on in Q. 36 pojsoning 92^c.

deuouring ; a furnace, for that by his malice the Elect are tried, who are vessels of wrath and saluation. In *Esay*, a Syren, a Lamia, a Scrich-oule, an Estridge. In the Psalmes, an Adder, a Basiliske, a Dragon. And lastlie, in the Gospell, Mammon, Prince of this world, and the Gouernour 5 of darknes : so that, by the whole course of condemning names that are giuen vs, and no one instance of anie fauourable tytle bestowed vpon vs, I positivelie set downe that all spirits are euill. Now, whereas the Diuines attribute vnto vs these good and euill spirits, the good to guide vs 10 from euil, and the euill to draw vs from goodnesse, they are not called spirits, but Angels, of which sort was *Raphael*, the good Angell of *Tobias*, who exilde the euill spirit *Asmodius* into the desart of *Aegypt*, that he might be the more secure from his temptation. Since we haue entred 15 thus far into the diuels commonwealth, I beseech you certifie me thus much, whether haue they power to hurt granted them from God, or from themselues ; can they hurt as much as they wil ? Not so, quoth hee, for although that diuels be most mightie spirites, yet can they not hurt but per- 20 missuelie, or by some speciall dispensation : as when a man is fald into the state of an out-law, the Law dispensest with them that kill him, & the Prince excludes him from the protection of a subiect, so, when a man is a relaps from GOD and his Lawes, God withdrawes his prouidence 25 from watching ouer him, and authoriseth the deuil, as his instrument, to assault him and torment him, so that what-soever he dooth, is *Limitata potestate*, as one saithe ; insomuch as a haire cannot fall from our | heades, without the will of our heauenlie Father.

30

The Diuell could not deceiue *Achabs* prophets til he was licensed by God, nor exercise his tyranie ouer *Job*, till he had giuen him commission, nor enter into the heard of swine, til Christ bad them goe. Therefore need you not

¹⁰ these] there 93, 95.
^{so]} No 95 that] the 95.
heads, c.w.

¹⁵ Since . . .] *New par. Coll.*².

²³ kil 92^A.
²⁷ assault and 95.

¹⁹ Not
²⁹

³¹ *New par. Coll., Gro. Run on in Q.*

feare the diuell any whit, as long as you are in the fauor of
 God, who raineth him so straight, that except he let him
 loose he can doo nothing. This manlike proportion which
 I now retaine, is but a thinge of suffrance, granted vnto me
 5 to plague such men as hunt after strife, and are delighted
 with variance. It may be so very well, but whether haue
 you that skill to foretell thinges to come, that is ascribed
 vnto you? We haue (quoth he) sometimes: not that we
 are priuie to the eternall counsell of god, but for that by
 10 the sense of our ayrie bodies, we haue a more refined
 faculty of forsecing, than men possibly can haue, that are
 chained to such heauie earthlie moulder; or else for that
 by the incomparable pernicicie of those ayrie bodies, we
 not onely out-strip the swiftnes of men, beasts & birds,
 15 whereby we may be able to attain to the knowledge of
 thinges sooner than those that by the dulnes of their
 earthlie sense come a great waie behind vs. Hervnto may
 we adioine our long experience in the course of things
 from the begining of the world, which men want, and,
 20 therfore, cannot haue that deepe coniecture that we haue.
 Nor is our knowledge any more than coniecture: for pre-
 science only belongeth to God, & that gesse that we haue,
 proceedeth from the compared disposition of heauenly and
 earthlie bodies, by whose long obserued temperature we
 25 doo diuine manie times as it happens; & therefore doo we
 take vpon vs to prophecy, that we may purchase estimation
 to our names, and bringe men in admiration with that we
 doo, and so be counted for Gods. The myracles wee work
 are partly contriued by illusion, and partly assisted by that
 30 supernaturall skil we haue in the experiance of nature aboue
 all other Creatures. But against these illusions of your
 subtletie & vain terrors you inflict, what is our cheefe refuge?
 I shall be accounted a foolishe Diuell anon, if I bewray the
 secretes of our kingdome, as I haue begun: yet speak I no
 35 more than learned Clarkes haue written, andasmuch as
 they haue set downe will I shew thee.

Origin, in his treatise against *Celsus*, saith, there is
 12 nothing better for him | that is vexed with spirites, then
 the naming of *Iesu*, the true God, for he auoucheth, he hath
 seene diuers driuen out of mens bodies by that means.
Athanasius in his booke *De varijs questionibus* saith, The 5
 presentest remedie againste the inuasion of euill spirits, is
 the beginning of the 67. Psalme, *Exurgat Deus, & dissipentur inimici eius.* *Cyprian* counsels men to adiure
 spirites only by the name of the true God. Some hold
 that fire is a preseruatiue for this purpose, because when 10
 any spirit appeareth, the lights by little and little go out,
 as it were of their own accord, and the tapers are by degrees
 extinguisht. Others by inuocating vpon God, by the name
 of *Vehiculum ignis superioris*, and often rehearsing the
 Articles of our faith. A third sort are perswaded that the 15
 brandishing of swords is good for this purpose, because
Homer faineth, that *Vlisses*, sacrificing to his mother, wafted
 his sworde in the aire to chase the spirits from the blood
 of the sacrifice. And *Sybylla*, conducting *Aeneas* to hell,
 begins hir charmes in this sort. 20

*Procul O, procul este, prophani:
 Tuque invade viam, vaginaque eripe ferrum.*

Philostratus reporteth, that he and his companions meet-
 ing that Diuell which Artistes entitle *Apolonius*, as they
 came one night from banquetting, with such terms as he 25
 is curst in holy writ, they made him run awaie howling.
Manie in this case extoll perfume of *Calamentum paeonia*,
Menta palma Christi, and *Appius*. A number prefer the
 caryng of red Corall about them, or of *Arthemisia hyperi-
 con*, *Ruta verbena*: and to this effect manie doo vse the 30
 iyngling of keyes, the sound of the harp, and the clashing
 of armor. Some of old time put great superstition in
 characters, curiously engraued in their *Pentagonon*, but
 they are all vaine, & will doo no good, if they be otherwise

1 New par. Coll., Gro. Run on in Q. 2 was vexed 95. than
 92^A. 3 they naming 93. 12 tapers] takers 95. 22 tuvande 92^A :
 iu vande 92^{BC}, 93: in vande 95. 24 Diuells 93, 95.

vsed than as signes of couenant betweene the diuell and them. Nor doo I affirme al the rest to bee vnfallible prescriptions, though sometime they haue their vse: but that the onelie assured way to resist their attempts is prayer and
 5 faith, against which all the diuells in hell cannot preuaile. Inough, gentle spirit, I will importune thee no further, but commit this Supplication to thy care: which, if thou deliuier accordinglie, thou shalt at thy retурne haue more of my custome: for by that time I wil haue finished certain
 10 letters to diuers Orators & Poets, disperced in your dominions. That I as occation shal serue, but nowe I must take I 2^v
 leauue of you, for it is Terme time, and I haue some busines. A Gentleman (a frend of mine, that I neuer saw before) staies for me, and is like to be vndoone if I come not in to
 15 beare witnesse on his side: wherefore *Basilez manus*, till our next meeting.

G entle Reader, *tandem aliquando* I am at leasure to talke to thee. I dare say thou hast cald me a hundred times dolt for this senseles discourse: it is no matter,
 20 thou dost but as I haue doone by a number in my dayes. For who can abide a scuruie pedling Poet to plucke a man by the sleeue at euerie third step in *Paules Churcheyard*, & when he comes in to seruey his wares, theres nothing but purgations and vomits wrapt vppe in wast paper. It
 25 were verie good the dog whipper in *Paules* would haue a care of this in his vnsauery visitation euerie Saterday; for it is dangerous for suche of the Queenes liedge people, as shall take a viewe of them fasting.

Looke to it, you Booksellers and Stationers, and let not
 30 your shops be infected with any such goose gyblets or stinking garbadge, as the Iygs of newsmongers, and especiallie such of you as frequent Westminster hall, let them be circumspect what dunghill papers they bring thither: for one bad pamphlet is enough to raise a damp
 35 that may poison a whole Tearme, or at the least a number

2 infallible 95. 3 haue] hadde 93 : had 95. 5 against 93, 95.
 6 farther 92A. 8 thy] my 93, 95. 11 Thats 92A.

of poore Clyents, that haue no money to preuent ill aire by breaking their fasts ere they come thither. Not a base Inck-dropper, or scuruy plodder at *Nouerint*, but nailes his asses eares on euerie post, and comes off with long *Circumquaue* to the Gentlemen Readers, yea, the most 5 excrementorie dishlickers of learning are growne so valiant in impudencie, that now they set vp their faces (like Turks) of gray paper, to be spet at for siluer games in Finsburie fields. Whilst I am thus talking, me thinks I heare one say, What a fop is this, he entitles his booke *A Supplication* 10 to the *Diuell*, and doth nothing but raile on ideots, and tels a storie of the nature of Spirits. Haue patience, good sir, and weeble come to you by and by. Is it my Title you find fault with? Why, haue you not seen a Towne sur-named by the principall house in the towne, or a Nobleman 15 deriuie his Baronrie from a little village where he hath least land? So fareth it by me in christning of my
 I 3 Booke. | But some will obiect, whereto tends this discourse of diuels, or how is it induced? Forsooth, if thou wilt needs know my reson, this it is. I bring *Pierce Penilesse* 20 to question with the diuel, as a yoong nouice would talke with a great trauailer; who, carrieng an Englishmans appetite to enquire of news, will be sure to make what vse of him he maie, and not leaue anie thing vnaskt, that he can resolute him of. If then the diuell be tedious in 25 discoursing, impute it to *Pierce Penilesse* that was importunate in demanding; or if I haue not made him so secret or subtil in his Art, as Diuels are woont, let that of *Lactantius* bee mine excuse, *lib. 2. cap. 16. de Origenis errore*, where he saith, the diuels haue no power to lie 30 to a iust manne, and if they adiure them by the maiestie of the high God, they will not onlie confesse themselues to be Diuels, but also tell their names as they are. *Deus bone*, what a vaine am I fallen into? what, an Epistle to the

3 Jack-dropper 92^A. nailes] vailes 92^A. 5 Gentleman 92^{CB}. yea] ye 93, 95. 6 dishlickers] dislikers 92^A. 7 impudence 92^{AB}. 8 spit 93, 95. 13 It is 93, 95. 18 discourse] discouerie 92^{AB}. 19 you will 93, 95. 29 cap.] chap. 92^B &c.

Readers in the end of thy booke? Out vpon thee for
 an arrent blocke, where learndst thou that wit? O sir,
 holde your peace: a felon neuer comes to his answere
 before the offence be committed. Wherfore, if I in the
 5 beginning of my Book should haue come off with a long
 Apologie to excuse my selfe, it were all one as if a theefe,
 going to steale a horse, should deuise by the waie as he
 went, what to speake when he came at the gallows. Here
 is a crosse waie, and I thinke it good heere to part. Far-
 10 well, farewell, good Parenthesis, and commende mee to Ladie
 Vanitie, thy mistres. Now, *Pierce peniles*, if for a parting
 blow thou hast ere a tricke in thy budget more then
 ordinarie, bee not daintie of it, for a good Patron will
 pay for all. I, where is he? *Promissis quilibet diues esse*
 15 *Potest*. But cap and thankes is all our Courtiers payment:
 wherfore, I would counsell my frends to be more con-
 siderate in their Dedications, and not cast away so many
 months labour on a clown that knowes not how to vse
 a Scholer: for what reason haue I to bestow any of my
 20 wit vpon him, that wil best own one of his wealth vpon me?
 Alas, it is easie for a goodlie tall fellow that shineth in
 his silkes, to come and out face a poore simple Pedant
 in a thred bare cloake, and tell him his booke is pretty,
 but at this time he is not prouided for him: marrie, about
 25 twoe or three daies hence if he come that waie, his Page
 shall say he is not within, or else he is so busie with my
 L. How-call-ye-him, and my L. What-call-ye-him, that [he I 3x
 may not be spoken withall. These are the common
 courses of the world, which euerie man priuatlie murmurs
 30 at, but none dares openlie vpbraid, because all Artists
 for the most part are base minded and like the *Indians*,
 that haue store of gold & pretious stones at command,
 yet are ignorant of their value, & therfore let the Spaniards,

8 speake 92^{BC}. at] to 95. 11 Now . . .] *New par. Coll., Gro. Run on in Q.* 16 would] could 95. 18 on] vpon 92^{AB}. 19 of my] 92^{AB}: om. 92^C &c. 20 on him 92^C &c. 21 easie] an easie matter 92^{AB}. shines 92^A. 27 How-call-ye-him] what-call-ye-him 95. 30-1 because the most Artists are base minded : like 92^A.

the Englishmen and euerie one loade their ships with them without molestation. So they, enioying and possessing the puritie of knowledge (a treasure farre richer than the Indian Mines), let euerie proude *Thraso* be partaker of their perfections, repaieng them no profit ; and gylde him- 5 selfe with the titles they giue him, when he wil scarce returne them a good word for their labor : giue an Ape but a nut, & he will look your head for it ; or a dog a bone, and hele wag his taile : but giue me one of my yoong Maisters a booke, and he will put of his hat & blush, 10 and so go his waie.

Yes, now I remember me, I lie ; for I know him that had thanks for three yeares worke, and a gentleman that bestowed much cost in refining of musicke, and had scarce Fidlers wages for his labor. We want an *Aretine* here 15 among vs, that might strip these golden asses out of their gaie trappings, and after he had ridden them to death with railing, leauе them on the dunghill for carion. But I will write to his ghost by my carrier, and I hope hele repaire his whip, and vse it against our English Peacockes, that 20 painting themselues with church spoils, like mightie mens sepulchers, haue nothing but Atheisme, schisme, hypocrisie, & vainglory, like rotten bones lie lurking within them. O how my soule abhors these buckram giants, that hauing 25 an outward face of honor set vpon them by flatterers and parasites, haue their inward thoughtes stuft with strawe and feathers, if they were narrowelie sifted.

Far be it, bright stars of Nobilitie, and glistring attendants on the true *Diana*, that this my speech shoulde be anie way iniurious to your glorious magnificencie : for in 30 you liue those sparks of *Augustus* liberalitie, that neuer sent anie awaie emptie ; & Science seauenfold throne, well nigh ruined by ryot and auarice, is mightilie supported by your plentifull larges, which makes Poets to sing such

I with them] 92^A : om. 92^B &c. 11 waie : yes, now Q. : *New par. Coll.*,
Gro. 17 with] om. 93, 95. 23 lie] om. 92^A. 25 flatterrs 92^C.
28 *New par. Coll., Gro.* Run on in 92^A &c. 32 awaie] way 92^A.

goodlie himnes of your praise, as no eniuious posteritie may forget. But from generall fame, let me digres to my priuate experiance, and with a toong vnworthy to ^{I 4} name a name of such worthines, affectionateli emblason to the 5 eies that woonder, the matchlesse image of Honor, and magnificent rewarder of vertue, *Ioues Eagle-borne Ganimed*, thrice noble *Amyntas*. In whose high spirit, such a Deitie of wisdom appeereth, that if *Homer* were to write his *Odissea* new (where, vnder the person of *Vlysses*, he 10 describeth a singular man of perfection, in whom all ornaments both of peace and warre are assembled in the height of their excelence), he need no other instance to augment his conceipt, than the rare carriage of his honorable minde. Manye writers and good wits are giuen to commend their 15 patrons and Benefactors, some for prowesse, some for policie, others for the glorie of their Ancestrie and exceeding bountie and liberalitie: but if my vnable pen should euer enterprise such a continuate taske of praise, I woulde embowell a number of those wind pust bladders, and dis- 20 furnish their bald-pates of the periwigs Poets haue lent them, that so I might restore glorie to his right inheritance, and these stoln Titles to their true owners: which, if it would so fall out (as time maie worke all thinges), the aspir- 25 ing nettles, with their shadie toppes, shal no longer ouer- dreep the best hearbs, or keep them from the smiling aspect of the Sunn, that liue & thriue by his comfortable beames; none but Desert should sit in Fames grace, none but *Hector* be remembred in the chronicles of Prowesse, none but thou, most curteous *Amyntas*, be the second misticall 30 argument of the knight of the Red-crosse.

Oh decus atque æui gloria summa tui.

And heere (heauenlie *Spencer*) I am most highlie to acuse thee of forgetfulnes, that in that honourable catalogue of our English *Heroes*, which insueth the conclusion of thy

5 eyes of wonder 92^A. 12 excellencie 93, 95. instanc 92^C.
 23 wold 92^{BC}. 26 his] om. 92^A. beames] heauines 95. 29
 mysticall] musicall 92^A.

famous Fairie Queene, thou woldst let so speciall a piller
of Nobilitie passe vnsaluted. The verie thought of his
far deriued discent, & extraordinarie parts, wherewith he
astonieith the world, and drawes all harts to his loue, would
haue inspired thy forewearied Muse with new furie to pro- 5
ceede to the next triumphs of thy statelie Goddesse : but
as I, in fauor of so rare a scholler, suppose, with this coun-
sell he restraind his mention in this first part, that he might
with full saile proceed to his due commendations in the
second. Of this occasion long since I happened to frame 10
¶ a son-net, which, being wholie intended to the reuerence
of this renoumed Lord (to whom I owe all the vtmoste
powers of my loue and dutie), I meante heere for variety of
stile to insert.

15

Perusing yesternight, with idle eyes,
The Fairy Singers stately tuned verse,
And viewing after Chap-mens wonted guise,
What strange contents the title did rehearse ;
I streight leapt ouer to the latter end,
Where like the queint Comædians of our time, 20
That when their Play is doone do fal to ryme,
I found short lines, to sundry Nobles pend ;
Whom he as speciall Mirrours singled fourth,
To be the Patrons of his Poetry :
I read them all, and reuerenc't their worth, 25
Yet wondred he left out thy memory.
But therefore gest I he supprest thy name,
Bccause few words might not cōprise thy fame.

Beare with me gentle Poet, though I conceiue not aright
of thy purpose, or be too inquisitue into the intent of thy 30
obliuion : for, how euer my conjecture may misse the
cushion, yet shal my speech sauour of friendship, though it
be not alied to iudgement.

Tantum hoc molior, in this short digression, to acquaint
our countreymen that liue out of the Echo of the Court, 35

3 far] om. 93, 95.

9 commendation 95.

12 renowned 95.

with a common knowledge of his inualuable vertues, and shew my selfe thankfull (in some part) for benefits receiued: which since words may not counteruaile, that are the vsuall lip labour of euerie idle discourser, I conclude with that of
5 *Ouid*:

*Accipe per longos tibi qui deseruiat annos,
Accipe qui pura nouit amare fide.*

And if my zeale and duty (though all to meane to please)
may by any industrie be reformed to your gratiouse liking,
10 I submit the simplicitie of my indeuours to your seruice,
which is, all my performance may profer, or my abilitie
performe.

*Præbeat Alcinoi poma benignus ager,
Officium pauper numeret studiumque fidemque.*

15 And so I breake off this endlesse argument of speech
abruptlie.

FINIS.

13 *beginningnus 92^A.*

17 *For colophon in 95 see Introductory Note.*

STRANGE NEWES OF THE INTERCEPTING CERTAINE LETTERS

Entry in the Stationers' Register:

xij^o die Januarij [1592-3]

John Danter Entred for his copie vnder th[e h]ande of master Styrrop, a booke intituled The Apologie of Pierce Pennylesse or strange newes of the intercepting certen letters, and a convoy of verses as they were goinge to victuall the Lowe Cuntries. . . . vj^d S./
(*S. R.*, ed. Arber, II. 624.)

Editions: (1) Early:

1592 (A). Strange Newes, | Of the intercept-ing certaine Letters, and a Con-|uoy of Verses, as they were going Priuile to | victuall the Low Countries. | *Vnda impellitur vnda.* | By *Tho. Nashe Gentleman.* | [ornament] | Printed 1592.

No colophon. Octavo. Not paged.

Collation; A-L⁴, M². (A 1) Title, *v.* blank. *A 2* ‘To the most copious Carminist...’ *Ital. and Rom.* R-T. The Epistle | Dedication. (A 4)^v ‘To the Gentlemen Readers.’ *Rom. and Ital.* R-T. (on B 1) To the Reader. (from B 1^v) The Epistle | to the Reader. B 3^v blank. (B 4) The foure Letters Confuted. *Rom. and Ital.* with a few passages in Black Letter. R-T. Foure Letters | Confuted. C. ‘Heere beginneth the first Epistle...’ Some other cross headings which are printed in larger character than the text are not here noticed.

Signatures in Roman except A 2, A 3, G 3, which are in Italic. The figure 2 of D 2 is inverted. Fourth leaves not signed.

Catch-words: A 2. *Yea,* A 3. *from* B 1. *He C 1.* liuerey
 D 1. A E 1. If F 1. (cham-)ber G 1. com-(mitted) H 1. thou
 I 1. (vn-)thrifts K 1. *Vtere* L 1. knows M 1. than

Copy used: That in the British Museum (96. b. 16. (3).)

1592 (B). ‘Strange Newes . . . Tho. Nashe Gentlemen. Printed at London by John Danter, dwelling in Hosier Lane neere Holburne Conduit. 1592. 4to, 46 leaves.’ (Hazlitt, *Handbook*, p. 413.)

I have not seen a copy of this edition. It is the one from which Collier printed and appears to be a reissue of the first with a new title-page and a substituted passage in the ‘Epistle Dedicatore.’ With the exception of the imprint, Collier’s title-page corresponds in wording to that of -92^A, but reads, ‘the victuall’ for ‘to victuall.’

1593 (A). Strange Newes, | Of the intercept-ing certaine Letters, and a Con-juoy of Verses, as they were going Priuile to | victuall the Low Countries. | *Vnda impellitur vnda.* | By *Tho. Nashe*, Gentleman. | [device] | Printed at London by *John Danter*, dwelling in | Hosier-Lane neere Holburne | Conduit, 1593. (From Grosart’s reprint of the copy in the Huth Library.)

I have not seen this. It appears to be a reissue of -92^B, with a new title-page, or perhaps merely new date. Huth Cat. has ‘Nashe Gentleman.’

1593 (B). Strange Newes, | Of the intercept-ing certaine Letters, and a Con-juoy of Verses, as they were going Priuile to | victuall the Low Countries. | *Vnda impellitur vnda.* | By *Tho. Nashe* Gentleman. | [device: Danter’s, with motto ‘Aut nunc aut nunquam.’] | Printed at London by *John Danter*, dwelling in | Hosier-Lane neere Holburne | Conduit, 1593. (From the facsimile in ‘Catalogue of Original and Early Editions of some of the Poetical and Prose Works of English Writers. . . .’ Grolier Club, New York, 1893, page 165.)

The description given is as follows: ‘Quarto. Second edition. Collation: One leaf without signature; B-M 2, in fours. Title . . . one leaf. On the verso of the title begins the epistle “To the Gentlemen.”

Readers.", which ends on B 3 (verso blank). The work, B 4-M 2; on the verso, a sonnet and "Obseruations for the Readers of this booke".

If this is correct, and the book has a reputation for accuracy, the preliminary matter must differ from that of any other edition known to me in not having the dedication 'To the most copious Carminist . . .', and in having the first page of the Epistle 'To the Gentlemen Readers' on the verso of the title, instead of on (A 4)^v as in earlier editions, or on (? 2)^v as in -93^C and -93^D.

1593 (C). *THE | Apologie of Pierce | Pennileffe. | OR | Strange Newes, Of the intercepting | certaine Letters, and a Conuoy of Verfes, as they were | going Priuileie to victuall the Lowe | Countries. | Vnda impellitur vnda. | By Tho. Nashe Gentleman. | [device as -93^B] | Printed at London by John Danter, dwelling in Hofier | Lane neere Holburne Conduit, | 1593.*

No colophon. Octavo. Not paged.

Collation: Two leaves, unsigned or signatures cut off, B-L⁴, M². (?) Title. (?)^v 'To the most copious Carminist . . .' Rom., *Black Letter and Ital.* R-T. (on (? 2)) THE EPISTLE DEDICATORIE. Ends on (? 2) with the word 'frangas,' the signature of Nashe, if any, being cut off. (? 2)^v 'To the Gentlemen. Readers.' From B onwards this edition is identical with -92^A.

Catch-words: Those of (?)^v and (? 2) are cut off in the copies seen, if there ever were any. (? 2)^v I Rest as in -92^A.

Copy used: That in the Bodleian Library (Wood, 721).

1593 (D). *THE | Apologie of Pierce | Pennileffe. | OR | Strange Newes, . . . Printed at London by John Danter, and are to be folde | by William Barley, at his shop in Gratioues-street | ouer against Leaden-hall. | 1593.*

Except for the imprint, this is identical with -93^C.

Copy used: That in the Bodleian Library (Malone, 567).

(2) *Modern Editions:*

1870 (Coll.) *Strange Newes . . . By Tho. Nashe . . . 1592. (Miscellaneous Tracts Temp. Eliz. & Jac. I.)*

Edited by J. P. Collier from edition -92^B.

1883-4 (Gro.) The Complete Works of Thomas Nashe . . .
edited by A. B. Grosart. Vol. ii, pp. 171-290.

From a copy of edition -93^A in the Huth Library.

1903. (The present edition.)

From the copy of edition -92^A in the British Museum (96. b. 16. (3).)
A copy of edition -93^C in the Bodleian Library (Wood, 721) has been
collated for the preliminary matter.

*Note on the Editions*¹:

As stated above, I have only seen the first, fifth, and sixth of these, but in the particular case this appears to be of little importance, especially as two of the others have been already printed from.

From sig. B onwards, the sheets of -92^A, -93^C, and -93^D are identical, and we may, I think, fairly conclude the same to have been the case in the intermediate editions. Collier's and Grosart's reprints exhibit however a certain number of minor variations, including in the case of the latter the addition of a side-note on K 2. On the chance therefore that these do really represent a different setting-up of type, I have recorded all the variant readings in Grosart's text, noting whether they occur, as the great majority do, in Collier's also. Collier's other variants, which are numerous, I have passed over in silence.

With regard to the preliminary matter on sheet A. As will be seen from the text, in the 'Epistle Dedicatore' of -92^B and later editions, a new paragraph replaces a somewhat libellous one which is found in -92^A. In -92^B pages A 2 and A 2^v appear, if we can trust the spelling of Collier's text, to have been re-set, the rest of the introductory matter perhaps not. Grosart's text appears to represent the same setting-up as Collier's, indicating that for -93^A no change was made except that of the date on the title-page.

¹ Certain of these 'editions' would, I doubt not, be more properly called 'issues,' but as I have not seen them all, I prefer to use a term the meaning of which is not quite so fixed.

In -93^B the dedication was omitted and the first page of the epistle 'To the Gentlemen Readers' (originally A 4^v) was printed on the back of the title, reducing the preliminary matter to one leaf, or to one leaf preceded by a blank.

In -93^C and -93^D the dedication of -92^B 'To the most copious Carminist' is restored, being now printed in small characters on two pages instead of five, beginning on the back of the title and ending at the foot of (? 2). On (? 2)^v is the first page of the epistle 'To the Gentlemen Readers' in a different setting-up to that of -92^A, but identical in wording.

As the change in the dedication which has been already referred to seems less to resemble a voluntary correction than an enforced one, I have followed -92^A, believing that to represent what the author intended to write.

Strange Newes,
Of the intercept-
ing certaine Letters, and a Con-
voy of Verses, as they were going Privily to
victuall the Low Countries.

Under suspension.

By Two. Nashe Gentleman.



Printed 1592.

To the most copious Carminist

A 2

of our time, and famous persecutor of *Priscian*, his
verie friend Maister Apis lapis : Tho. Nashe wish-
eth new strings to his old tawnie Purse, and
5 all honourable increase of acquain-
tance in the Cellar.

G entle M. William, that learned writer Rhenish wine
& Sugar, in the first booke of his Comment vpon
Red-noses, hath this saying : veterem ferendo in-
10 iuriam inuitas nouam ; which is as much in English as one
Cuppe of nipitaty puls on another. In moyst consideration
wherof, as also in zealous regard of that high countenance
you shew unto Schollers, I am bolde, in steade of new Wine,
to carowse to you a cuppe of newes : Which if your Worship
15 (according to your wonted Chaucerisme) shall accept in good
part, Ile bee your daily Orator to pray that that pure san-
guine complexion of yours may neuer be famisht with potte-
lucke, that you may tast till your last gaspe, and liue to see
the confusion of both your speciaill enemies, Small Beere and
20 Grammer rules.

It is not vnknowne to report, what a famous pottle-pot
Patron you haue beene to olde Poets in your daies, & how
many pounds you haue spent (and, as it were, throwne into
the fire) vpon the durt of wisedome, called Alcumie : | Yea, A 21
25 you haue beene such an infinite Mecenas to learned men, that

23 &c. In editions 92^B &c., for the passage 'Yea, you haue beene ... red letters,'
the following is substituted : *Yea, you are such an infinite Mecenas to learned
men, that there is not that morsell of meate they can carue you, but you will
eate for their sakes, and accept very thankefully.* Think not, though under
correction of your boone companionship, I am disposd to be a little pleasant,
I condeme you of any immoderati either in eating or drinking, for I knowe
your governement and carriage to be every way Canonically. Verily, verily, all
poore Schollers acknowledge you as their patron, prouiditore, and supporter, for
there cannot a thredbare Cloake sooner peepe forth, but you strait presse it to
be an outbrother of your bounty: three decayed Students you kept attending
vpon you a long time. (Printed from 93^C, where, however, it is in Roman.)

not any that belong to them (as Sumners, and who not) but haue tasted of the coole stremes of your liberalitie.

I would speake in commendation of your hospitalitie likewise, but that it is chronicled in the Archdeacons Court, and the fruities it brought foorth (as I gesse) are of age to speake 5 for themselues. Why should vertue bee smothered by blinde circumstance? An honest man of Saffron Walden kept three sonnes at the Vniuersitie together a long time; and you kept three maides together in your house a long time. A charitable deed, & worthie to be registred in red letters. 10

Shall I presume to dilate of the grauitie of your round cap, and your dudgen dagger? It is thought they will make you be cald vpon shortlie to be Alderman of the Stilliard. And thatts well remembred; I heard saie, when this last Terme was remooued to Hartford, you fell into a great studie 15 and care by your selfe, to what place the Stilliard should be remooued; I promise you trulie it was a deepe meditation, and such as might well haue beseemed Eldertons parliament of noses to haue sit vpon.

A Tauerne in London, onelie vpon the motion, mourned 20 all in blacke, and forbare to girt hir temples with iuie, because the grandame of good fellowship was like to depart from amongst them. And I wonder verie much, that you sampsownd not your selfe into a consumption with the profound cogitation of it. 25

Diù viuas in amore iocísque, whatsoeuer you do, beware of keeping diet. Sloth is a sinne, and one sinne (as one poison) must be expelled with another. What can he doe better than A 3 hath nothing to do, than fal a drinking to keep | him from idlenessse? 30

Fah, me thinks my ieasts begin alreadie to smell of the caske, with talking so much of this liquid prouinder.

In earnest thus; There is a Doctor and his Fart that haue kept a foule stinking stirre in Paules Churchyard; I crie him mercie, I slandered him, he is scarce a Doctor 35 till he hath done his Acts: this dodipoule, this didopper, this

professed poetical braggart, hath raild vpon me, without wit or art, in certaine foure penniworth of Letters and three farthing-worth of Sonnets; now do I meane to present him and Shakerley to the Queens foole-taker for coatch-horses: 5 for two that draw more equallie in one Oratoriall yoke of vaine-glorie, there is not vnder heauen.

What saie you, Maister Apis lapis, will you with your eloquence and credit shield me from carpers? Hauue you anie odde shreds of Latine to make this letter-munger 10 a cockscombe of?

It stands you in hande to arme your selfe against him; for he speaks against Connicatchers, and you are a Connicatcher, as Connatching is diuided into three parts; the Verser, the Setter, and the Barnacle.

15 A Setter I am sure you are not; for you are no Musitian: nor a Barnacle; for you neuer were of the order of the Barnardines: but the Verser I cannot acquite you of, for M. Vaux of Lambeth brings in sore euidence of a breakefast you wonne of him one morning at an vnlawful game cald 20 riming. What lies not in you to amend, plaie the Doctor and defend.

A fellow that I am to talke with by and by, being told that his Father was a Rope-maker, excused the matter after this sort; And hath neuer saint had reprobate to his Father? 25 They are his owne wordes, hee cannot goe | from them. You ^{A 3} see heere hee makes a Reprobate and a Ropemaker, voces conuertibiles. Go too, take example by him to wash out durt with inke, and run vp to the knees in the channell, if you bee once wetshod. You are amongst graue Doctors, and men of 30 iudgement in both Lawes euerie daie: I pray aske them the question in my absence, whether such a man as I haue describd this Epistler to be, one that hath a good handsome pickerdeuant, and a prettie leg to studie the Ciuill Law with, that hath made many prope, rimes of the olde cut in his daies, 35 and deserued infinitely of the state by extolling himselfe and his two brothers in euerie booke he writes: whether (I saie) such a famous piller of the Presse, now in the fourteenth or

fifteenth yeare of the raigne of his Rhetorike, giuing mony to haue this his illiterat Pamphlet of Letters printed (wheras others haue monie giuen them to suffer them selues to come in Print) it is not to bee counted as flat simonie, and be liable to one and the same penaltie ?

5

I tell you, I meane to trounce him after twentie in the hundred, and haue a bout with him with two staues and a pike for this geare.

If he get any thing by the bargaine, lette what soever I write hence-forward bee condemned to wrappe bumbast in. 10

Carouse to me good lucke, for I am resolutely bent ; the best bloud of the brothers shall pledge me in vineger. O would thou hadst a quaffing boule, which, like Gawens scull, should containe a pecke, that thou mightst swappe off a hartie draught to the successe of this voyage.

15

By what soever thy visage holdeth most pretious I beseech thee, by Iohn Dauiers soule and the blew Bore in the Spittle A 4 I coniure thee, to draw out thy purse, and giue me | nothing for the dedication of my Pamphlet.

Thou art a good fellow I know, and hadst rather spend 20 ieasts than monie. Let it be the taske of thy best tearmes, to safeconduct this booke through the enemies countrey.

Proceede to cherish thy surpassing carminicall arte of memorie with full cuppes (as thou dost) : let Chaucer bee new scourd against the day of battaile, and Terence come but in 25 nowe and then with the snuffe of a sentence, and Dictum puta, Weele strike it as dead as a doore naile ; Haud teruntij estimo, We haue cattes meate and dogges meate inough for these mungrels. Howeuer I write merrilie, I loue and admire thy pleasant wittie humor, which no care 30 or crosse can make vnconuersable. Stil be constant to thy content, loue poetry, hate pedantisme. Vade, vale, caue ne titubes, mandataq; frangas.

Thine intirely,

Tho. Nashe. | 35

⁷ about 92^A, 93^C. 34 *Thine . . . Nashe.] Cut off in copies seen of 93^C and 93^D, if it was ever there.*

To the Gentlemen
Readers.

A 4^v

GEntlemen, the strong fayth you haue conceiu'd, that
I would do workes of supererrogation in answering
the Doctor, hath made mee breake my daye with
other important busines I had, and stand darting of quils
a while like the Porpentine.

I know there want not welwillers to my disgrace, who
say my onely Muse is contention; and other, that with
10 *Tiberius Cæsar* pretending to see in the darke, talke of
strange obiectes by them discouered in the night, when in
truth they are nothing else but the glimmering of their eies.

I will not holde the candle to the Deuill, vnmaske my
holiday Muse to enuie; but if any such deepe insigthed
15 detracter will challenge mee to whatsocuer quiet aduenture
of Art, wherein he thinkes mee least conuersant,hee shall
finde that I am *Tam Mercurio quam Marti*, a Scholler in
some thing else but contention.

If idle wittes will needes tye knottes on smooth bul-
20 rushes with their tongues, faith, the worlde might thinke
I had little to attend, if I should goe about to vnloose
them with my penne. |

I cannot tell how it comes to passe, but in these ill eide B 1
daies of ours, euery man delights with *Ixion* to beget
25 children of clouds, digge for Pearles in dunghils, and wrest
oyle out of iron.

Poore *Pierce Pennilcsse* haue they turnd to a coniuring
booke, for there is not that line in it, with which they doo
not seeke to raise vp a Ghost, and, like the hog that con-
30 uerts the sixth part of his neate into bristels, so haue they
conuerted sixe parts of my booke into bitternes.

Aretine, in a Commedie of his, wittily complaineth that

5 mee to breake 93^c, Coll., Gro.

vpstart Commenters, with their Annotations and gloses, had extorted that sense and Morall out of *Petrarch*, which if *Petrarch* were aliue, a hundred Strappadoes might not make him confesse or subscribe too ; So may I complaine that rash heads, vpstart Interpreters, haue extorted & rakte 5 that vnreuerent meaning out of my lines, which a thousand deaths cannot make mee ere grant that I dreamd off.

To them that are abused by their owne ialous collections and no determined trespassse of mine, this aduice, by the way of example, will I giue.

One comming to Doctour *Perne* on a time, and telling him hee was miserably raidl on such a day in a Sermon at Saint Maries in *Cambridge*, I, but, quoth he (in his puling manner of speaking) did he name me, did he name me ? I warrant you, goe and aske him, and hee will say hee 15 meant not mee ; So they that are vngroundedly offended at any thing in *Pierce Pennilesse*, first let them looke if I did name them ; if not, but the matter hangeth in suspence, let them send to mee for my exposition, and not buy it at the seconde hand, and I doe not doubt but they will be 20 throughly satisfied. |

B 1^v Hee that wraps himselfe in earth, like the *Foxe*, to catch birds, may haps haue a heauy cart go ouer him before he be aware, and breake his backe.

A number of Apes may get the glowworme in the night 25 and thinke to kindle fire with it, because it glisters so, but, God wote, they are beguiled, it proues in the end to be but fools fire ; the poore worme alone with their blowing is warmed, they starud for colde whiles their wood is vntoucht. Who but a Foppe wil labour to anathomize a Flye ? 30 Fables were free for any bondman to speake in old time, as *Aesope* for an instance ; their allusion was not restrained to any particular humor of spite, but generally applyed to a generall vice. Now a man may not talke of a dog, but it is surmised he aimes at him that giueth the dog 35

in his Crest ; hee cannot name straw, but hee must plucke
 a wheate sheaffe in pieces, *Intelligendo faciunt ut nihil
 intelligant.*

What euer they be that thus persecute Art (as the
 5 Alcumists are said to persecute Nature) I would wish
 them to rebate the edge of their wit, and not grinde their
 colours so harde ; hauing founde that which is blacke, let
 them not, with our forenamed Gold-falsifiers, seeke for
 a substance that is blacker than black, or angle for frogs
 10 in a cleare fountaine.

From the admonition of these vncurteous misconsterers,
 I come to *The kilcow champion of the three brethren* ; he
 forsooth wil be the first that shal giue *Pierce Penilesse*
 a *non placet*.

15 It is not inough that hee bepist his credite, about twelue
 yeeres ago, with *Three proper and wittie familiar letters*,
 but still he must be running on the *letter*, and abusing the
 Queenes English without pittie or mercie. |

Bee it knowne vnto you (Christian Readers) this man B 2
 20 is a forestaller of the market of fame, an ingrosser of glorie,
 a mountebancke of strange wordes, a meere marchant of
 babies and conny-skins.

Hold vp thy hand, *G. H.*, thou art heere indited for an
 incrocher vpon the fee-simple of the Latin, an enemie to
 25 Carriers, as one that takes their occupation out of their
 hands, and dost nothing but transport letters vp and
 downe in thy owne commendation, a conspiratour and
 practiser to make Printers rich, by making thy selfe
 ridiculous, a manifest briber of Bookesellers and Stationers,
 30 to helpe thee to sell away thy bookees (whose impression
 thou paidst for) that thou mayst haue money to goe home
 to Trinitie Hall to discharge thy commons.

I say no more but Lord haue mercie vpon thee, for thou
 art falne into his hands that will plague thee.

35 Gentlemen, will you be instructed in the quarrell that

6 rebate] abate *Coll., Gro.* 11 misconsterers. I come Q. 18 without Q.
 21 mounte bancke Q. 25 oceupation Q.

hath causd him lay about him with his penne and incckorne so couragiously? About two yeeres since (a fatal time to familiar Epistles) a certayne Theologicall gimpamoto, a demie diuine, no higher than a Tailors pressing iron, brother to this huge booke-beare, that writes himselfe 5
One of the Emperour Iustinians Courtiers, tooke vpon him to set his foote to mine, and ouer-crow mee with comparative tearmes. I protest I neuer turnd vp any cowsheard to looke for this scarabe flye. I had no conceit as then of discouering a breed of fooles in the three 10 brothers bookes: marry, when I beheld ordinance planted on edge of the pulpit against me, & that there was no remedy but the blind Vicar would needs let flie at me with his Churchdore keies, & curse me with bel, book, and B 2^v candle, because in my Alphabet of Idiots I had | ouer- 15 skipt the Hs, what could I doe but draw vpon him with my penne, and defende my selfe with it and a paper buckler as well as I might?

Say I am as verie a Turke as hee that three yeeres ago ranne vpon ropes, if euer I speld eyther his or anie 20 of his kindreds name in reproch, before hee barkt against mee as one of the enemies of the Lambe of God, and fetcht allusions out of the Butterly to debase mee.

Heere beginneth the fray. I vpbraid godly predication with his wicked conuersation, I squirt inke into his decayed 25 eyes with iniquitie to mend their diseased sight, that they may a little better descend into my schollership and learning. The Ecclesiastical duns, in stead of recovery, waxeth starke blind thereby (as a preseruatiue to some, is poysone to others): hee gets an olde Fencer, his brother, to be 30 reuengd on me for my Phisicke ; who, flourishing about my eares with his two hand sworde of Oratory and Poetry, peraduenture shakes some of the rust of it on my shoulders, but otherwise strikes mee not but with the shadowe of it, which is no more than a flappe with the false scabberd 35 of contumelie: whether am I in this case to arme my selfe against his intent of iniurie, or sitte still with my

finger in my mouth, in hope to bee one of simplicities martyrs?

A quest of honorable minded Caualiers go vpon it, and if they shall find by the Law of armes or of ale, that I,
 5 beeing first prouokt, am to bee inioynde to the peace, or be sworne true seruant to cowardize & patience, when wrong presseth mee to the warres ; then wil I bind my selfe prentise to a Cobler, and fresh vnderlay all those writings of mine that haue trodde awrie. |

- 10 Be aduertised (gentle audience) that the *Doctors* pro- B 3
 ceedings haue thrust vpon mee this sowterly Metaphor, who, first contriuing his confutation in a short Pamphlet of six leaues, like a paire of summer pumps, afterward (winter growing on) clapt a paire of double soales on it
 15 like a good husband, added eight sheets more, and prickt those sheets or soales, as full of the hob-nayles of reprehension as they could sticke.

It is not those his new clowted startops iwis, that shall carry him out of the durt.

- 20 Sweet Gentlemen, be but indifferent, and you shal see mee desperate. Heere lies my hatte, and there my cloake, to which I resemble my two Epistles, being the vpper garments of my booke, as the other of my body :

Saint Fame for mee, and thus I runne
 vpon him.

The foure Letters
Confuted.

B 4

5 **G**Abriel, and not onely *Gabriel*, but *Gabrielissime Gabriel*, no Angell but ANGELOS, id est, *Nuntius*, a Fawneguest Messenger twixt Maister *Bird* and Maister *Demetrius*: Behold, here stands he that will make it good, on thy foure Letters bodie, that thou art a filthy vaine foole. Thy booke I commend; as very well printed: and like wondrous well, because all men dislike it.

10 I agree with thee that there are in it *some matters of Note*, for there are a great many barefoote rimes in it, that goe as iumpe as a Fiddle with euery ballet-makers note: and if according to their manner, you had tun'd them ouer the head, it had beene nere the worse, for by that meanes 15 you might haue had your name chaunted in euery corner of the streete, then the which there can be nothing more melodiouslie *addoulce* to your *deuine Entelechy*. O they would haue trowld off brauely to the tune of *O man in Desperation*, and, like *Marenzos* Madrigals, the mournefull 20 note naturally haue affected the miserable Dittie.

Doe you knowe your owne misbegotten bodgery | Ente- B 4^v
lechy and *addoulce*? With these two Hermophrodite phrases, being halfe Latin and halfe English, hast thou puld out the very guts of the inkehorne.

25

Letters.

To all curteous mindes that will vouchsafe the reading.

C:mment.

In their absence, this be deliuered to *Megge Curtis* in Shorditch, to stop mustard pots with.

The particular Contents.

L. *A Præface to courteous mindes.*
C. As much to say as Proface, much good do it you,
would it were better for you.

L. *A Letter to M. Emanuel Demetrius, with a sonnet 5 thereto annexed.*
C. That is, as it were a purgation vpon a vomit, buskins
vpon pantophles.

L. *A Letter to M. Bird.*
C. Or little matter wrapt vp in many words. 10
L. *A Letter to euerie fauorable and indifferent Reader.*
C. *Id est,* An exhortation to all Readers, that they shall
reade nothing but his works.

L. *Another letter to the same, extorted after the rest.*
C. By interpretation, a Letter whereof his inuention had 15
a hard stoole, and yet it was for his ease, though not for
his honestie: and so forth, as the Text shall direct you at
large. |

C 1

Heere beginneth the first Epistle
and first Booke of *Orator Gabriell to the Catilinaries or Philippicks.*

5 *Wherein is diuulged, that venum is venum and will infect, that that which is done cannot (de facto) be vndone, that fauour is a curteous Reader, and G. H. your thankfull debtor.*

A Comment vpon the Text.

10 **T**He learned Orator in this Epistle taketh precise order he will not be too eloquent, and yet it shall be (L,) as well for enditing vnworthie to be published, as for publishing vnworthie to be endited.

15 C. He had many aduersaries in those times that he wrote, amongst the which Cloth-breeches and Velvet-breeches (his fathers pouerty, and his owne pride, were none of the meanest).

20 After them start vp one *Pierce Pennilesse*, and hee likewise was a stumbling blocke in his way. (Penurie not long tarries after pride; pray all the ropes in *Saffron Walden* that I do not prophesie. Amen, Amen, quoth M. Bird and M. Demetrius.)

25 Hee forbeares to speake much in this place of the one or the other, because his letters are more forward to accuse them than their owne books to condemne them; yet for a touch by the way, hee talks that Greene is no liueray for this winter, it is pitifully blasted and faded in euerie C 1^r meade, by the strong breath of his barbarisme.

30 Hee hath a twitch at *Pierce Pennilesse* too, at the parting stile, and tearms him the *Devils Orator by profession, and his Dames Poet by practise*: wherein mee thinks (the surreuerence of his works not impaired) he hath verie highly ouershottte himselfe: for no more is *Pierce Penni-*

35 prophesie,) Amen Q. 21 *Demetrius. Q.* 23 are [not] more Gro.

lesse to be cald the Deuils Orator for making a Supplication to the Deuill, than hee is to bee helde for a Rhethoritian, for setting foorth *Gabrielis Scuruei Rhetor*, wherein hee thought to haue knockt out the braines of poore *Tullies Orator*, but in veritie did nothing else, but gather a flaunting vnsauory fore-horse nosegay out of his well furnished garland.

The aduancemēt of the Deuils Oratorship, which he ascribeth to *Pierce Pennilesse*, me thinks had beene a fit place for his Doctorship, when hee mist the Oratorship ¹⁰ of the Vniuersitie, of which, in the sequele of his booke, he most slanderously complaineth. Doctor *Perne*, *Greene*, no dead man he spareth.

What he should *subaudi* by his *Dames Poet*, I scarce apprehend, except this, that *Pierce* his Father was *Dame Laws*. Poet, and writte many goodly stories of her in *An Almond for a Parrat*.

Those that will take a Lecture in our Orators letters must not *read, excuse, commend, credite or beleue anie approuued truth in Pierce Pennilesse*, especially if it be ²⁰ any thing that vpbraideth the great Baboune his brother.

Hee will stoppe the beginning, id est, when hee hath come behind a man and broke his head, seeke to bind him to the good abearing, *or els the ende were like to prove pernicious and perillous to his confusion.* |

25

c₂ Somewhat hee mutters of *defamation and iust commendation*, & what a hell it is for him, that hath built his heauen in vaine-glory, to bee puld by the sleeve and bidde *Respic funem*, looke backe to his Fathers house; but I ouerslippe it as friuolous, because all the world knowes ³⁰ him better than he knowes himselfe, & though he play the Pharisie neuer so, in iustifyng his owne innocence, theres none will beleue him.

Let this bee spoken once for all, as I haue a soule to saue, till this day in all my life, with tongue nor penne,

16 Laws[on's] Gro.
Corr. in Errata.

17 a] om. Q: [a] Gro.

21 his] om. Q.

did I euer in the least worde or tittle derogate from the Doctor. If his brother (without any former prouocation on my part, God is my witnesse) rayld on me grossely, expresly namde mee, compard me to *Martin*, indeuord
5 to take from mee all estimation of Arte or witte, haue I not cause to bestirre mee?

Gabriell, I will bestirre mee, for all like an Alehouse Knight, thou crau'st of *Justice to do thee reason*; as for *impudencie and calumny*, I returne them in thy face, that,
10 in one booke of tenne sheets of paper, hast publisht aboue two hundred lies.

Had they been wittie lies, or merry lies, they would neuer haue greeu'd mee: but palpable lies, damned lies, lies as big as one of the Guardes chynes of beefe, who can abide?

15 Ille make thee of my counsaile, because I loue thee (not): when I was in Cambridge, and but a childe, I was indifferently perswaded of thee: mee thought by thy apparell and thy gate, thou shouldst haue beene a fine fellow: Little did I suspect that thou wert brother to *Io. Pæan*
20 (whom inwardly I alwaies grudgd at for writing against *Aristotle*) or any of the Hs of Hempe hall, but a Caualier of a clean contrary house: now thou hast quite spoild thy selfe; from the foote to ^{C 2*} the head I can tell how thou art fashioned.

25 *Teterrime frater*, and not *fraterrime frater*, maist thou verie wofully exclaine, for in helping him, thou hast crackt thy credit through the ring, made thy infamie currant as farre as the Queenes coyne goes.

But it may be thou hast a sider cloke for this quarrell;
30 thou wilt obiect, thy Father was abusd, & that made thee write. What by mee, or *Greene*, or both?

If by *Greene* and not mee, thou shouldst haue written against *Greene* and not mee. If by both, I will answerē for both; but not by bot'h, therefore I will aunswere but
35 for one.

Giue an instance, if thou canst for thy life, wherin in any

leaf of *Pierce Penilesse* I had so much as halfe a sillables relation to thee, or offred one iot of indignitie to thy Father, more than naming the greatest dignitie he hath, when for varietie of Epithites, I calde thy brother *the sonne of a Ropemaker.*

5

We shall haue a good sonne of you anone, if you be ashAMD of your fathers occupation: ah, thou wilt nere thriue, that art beholding to a trade, and canst not abide to heare of it.

Thou dost liue by the gallows, & wouldst not haue 10 a shooe to put on thy foot, if thy father had no traffike with the hangman. Had I a Ropemaker to my father, & somebody had cast it in my teeth, I would foorthwith haue writ in praise of Ropemakers, & prou'd it by soûd sillogistry to be one of the 7. liberal sciences.

15

Somewhat I am priuie to the cause of *Greenes* inueighing against the three brothers. Thy hot-spirited brother *Richard* (a notable ruffian with his pen) hauing first tooke vpon him in his blundring Persiual, to play the Iacke of both sides twixt *Martin* and vs, and snarld priuily at 20
C 3 *Pap-hatchet, Pasquill, & others*, that I opposde themselues against the open slander of that mightie platformer of Atheisme, presently after dribbed forth another fooles bolt, a booke I shoulde say, which he christened *The Lambe of God.*

25

That booke was a learned booke, a labourd booke; for three yere before he put it in print, he had preacht it all without booke.

I my selfe haue some of it in a booke of Sermons that my Tutor at Cambridge made mee gather euery Sunday. 30 Then being very yoong, I counted it the abiectest and frothiest forme of Diuinitie that came in that place. Now more confirmed in age and Art, I confirme my ill opinion of it.

Neither do I vrge this, as if it were a hainous thing for 35 a man to put sermons in print after hee preacht them, but

obserue the proud humor of the pert Didimus, that thinks nothing hee speakes but deserues to be put in print, and speakes not that sentence in the Pulpit, which before he rough-hewes not ouer with his penne. Besides, I taxe him
5 for turning an olde coate (like a Broker) and selling it for a new.

These and a thousand more imperfections might haue
beene buried with his booke in the bottome of a drie-fatte,
and there slept quietly amongst the shauings of the Presse,
10 if in his Epistle he had not beene so arrogantly censoriall.

Not mee alone did hee reuile and dare to the combat,
but glickt at *Pap-hatchet* once more, and misterned all
our other Poets and writers about London, piperly make-
plaies and make-bates.

15 Hence *Greene*, beeing chiese agent for the companie
(for hee writ more than foure other, how well I will not
say: but *Sat citò, si sat bene*) tooke occasion to canuaze
him a little in his Cloth-breeches | and Velvet-breeches, C 3^v
and because by some probable collections hee gest the
20 elder brothers hand was in it, he coupled them both in
one yoake, and, to fulfill the prouerbe *Tria sunt omnia*,
thrust in the third brother, who made a perfect parriall of
Pamphleters.

About some seauen or eight lines it was which hath
25 pluckt on an inuictiue of so many leaues. Had hee liu'd,
Gabriel, and thou shouldst so vnarteficially and odiously
libeld against him as thou hast done, he would haue made
thee an example of ignominy to all ages that are to come,
and driuen thee to eate thy owne booke butterd, as I sawe
30 him make an Apparriter once in a Tauerne eate his Citation,
waxe and all, very handsomly seru'd twixt two dishes.

Out vpon thee for an arrant dog-killer, strike a man
when he is dead?

So Hares may pull dead Lions by the beards.

35 *Memorandum*: I borrowed this sentence out of a Play.
The Theater, Poets hall, hath many more such prouerbes to

persecute thee with, because thou hast so scornefully derided their profession, and despitefully maligned honest sports.

Before I vnbowell the leane Carcase of thy book any further, Ile drinke one cup of lambswooll to the *Lambe of God and his enemies.*

5

In the first foure leaues of it, I haue singled out these Godly and fruitfull obseruations.

Noble Lord, I doe it euен upon former premisses, not for any future consequents.

My booke is not worthy of so honorable specialitie as your Patronage.

I will not prosecute it with Theologicall peculiars, but from the mouth of the sword I speake, &c.

The hearts of the wicked pant, their spirits faile them, | C 4 they may well call for butter out of a Lordlie dish.

15

You that bee gentle Readers, doe you not laugh at this Lawiers english of former premisses and future consequents?

O finicallitie, your Patronages specialitie, but if he prosecute it with Theologicall peculiars, we must needs thrust him *inter oves & boues, & reliqua pecora campi.*

From the mouth of the sword I speake it, *that butter out of a Lordly dish* is but lewd diet for the Pulpit.

But this is not halfe the littour of inckehornisme, that those foure pages haue pigd. I must tell you of the Octonarium of Ramus, the Sesquiamus of Phrigius, the Carthusianisme of Gulielmus Rikel, of Annals, Diaries, Chronologies, & Tropologicall schoolemen, The Abetilis of the Aethiopians or Pretoviannans, of Gulielmus minatensis, & S. Ierome allegorized Abdias, Lyra, Gryson, Porta, Pantaleon.

30

All which hee reckons vp to make the world beleue he hath read much, but alleadegeth nothing out of them: Nor, I thinke, on my conscience, euer read or knew what they meane, but as he hath stole them by the wholesale out of some Booksellers Catalogue, or a table of Tractats.

35

²⁹⁻³⁰ allegorized & Abdias Q. Corr. in Errata: allegorized, Abdias Gro. 34 as] om. Coll., Gro.

Here are some of his profounde Annotations ; *Iacob tooke Leah for his bedfellowe in the darke by night, in steede of Rachell, whereby I learne to buy my wife candle to goe to bed withall, and admit her not by darke, but by light.*

5 *Iacob was deceiued by Labans words : ergo, Obligations are better than bils, and we must belieue no man, except he will waxe and multiplie in words, and call inke & parchment to witnes.*

Iacob laide pilled rods with white strakes in the watring 10 places of the sheepe, whereby I note that in carnal | mixture C 4^v the senses are opened.

Judge you that be the Fathers of the Church, whether this be fit matter to edifie or no.

It was not for nothing, brother Richard, that *Greene* told 15 you you kist your Parishioners wiues with holy kisses, for you that wil talk of opening the senses by carnal mixture (the very act of lecherie) in a Theological Treatise, and in the Pulpit, I am afraide, in a priuater place you will practise as much as you speake. *Homines rard nisi malè 20 locuti malè faciunt. Olet hircum, olet hircum, anie modest eare would abhorre to heare it.*

Farewell vncleane Vicar, and God make thee an honest man, for thou art too baudy for mee to deale withall.

It followes in the Text,

25 *To my verie good friend Maister Emanuell Demetrius.*

This Letter of M. *Bird* to M. *Demetrius*, shoulde seeme, by all reference or collation of stiles, to bee a Letter which M. *Birds* secretarie, *Doctour Gabriell*, indited for him in his owne praise, and got him to sette his hand to when he had 30 done. Or rather, it is no letter, but a certificate (such as Rogues haue) from the headman of the Parish where hee was borne, that *Gabriel is an excellent generall Scholler, and his Father of good behauour.*

We will not beleue it except wee see the Towne seale 35 sette to it: but, say wee should beleue it, what doth it

19 much Q.
Corr. in Errata.

29 his] om Q. Corr. in Errata.

31 head men Q.

make for thee? Haue the Townesmen of *Saffron Waldon* euer heard thee preach, that they should commend thee for an excellent generall scholler? or (because thou professest thy self a Ciuilian) hast thou sollicited any of their causes in the bawdy Courtes therabouts? If not, go your 5
D 1 wayes a dolt as you came; | Maister *Birdes* Letter shall not reprise you from the ladder.

But Velvet-breeches and Cloth-breeches (by the iudgement of the best man of none of the least towns in Essex) is a fantasticall and fond Dialogue, and one of the most 10 licentious intollerable inuictiues that euer hee read.

Why?

In it is abused an auncient neighbour of his.

How is he abused?

In stead of his name, hee is called by the craft hee gets 15 his liuing with.

He hath borne office in Walden aboue twenty yere since (hoc est, had the keeping of the Towne stocke, alias the stocks): Ergo, he is no Rope-maker.

He hath maintaing foure sonnes at Cambridge: Ergo, 20 Greene is a lewd fellow to say he gets his liuing backward.

Three of his sonnes vniuersally ridiculous reputed of (for inamoratos on their owne works) in both Vniuersities and the whole Realme. The fourth is shrunke in the wetting, or else the Print shoulde haue heard of him.

One of the three (whom the Quip entitles the Phisition) returning sicke from Norwich to Linne in Iulie last, was past writing any more Almanackes, before Greene ere imagined God had thought so well of him to take him to him.

Liuor post fata quiescat. Mother Liuers of Newington is a better fortune-teller than he was a Phisition. |

²⁵ 31 *fata*] om. Q. Corr. in Errata.

A Dash through the dudgen
Sonnet against *Greene.*

D 1^v

*Put vp thy smiter, O gentle Peter,
Author and halter make but ill meeter.*

5 I scorne to answer thy mishapen rime,
Blocks haue cald schollers bayards ere this time.

I would trot a false gallop through the rest of his ragged Verses, but that if I should retort his rime dogrell aright, I must make my verses (as he doth his) run hobling like 10 a Brewers Cart vpon the stones, and obserue no length in their feete; which were *absurdum per absurdius*, to infect my vaine with his imitation.

The Analasis of the whole is this: an olde mechanical meeter-munger would faine raile, if he had anie witte. If 15 *Greene* were *dogge-sicke and brain-sicke*, sure he (poore secular Satirist) is dolt-sicke and brainlesse, that with the toothlesse gums of his Poetry so betuggeth a dead man.

But I cannot be induced to beleue a graue man of his sort should be ere so *rainingly bent*: when all comes to all, 20 *shortest vowels and longest mutes* will bewray it to bee a webbe of your owne loomes, M. *Gabriel*: you *mute* foorth many such phrases in the course of your booke, which I will point at as I passe by.

I will not robbe you of your due commendation in any 25 thing: in this Sonnet you haue counterfeited the stile of the olde Vice in the Morrals, as right vp and downe as may be.

Let. *Greene, the Connycatcher, of this dreame the author,*
For his daintie devise deserueth the hauer. |

30 *Vice.* Hey nan anon sir, soft let mee make water, D 2
Whip it to go, Ile lisse my maisters daughter.

Tum diddy, tum da, falangtedo diddle;
Sol la me fa sol, conatus in fiddle.

30 a non Q.

T 2

I am afraide your *Doctors fart* will fall out to be a fatall foyst to your breeches, if we followe you at the hard heeles as we haue begun.

Thou shalt not breath a whit, trip and goe, turne ouer a new leafe.

Maister Bird, in the absence of M. Demetrius. Perge porrò. *I found his wife curteous;* barlady sir, but that is suspitious.

A woman is well holpen vp that does you any curtesie in the absence of her husband, when you cannot keepe 10 it to your selfe, but you must blab it in print.

If it were any other but Mistris *Demetrius* (whome I haue heard to be a modest sober woman, and indued with many vertues) I would play vpon it a litle more. In regard that shee is so, I forbeare; and craue pardon in 15 that I haue spoken so much.

Yet would I haue her vnderstand how well *the generall scholler* her guest, hath rewarded hir for his kind entertainment, by bringing her name in question in print.

M. Bird and Demetrius, I knowe neither of you by sight, 20 but this Ile say, being of that welth you are, you had better haue spent a great deale of money, than come in the mouth of this base companion.

What reason haue I (seeing your names subscribed as his bolsterer, in a matter of defame that concernes mee) 25 but to go through stitch with you, as well as him?

D^r 2^v He thinks to ouer-beare vs as poore beggers with | the great ostentation of your rich acquaintance.

Lette all Noblemen take heede how they giue this *Thraso* the least becke or countenance, for if they bestowe 30 but halfe a glaunce on him, hele straight put it verie solemnly in print, and make it ten times more than it is.

Ile tell you a merry ieast.

The time was when this *Timo:hie Tiptoes* made a Latine Oration to her Maiestie. Her Highnes as shee is vnto 35 all her subiects most gratious; so to schollers she is more

louing and affable than any Prince vnder heauen. In which respect, of her owne vertue and not his desert, it pleased hir so to humble the height of hir iudgement, as to grace him a little whiles he was pronouncing, by 5 these or such like tearmes. *Tis a good pretie fellow, a lookes like an Italian;* and after hee had concluded, to call him to kisse her royll hand. Herevpon hee goes home to his studie, all intraunced, and writes a whole volume of Verses ; first, *De vultu Itali*, of the countenance of the 10 Italian ; and then *De osculo manus*, of his kissing the Queenes hande. Which two Latin Poems he publisht in a booke of his cald *Ædes Valdinenses*, proclaiming thereby (as it were to England, Fraunce, Italie, and Spaine) what fauour hee was in with her Maiestie.

15 I dismisse this *Parenthesis*, and *come to his next businesse*: which indeede is his first businesse: for tyll *Greene* awakte him out of his selfe admiring contemplation, hee had nothing to doe but walke vnder the Ewe tree at Trinitie hall, and say :

20 What may I call this tree? an Ewe tree? O bonny Ewe tree,
Needes to thy boughs will I bow this knee, and vaile my bonneto. |

Or make verses of weathercocks on the top of steeples, as D 3
he did once of the weathercocke of Alhallows in Cam-
bridge:

25 O thou weathercocke that stands on the top of the Church of
Alhallows,
Come thy waies down if thou darst for thy crowne, and take the
wall on vs.

O Heathenish and Pagan Hexamiters, come thy waies
30 down frō thy *Doctourship*, & learne thy Primer of Poetry
ouer again, for certainly thy pen is in state of a Reprobate
with all men of judgement and reckoning.

Come thy waies downe from thy Doctourship, said I ?
Errau demens, thou neuer wentst vp to it yet.

Fie on hypocrisie and Dissimulation, that men should make themselues better than they are!

Alas a Gods will, thou art but a plaine motheaten Maister of Art, and neuer pollutedst thy selfe with any plaistrie or dawbing of Doctourship.

5

List, Pauls Churchyard (the peruser of euerie mans works, & Exchange of all Authors), you are a many of you honest fellows, and fauour men of wit.

So it is that a good Gowne and a well pruned paire of moustachios, hauing studied sixteene yeare to make thir- 10 teene ill english Hexameters, came to the Vniuersity Court *regentium & non*, to sue for a commission to carry two faces in a hoode: they not vsing to deny honour to any man that deserued it, bad him performe all the Schollerlike ceremonies and disputatiue right appertaining thereto, and 15 he should bee installed.

Noli me tangere; he likt none of that.

A stripling that hath an indifferent prety stocke of reputation abroade in the worlde already, and some credit D 3^v amongst his neighbours, as he thinketh, would | be loth to 20 ieoperd all at one throwe at the dice.

If hee should haue disputed for his degree, discended *in arenam & puluerem Philosophicum*, and haue beene foild, *Aih me, quoth Wit in lamentable sort*, what should haue become of him? hee might haue beene shot through ere 25 hee were aware, with a Sillogisme.

No point, *Ergo*, it were wisely done of goodman Boores sonne, if he should goe to the warres for honor, and returne with a wodden legge, when he may buy a Captaineship at home better cheape.

30

Pumps and Pantofles, because they were well blackt and glistered iolly freshly on it, being rubd ouer with inke, had their grace at length to be Doctour, *Ea lege*, that they should do their acts (that is, performe more than they were able).

35

Curst be the time that euer there were any obligations

5 plaistrie or dawbing] plaister Q. Corr. in Errata.

made with conditions, *Vnde habeas quærit nemo, sed oportet habere*, Howe Dorbell comes to bee Doctour none asks, but Doctour hee must bee to make him right worshipfull.

Acts are but idle wordes, and the Scripture saith, wee
5 must giue account for euery idle word.

Pumps and Pantofles sweare they will iet away with a cleare conscience at the daie of iudgement, and therfore do no Acts, giue no offence with idle words, onelie like a Hauke let flie at a Partridge, that turnes the taile and
10 betakes her to a walnut-tree, so to Oxford they trudge, hauing their grace *ad disputandum*, and there are confirmed in the same degree they took at Cambridge: which is as if a Prentise heere in London, as soone as hee is enrould, should runne to some such Towne as Ipswich, and there
15 craue to haue his Freedome confirm'd as of London; which, in truth, ^{D 4} is no Freedome, because hee hath not seru'd out his prentiship.

Trust mee not for a dodkin, if there bee not all the Doctourship hee hath, yet will the insolent incke worme
20 write himselfe Right worshipfull of the Lawes, and personate this man and that man, calling him *my good friend Maister Doctour* at euery word.

Doctour or no Doctour, *Greene surfeted not of Pickled hearing, but of an exceeding feare of his Familiar Epistles.*
25 *Hee offred in his extreamest want twentie shillings to the Printer to leaue out the matter of the three brothers.*

Haud facile credo, I am sure the Printer beeing of that honestie that I take him for, will not affirme it.

Marry this I must say, there was a learned Doctour of
30 Phisicke (to whom Greene in his sickenesse sent for counsaile) that hauing read ouer the booke of Velvet breeches and Clothbreeches, and laughing merrilie at the three brothers legend, wild Green in any case either to mittigate it, or leaue it out: Not ^for any extraordinarie account hee
35 made of the fraternitie of fooles, but for one of them was

¹⁹ inke-horne worme Q. Corr. in Errata.
³² laughed Coll., Gro.

²⁴ an] om. Coll., Gro.

proceeded in the same facultie of Phisicke hee profest,
and willinglie hee would haue none of that excellent calling
ill spoken off.

This was the cause of the altring of it, the feare of his
Phisitions displeasure ; not any feare else. 5

I keepe your *conscious minde*, with all other odde ends of
your halfe fac'd english, till the full conclusion of my booke,
where in an honorable *Index* they shall be placed according
to their degree and segnioritie. |

D 4^v We are to vexe you mightely for plucking *Elderton* out 10
of the ashes of his Ale, and not letting him inioy his nappie
muse of ballad making to himselfe, but now, when he is
as dead as dead beere, you must bee finding fault with the
brewing of his meeters.

Hough *Thomas Delone*, *Phillip Stubs*, *Robert Armin*, 15
&c. Your father *Elderton* is abus'd. Reuenge, reuenge on
course paper and want of matter, that hath most sacrili-
giously contaminated the diuine spirit & quintessence of
a penny a quart.

Helter skelter, feare no colours, course him, trounce him, 20
one cup of perfect bonauenture licour will inspire you with
more wit and Schollership than hee hath thrust into his
whole packet of Letters.

You that bee lookers on, perhaps imagine I talke like
a merry man, and not in good earnest, when I say that 25
Eldertons ghost and *Gabriel* are at such ods : but then you
knowe nothing, for there hath beene monstrous emulation
twixt *Elderton* and him time out of mind. Yea, they were
riuals in riming foure yeare before the great frost. Hee
expressely writ against him, 1580. *in his short but sharpe* 30
and learned iudgement of Earthquakes.

Broome boyes, and cornecutters (or whatsoeuer trade is
more contemptible), come not in his way, stand fortie foote
from the execution place of his furie, for else in the full tide
of his standish, he will carrie your occupations handsmooth 35

⁵ displeasure, and not *Coll., Gro.*
strous Coll., Gro. ³⁰ *In Q.*

¹⁰ Wee *c.w.*

²⁷ beene a mon-

out of towne before him, besmeare them, drowne them : downe the riuer they goe *Priuily* to the Ile of Dogges with his Pamphlets.

O it is a pestilent libeller against beggers ; hee meanes
 5 shortly to set foorth a booke cald his Paraphrase vpon
 Paris Garden, wherein hee will so tamper with the inter- E 1
 preter of the Puppits, and betouse Harry of Tame and great
 Ned, that Titius shall not upbraid Caius with euerie thing
 and nothing, nor Zoylus anie more flurt Homer, nor Ther-
 10 sites fling at Agamemnon.

Holla, holla, holla, *flurt, fling*, what reasty Rhetoricke
 haue we here? certes, certes, brother *hoddy doddy*, your
 penne is a coult by cockes body.

As touching the libertie of Orators and Poets, I will
 15 conferre with thee somewhat grauely, although thou beest
 a goose-cappe and hast no iudgement.

A libertie they haue, thou sayst, *but no liberty without
 bounds, no licence without limitation.*

Iesu what mister wonders dost thou tell us ? euery thing
 20 hath an end, and a pudding hath two.

That libertie Poets of late in their inuectives haue exceeded,
 they haue borne their sword vp, where it is not lawfull for
 a poynado, that is but the page of prowesse, to intermeddle.

Thou bringst in *Mother Hubbard* for an instance. Go
 25 no further, but here confesse thy selfe a flat nodgcombe
 before all this congregation ; for thou hast dealt by thy
 friend as homely as thou didst by thy father.

Who publikely accusde or of late brought *Mother Hubbard*
 into question, that thou shouldst by rehearsall rekindle
 30 against him the sparkes of displeasure that were quenched ?

Forgot hee the *pure sanguine of his Fairy Queene*, sayst
 thou ?

A *pure sanguine* sot art thou, that in vaine-glory to haue
 Spencer known for thy f-ienid, and that thou hast some
 35 interest in him, censerest him worse than his deadliest
 enemie would do. |

E 1^v If any man were vndeseruedly toucht in it, thou hast reuiued his disgrace that was so toucht in it, by renaming it, when it was worn out of al mens mouths and minds.

Besides, whereas before I thought it a made matter of some malitious moralizers against him, and no substance 5 of slander in truth ; now, when thou (that proclaimest thy selfe the only familiar of his bosome, and therefore shouldst know his secretes) giues it out in print that he ouershottte himselfe therein, it cannot chuse but be suspected to be so indeed. 10

Immortall *Spencer*, no frailtie hath thy fame, but the imputation of this Idiots friendship : vpon an vnspotted *Pegasus* should thy gorgeous attired *Fayrie Queene* ride triumphant through all reports dominions, but that this mud-born bubble, this bile on the browe of the Vniuersitie, 15 this bladder of pride newe blowne, challengeth some interest in her prosperitie.

Of pitch who hath any vse at all, shall be abusd by it in the end.

High grasse that florisheth for a season on the house 20 toppe, fadeth before the haruest cals for it, and maye well make a fayre shewe, but hath no sweetnesse in it. Such is this Asse *in presenti*, this grosse painted image of pride, who would faine counterfeite a good witte, but scornfull pittie, his best patron, knows it becomes him as ill, as an 25 vnweldy Elephant to imitate a whelpe in his wantonnes.

I wote not how it fals out, but his inuention is ouer-weapond ; he hath some good words, but he cannot writhe them and tosse them to and fro nimblly, or so bring them about, that hee maye make one streight thrust at his 30 enemies face.

Coldly and dully *idem per idem*, who cannot indite? | E 2 but with life and spirit to limne deadnes it selfe, *Hoc est Oratoris proprium.* .

L. *Inuictuves by fauour haue beene too bolde, and Satires 35 by usurpation too presumptuous.* What pleasure brings this

²³ in present Q. Corr. in *Errata* to in presenti.

to the reader? Iacke of the Falcon in Cambridge can say as much, and give no reason for it.

But I can prompt you with a demonstration wherin Inuictives haue been too bold. Do you remember what 5 you writ in your Item for Earthquakes, *of double fac'd Iani, changeable Cameleons, Aspen leaues, painted shcathes, and sepulchers, Asses in Lions skinnes, dunghill cockes, slipperie eales, dormise, &c?* Besides your testimoniall of Doctour Perne, wherein it pleased you, of your singular liberalitie 10 and bountie, to bestowe vpon him this beautifull *Encomium*:
A busie and dizzie head, a brasen fore head, a leaden braine, a wodden witte, a copper face, a stonie brest, a factious and eluish heart, a founder of nouelties, a confounder of his owne and his friendes good giftes, a morning booke-worme, an 15 afternoone malt-worme, a right Iugler, as full of his sleightes, wiles, fetches, casts of legerdemaine, toyes to mocke Apes withall, odde shifts and knauish practises, as his skinne can holde.

Notwithstanding all this, *you defie cut and longtaile, that 20 can accuse you of any scandalous part either in word or deede.*

Tully, Horace, Archilochus, Aristophanes, Lucian, Iulian, Aretine, goe for no painment with you; their declamatory stiles, brought to the grand test of your iudgement, are 25 found counterfeit, *they are a venemous and viperous brood of railers*, because they haue broght in a new kind of a quicke fight, which your decrepitive slow-mouing capacitie cannot fadge with.

Tush, tush, you take the graue peake vpon you | too E 2^v
30 much: who would think you could so easily shake off your olde friendes? Did not you in the fortie one Page,
line 2. of your Epistles to Collin Clout vse this speech?

Extra iocum, *I like your Dreames passing well: and the rather because they sau r of that singular extraordinary 35 vaine and inuention which I euer fancied most, and in*

5 double Q. 10 him] om. Q. Corr. in Errata.
32 of] om. Coll., Gro.

17 wiehall Q.

a manner admired onely in Lucian, Petrarch, Aretine, Pasquil.

Dic sodes (godamercie on *Dicke Sothis soule*, for he was a better dauncer than thou art an enditer, & with his legges he made some Musicke: there is none in thy letters) 5
 answere mee briefly, I say, to the point, haue I varied one vowell from thy originall text in this allegation? If not, I cannot see how the Doctours may well bee reconcild, one while to commend a man *because his writings sauour of that singular extraordinarie vaine, which he onely admired* 10
in Lucian, Petrarch, Aretine, Pasquil: and then in another booke afterward, to come and call those *singular extraordinarie admired men, a venomous and viperous brood of railers.*

The auncienter sort of Poets and Oratours shall plead 15
 their owne worthiness.

Tullie neuer ouerreached himself in railing so much as in flatterie. His *Phillippicks* (sound Physick applide to a body that could not digest it) are the things that especially commended him to this art-thriuing age of ours, 20
 and had not these beene, hee would certainly haue beene sentenced by a generall verdit of histories for a timerous time-pleaser.

Who cannot draw a curtaine before a deformed picture?
Plautus personated no Parasite, but he made him a slaeue 25
 or a bondman.

E 3 Fawning and crutching are the naturall gestures | of feare, and if it bee a vertue for a vassaille to licke a mans shooes with his tongue, sure it is but borrowed from the dogges; and so is biting too, if it bee accompanied with 30
 ouer lowd barking, or in such wise as it cannot pinch but it must breake the flesh and drawe bloud.

Horace, Perseus, Iuuenall, my poore iudgment lendeth you plentifull allowance of appluse: yet had you, with the *Phrigian* melodie, that stirreth men vp to battaile and 35
 furie, mixt the *Dorian* tune, that fauoreth mirth and

pleasure, your vnsugred pilles (howeuer excellently medicinable) would not haue beeene so harsh in the swallowing. So likewise *Archilochus*, thou like the preachers to the Curtizans in Roome, that expound to them all Lawe and 5 no Gospell, art all gall and no spleene. Hence came it to passe, that with the meere efficacy of thy incensed *Iambicks*, thou mad'st a man runne and hang himselfe that had angerd thee.

Thee I imbrace, *Aristophanes*, not so much for thy 10 Comœdie of the clowd, which thou wrotst against philosophers, as for in al other thy inuentions thou interfusest delight with reprehension.

Lucian, Julian, Aretine, all three admirably blest in the abundant giftes of art and nature: yet Religion, which you 15 sought to ruinate, hath ruined your good names, and the opposing of your eyes against the bright sunne, hath causd the worlde condemne your sight in all other thinges. I protest, were you ought else but abominable Atheistes, I would obstinately defende you, onely because *Laureate* 20 *Gabricill* articles against you.

This I will iustifie against any *Dromidote* Ergonist whatsoeuer: there is no other vn lasciuious vse or end 1 of poetry, E 3^v but to infamize vice, and magnifie vertue, and that if they assemble all the examples of verse-founders from *Homer* 25 to *Hugh Copland*, they shall not find anie of them but hath encountred with the generall abuses of his times.

Whatsoeuer harpeth not of one of these two strings of praise and reprooфе, is as it were a *Dirige* in pricksong without any dittie set to it, that haply may tickle the eare, 30 but neuer edifies.

In the Romaine common-wealths it was lawful for Poets to reprove that enormitie in the highest chairs of authoritie, which none else durst touch, alwaies the sacred Maiestie of their *Augustus* kept inuiolate: for that was a Plannet 35 exalted aboue their Hexameter horizon, & it was capitall

6 'for effect read efficacie.' *Errata, but Q has efficacy.*
Coll., Gro. 27 one these Q.

26 his] the

to them in the highest degree, to dispute of his setting and rising, or search inquisitively into his predominance and influence.

The secrets of God must not be searcht into. Kings are Gods on earth, their actions must not be sounded by their 5 subiects.

Seneca, Neroes Tutor, founde his death in no verse but *Octavia*. Imperious *Lucan* sprinkled but one drop of bloud on his imperiall chayre, and perisht by him also.

Ouid once saw *Augustus* in a place where he would not 10 haue beene seene ; he was exilde presently to those countries no happy man hears of.

Long might hee, in a blinde Metamorphosis, haue playd vpon all the wenches in Roome, and registered their priuie scapes, vpbrayded inhospitalitie with the fable of *Licaon*: 15 alluded to some Ambodexter Lawyer vnder the storie of *Battus* : haue described a noted vnthrifst, whose substaunce hawkes and houndes haue deuoured, in the tale of *Acteon*, E 4 that was eaten vp by his owne dogges : mockt Alcumistes with *Midas* : picturde inamaratos vnder *Narcissus* : and 20 shrouded a picked effeminate Carpet Knight vnder the fictionate person of *Hermophroditus* ; with a thousand more such vnexileable ouer-thwart merrimentes, if lust had not led him beyond the prospect of his birth, or hee seene a meaner man sinning than an Emperour. 25

Sancta Maria, ora pro nobis, how hath my pen lost it selfe in a croude of Poets.

Gaffer *Iobbernoule*, once more well ouer-taken, how dost thou? how dost thou? holde vp thy heade, man, take no care; though *Greene* be dead, yet I may liue to doe thee good. 30

But by the meanes of his death thou art deprived of the remedie in lawe, which thou intendedst to haue had against him for calling thy Father Ropemaker. Mas, thats true: what Action will it beare? *Nihil pro nihilo*, none in law: what it will doe vpon the stage I cannot tell; for there 35 a man maye make action besides his part, when he hath

20 *Narcissas Q.* 32 *had]* om. *Coll., Gro.*

nothing at all to say: and if there, it is but a clownish action that it will beare : for what can bee made of a Ropemaker more than a Clowne? *Will Kempe*, I mistrust it will fall to thy lot for a merriment, one of these dayes.

5 In short tearmes, thus I demur vpon thy long Kentish-tayld declaration against *Greene*.

Hee inherited more vertues than vices: a iolly long red peake, like the spire of a steeple, hee cherisht continually without cutting, whereat a man might hang a Iewell, it
10 was so sharpe and pendant.

Why should art answer for the infirmities of maners? Hee had his faultes, and thou thy follyes.

Debt and deadly sinne, who is not subiect to? | with any notorious crime I neuer knew him tainted; (& yet tainting
15 is no infamous surgerie for him that hath beene in so many hote skirmishes).

A good fellowe hee was, and would haue drunke with thee for more *angels* then the Lord thou libeldst on *gave thee in Christs Colledge*; and in one yeare hee pist as
20 much against the walls, as thou and thy two brothers spent in three.

In a night & a day would he haue yarkt vp a Pamphlet as well as in seauen yeare, and glad was that Printer that might bee so blest to pay him deare for the very dregs
25 of his wit.

Hee made no account of winning credite by his workes, as thou dost, that dost no good workes, but thinkes to bee famosed by a strong faith of thy owne worthines: his only care was to haue a spel in his purse to coniure vp
30 a good cuppe of wine with at all times.

For the lowsie circumstance of his pouerty before his death, and sending that miserable writte to his wife, it cannot be but thou lyest, learned *Gabriell*.

I and one of my fellowes, *Will. Monox* (Hast thou neuer
35 heard of him and his great dagger?) were in company with him a month before he died, at that fatall banquet

of Rhenish wine and pickled hearing (if thou wilt needs haue it so), and then the inuentorie of his apparrell came to more than three shillings (though thou saist the contrarie). I know a Broker in a spruce leather ierkin with a great number of golde Rings on his fingers, and a bunch 5 of keies at his girdle, shall giue you thirty shillings for the doublet alone, if you can helpe him to it. Harke in your eare, hee had a very faire Cloake with sleevees, of a graue goose turd greene ; it would serue you as fine as may bee :

F 1 No more words, if you bee wise, play the good | husband 10 and listen after it, you may buy it ten shillings better cheape than it cost him. By S. Siluer, it is good to bee circumspect in casting for the worlde, theres a great many ropes go to ten shillings. If you want a greasy paire of silk stockings also, to shew your selfe in at the Court, they 15 are there to be had too amongst his moueables. *Frustra fit per plura quod fieri potest per pauciora*: It is policie to take a rich penniworth whiles it is offred.

Alas even his fellow writer, that proper yoong man, almost scorns to cope with thee, thou art such a crow 20 troden Asse : dost thou *in some respects wish him well and spare his name?* in some respects so doth hee wish thee as well, (*hoc est*, to be as well knowne for a foole as my Lord Welles,) and promiseth by me to talke very sparingly of thy praise. For thy name, hee will not stoupe 25 to plucke it out of the mire, and put it in his mouth.

By this blessed cuppe of sacke which I now holde in my hand and drinke to the health of all Christen soules in, thou art a puissant Epitapher.

Yea? thy Muses foot of the twelues; old long Meg 30 of Westminster? Then I trowe thou wilt stride ouer Greenes graue and not stumble: If you doe, wee shall come to your taking vp.

Letter.

Here lies the man whom Mistris Isam cround with bays, 35
She, she that ioyd to heare her Nightingales sweete lays.

14 tenshillings Q. 16 there] om. Coll., Gro. 23 well? Q.

Comment.

Here Mistris *Isam*, *Gabriel* floutes thy bays;
Scratch out his eyes that printeth thy dispraise.

She, she will scratch, and like a scritching night-owle
5 come and make a dismal noise vnder thy cham-ber F¹ windowe, for deriding her so dunstically. A bigge fat
lusty wench it is, that hath an arme like an Amazon, and
will bang thee abhominationly, if euer shee catch thee in
her quarters. It is not your *Poet Garish and your fore-*
10 *horse of the parish* that shall redeeme you from her fingers,
but shee will *make actuall proofe of you*, according as you
desire of God in the vnder following lines.

The next weeke, Maister *Bird* (if his inke-pot haue
a cleare current) hee will haue at you with a cap-case full
15 of French occurrences, that is, shape you a messe of newes
out of the second course of his conceit, as his brother is
said out of the fabulous abundance of his braine to haue
inuented the newes out of *Calabria* (*John Doletas* prophesie
of flying dragons, commets, Earthquakes, and inundations).
20 I am sure it is not yet worne out of mens scorn, for
euery Miller made a comment of it, and not an oyster wife
but mockt it.

When that fly-boat of Frenchery is once laucht, your
trenchor attendant, *Gamallic Hobgoblin*, intends to tickle
25 vp a Treatise of the barly kurnell, which you set in your
garden, out of which there sprung (as you auouched) twelue
seuerall eares of corne at one time.

Redoubted Parma was never so matcht if hee kindle the
match of his meeterdome, and let drieue at him with
30 a volley of verses. Let not his principalitie trust too much
to it, because his name is Latin for a shield; for *Poet Hobbinoll*, hauing *a gallant wit and a brazen penne*, will
honourably bethinke him, and euen ambitiously frame his
stile to a noble emulation of Liuie, Homer, and the diuinest
35 *spirites of all ages*, as hee hath done to the emulation of

⁴ *She she she Gro.*

F 2 *Tullie* heeretofore, when hee | compiled a Pamphlet called *Ciceronis Consolatio ad Dolabellam*, and publisch it as a newe part of *Tullie*, which had bin hidde in a Wall a thousand and odde yeares, and was found out by him before it euer found beeing.

5

The circumstance was this; going downe the water at Cambridge one summer euening, and asking certaine questions of the Eccho at Barnewell wall (as the manner is, passing by) holding her verie narrowly to the poynt, she reuealed vnto him what a treasure shee had hidden amongst 10 her stones; namely, this new part of *Gabrielis Ciceronis consolatio ad Dolabellam*: and though she was verie loath to disclose it, yet because shee knewe not how soone God might call her; *videlicet*, how sodainely shee might fall; to discharge her conscience before her death, shee would 15 deliuier it vp as freely vnto him as euer it was hers: come and digge for it, hee shoulde haue it. Neuer more glad was shee in her life, that since shee must needes surrender it to the light, she had chaunst vpon such a Cardinall Corrigidore of incongruitie, and *Tullies* nexte and imme- 20 diate successour, vnder *Carre*, to whose carefull repolishing she might commit it.

Keep it? quoth shee.

No, if it were a booke of golde it is THINE: reade it, new print it, dedicate it *from thy gallery at Trinitie Hall* to 25 whom thou wilt.

Whether hee vsde a spade or a mattocke for the vnburyng of it I know not, but extant it is, and of a hundred I haue heard that it is his.

O *Gabriell*, if thou hast any manhood in thy starcht 30 peake, looke vpon me and weepe not.

F 2^v From this day forward shall a whole army of boies | come wondring about thee, as thou goest in the street, and cry *kulleloo, kulleloo, with whup hoo*, there goes the Ape of *Tully*: tih he he, steale *Tully*, steale *Tully*, away with the 35 Asse in the Lions skinne.

Nay, but in sadness, is it not a sinfull thing for a Scholler & a Christian to turne *Tully*? a Turke would neuer doe it.

Be counsaile in thy calamitie, write no more *Consolatios ad Dolabellam*, but *Consolatio ad Doctorē Gabrielem*; thy selfe comfort thy selfe, and learn to make a vertue of contempt.

Ad ruentem parietem ne inclina, is a Prouerbe which would haue preuented all this, if thou couldst haue sufferd thy selfe to haue beene directed by it: for first and foremost, hadst not thou stept forth to vnder-prop the ruinous wall of thy brothers reputation, I had neuer meddled with thee; if thou hadst not leand too much to an olde wall, when thou pluckst *Tullie* out of a wall, the damnation of this Iest had bin yet vnbegotten.

15 He that hath born saile in two tempests of shame, makes a sport of shippe-wracke of good name euer after.

The wall of the welfare of Fraunce that is started from her King, her true foundation, thy writinges (more wretched than France) would faine cleave vnto, if they could tell 20 how, and *count it a felicity to haue the oportunitie of so heroicall an argument.*

God helpe *Alexander*, if hee haue no other Poet to emblazon his atchieuements but *Cherillus*.

High resolued Earle of *Essex* and victorious Sir *John Norris*, Englands champions, enuied tranquillities confidence, vnworthy are your aduentures *Iliades* to bee reported by such a ragged reede as the | iarring Pipe of F 3 this *Batillus*. The Portugals & Frenchmens feare will lend your Honors richer ornaments, than his low-flighted 30 affection (fortunes summer folower) can frame them.

The seale that I set to your vertues be silence; the argument of prayse is vnauthorized in any mans mouth but olde age.

When the better parte of youthes ference is boyld away, 35 and that the shoures of many sorrowes haue seasond our

10 forrh Q. 24 virtuous] vertuous Q. Corr. in Errata. 31
I haue set Coll., Gro.

greene heads with experience, with the wither-fac'd weather-beaten Mariner, that talks quaking and shudderingly of a storme that hee hath newly toyld through, our wordes will bee written in our visage.

Euen as the sunne, so no science shines in his compleate 5 glory till it be ready to decline.

These be the conclusions that gray hairs prune & cut downe the prosperitie of yong yeare with, as fast as it aspires, but let the seare Oake looke himselfe in the glasse of truth, and he shal find that *Methusalems* blessing is 10 imbecillitie, bestowed on any creature but the Foxe, who neuer is a right Foxe till he be ripe for the dunghill.

If my stile holde on this sober Mules pace but a sheete or two further, I shal haue a long beard lyke an Irish mantle droppe out of my mouth before I be aware. 15

Marry God forfend, for at no hand can I endure to haue my cheeks muffled vp in furre like a Muscouian, or weare any of this Welch freeze on my face.

O it is a miserable thing to dresse haire like tow twixt a mans teeth, when one cannot drinke but hee must thrust 20 a great spunge into the cup, & so cleanse his coole F 3^v porridge, as it were through a strayner, ere | it comes to his lippes.

This second Epistle I haue said prettily well too ; I think we were best begin THIRDLY WHEREAS, for feare a volume 25 steale vpon vs vnlookt for.

The Arrainment and Execution
of the third Letter.

To euerie Reader fauourably or indifferently affected.

5 **T**EXT, stand to the Barre. Peace there belowe.

Albeit for these twelue or thirteene yeares no man hath beene more loath, or more scrupulous than my selfe, &c.

The body of mee, hee begins like a proclamation : sufficeth it wee knowe you your minde though you say
10 no more.

Is not this your drift ? you would haue the worlde suppose you were vrgde to that which proceeded of your owne good nature: like some that will seeme to bee intreated to take a high place of preferment vpon them,
15 which priuile before they haue prayde and payde for, and put all their strength to clymbe vp to.

You would foist in *non causam pro causa*, haue it thought your flight from your olde companions obscuritie and silence was onely, with *Aeneas*, to carry your Father on
20 your backe, through the fire of slander, and by that shift, with a false plea of patience vniustly driuen from his kingdome, filch away the harts of the Queenes liege people.

The backe of those creple excuses I haue broke | in the beginning of my booke : if you haue anie new infringement
25 to destitute the inditement of forgerie that I bring against you, so it is.

Heere enters Argumentum a testimonio humano, like *Tamberlaine* drawne in
a Chariot by foure Kings.

F 4

30 **I** THAT IN MY YOUTH FLATTERD NOT MY SELFE WITH THE EXCEEDING COMMENDATION OF THE GREATEST SCHOLLER IN THE WORLDS, &c.

Ille ego qui quondam gracili modulatus auena.

Ah neighbourhood, neighbourhood, dead and buried art

thou with Robinhood: a poore creature here is faine to commend himselfe, for want of friendes to speake for him.

Not the least, but the greatest Schollers in the WORLD haue not only but exceedingly fedde him fat in his humor of *Braggadocio Glorioso*. 5

*Yea Spencer him hath often Homer tearind,
And Mounsier Bodkin vowd as much as he;
Yet cares not Nashe for him a halfe penny.*

Lamentable, lamentable, that an indifferent vntoward ciuill Lawyer, who hath read *Plutarch De utilitate capienda ab inimicis*, & can talke of *Titius and Sempronius*, should be no more set by, but SET BY, thrust aside, while his betters carry the bredth of the street before them.

Misery will humble the haughtiest heart in the world : *Habemus rcum confitentē* : he confesseth himself a sinner in 15
F 4^v vnsufficiency ; yet for all that the aduersitie | of vniuersall obloquy hath laide a heauie hande on him, still he retaineth (like conceald land) some part of his proud mind in a beggers purse, scorneth to say *Fortune my foe*, or aske a good word for Gods sake of anie man. 20

In the plainnesse of his puft vp nature, he will defie anie man that dare accuse him of that he is.

Why, why, *infractissime PISTLEPRAGMOS*, though you were yong in yeares, fresh in courage, greene in experience, and ouer-weaning in concept (we will refuse nothing that 25 you giue vs) when you priuately wrote the letters that afterward (by no other but your selfe) were publiquely diuulg'd ; yet when the bladder is burst that held you vp swimming in selfe loue, you must not be discontented though you sink. 30

I haue toucht the vller of your Oratourship, in requiting the nick-name of *The Deuils Oratour*. An Ulcer you may well christen it, as an ulcer is a swelling, for it was a swelling of ambition, no modest petition of anie merit of yours that did craue it. 35

The olde Foxe Doctour Perne throughly discouered you for a yoong Foppe, or else halfe a word of *our high Chauncelors commendation* had stood with him inuiolable as an Act of Parliament.

5 Great men, in writing to those they are acquainted with, haue priuie watch-words of denial, euen in the highest degree of praising ; they haue many followers, whose duti-
full seruice must not bee disgrac'd with a bitter repulse in
anie suite, though vnlawfull.

10 It may bee, some of these long deseruers of his followers laboured him for thee : hee, like *Argus*, hauing eyes that pierce into all estates, saw thee when thou wert vnseene
of thy selfe, and knowing thee to bee | vnworthy of any G 1
place of worth, would not discountenance his men in so
15 smal a matter, but writ for thee very vehemently outwardly,
when the soule of his letter (into which thy shallow
braine could not descend) included thy vtter mislike.

*Yong bloud is hot, youth hastie, ingenuitie open, abuse
impatient, choller stomachous, temptations busie.* In a
20 word, the Gentleman was vext, and cutte his bridle for
verie anger.

*The tickling and stirring inuictiue vaine, the puffing and
swelling Satiricall spirit* came vpon him, as it came on
Coppinger and Arthington, when they mounted into the
25 pease-cart in Cheape-side and preacht : needes hee must
cast vp certayne crude humours of English Hexameter
Verses that lay vpon his stomacke ; a Noble-man stooede
in his way, as he was vomiting, and from top to toe he
all to berayd him with *Tuscanisme*.

30 The Mappe of Cambridge lay not farre off when he was
in the depth of his drudgery ; some part of the excrements
of his anger fell vpon it : poore Doctour Pernes picture
stooede in a corner of that Mappe, and by the misde-
meanour of his mouth it was cleane defac'd.

35 *Signior Immerito* (so called because *he was and is his
friend vndeseruedly*) was counterfeitly brought in to play

a part in that his Enterlude of Epistles that was hist at, thinking his very name (as the name of *Ned Allen* on the common stage) was able to make an ill matter good.

I durst on my credit vndertake, *Spencer* was no way priuie to the committing of them to the print. Committing 5
 I may well call it, for in my opinion *G. H.* should not
 G 1^v haue reapt so much discredite by beeing | committed to
 Newgate, as by committing that misbeleeuing prose to the
 Presse.

I haue vsually seene vncircumcised doltage haue the 10
 porch of his Panim pilfries very hugely pestred with
 praises. *Hay gee* (Gentlemen) comes in with his Plow-
 mans whistle in prayse of *Peter Scurfe* the penne-man,
 and *Turlery ginkes*, in a light foote Iigge, libels in com-
 mendation of little witte verie loftily ; but for an Author 15
 to renounce his Christendome to write in his owne com-
 mendation, to refuse the name which his Godfathers and
 Godmothers gaue him in his baptisme, and call himselfe
a welwiller to both the writers, when hee is the onely
 writer himselfe ; with what face doe you thinke hee can 20
 aunswere it at the day of iudgement ? *Est in te facies,*
sunt apti lusibus anni : Gabriell, thou canst play at fast
 and loose as well as anie man in England.

I will not lye or backbite thee as thou hast done mee,
 but are not these thy wordes to the curteous Buyer ? 25

*Shew mee or Immerito two English letters in print, in
 all pointes equall to these, both for the matter it selfe, and
 also for the manner of handling, and say wee neuer saw
 good English in our liues.*

Againe, I esteeme them for two of the rarest and finest 30
 treaties, as well for ingenuous deuising, as significant
 vttering, & cleanly conueyng of his matter, that euer I
 read in this tongue, & I hartily thank God for bestowing
 vpon vs such proper and able men with their penne.

You must conceit, hee was in his chamber-fellowe *wel-* 35
willers cloke when he spake this : the white-liuerd slause

was modest, and had not the hart to say so much in his owne person, but he must put on the vizard of *an vndiscrete friend.* |

It is not worth the rehearsal ; *he scribbled it in icast for G 2 exercise of his speeche and stile, &c., and it was the sinister hap of those vnfortunate letters to be derided & scoffed at throughout the whole realme.*

The sharpest part of them were read ouer at Counsell Table, and he referd ouer to the Fleet, to beare his old 10 verse-fellow noble M. Valanger company.

There was no remedie for it but melancholy patience.

A recantation he was glad to make by way of articles or positions, which hee moderates with a milder name of an *apologie*, & that recantation purchast his libertie. Wherefore in gratefull lieu of the benefit he receiu'd by it (*although he hath hitherto vnworthily supprest it*) yet he means to take occasion by this extraordinary prouocation to publish it, with not so few as fortie such Academicall exercises, and sundrie other politike discourses.

20 And I deeme he will be as good as his word, for euer yet it hath beene his wont, if he writ but a letter to any friend of his, in the way of thanks for the potte of butter, gāmon of bacon, or cheese that he sent him, straight to giue coppies of it abroad in the world, and propound it 25 to yong gentlemen he came in company with, as a more necessary & refined methode of familiar Epistles than the English tongue hath hitherto been priuy to.

Lord that men shoulde bee so malitiously bent to frame a matter of some thing ; *he takes a pleasurable delight to 30 behauie himself so that he may be laught at* ; how would you prate and insult, if you knewe as much by him, as he knows by himselfe.

Nashe, do thy worst, the three brothers bid a Fico for thee : discommend thou them neuer so much, they will 35 palpably praise, and so consequently dispraise, them- G 2^v selues more in one booke they set foorth, than thou canst

disparage them in tenne: yea, rather than faile, Maister *Bird* shall leaue copying out letters of newes, and meeter it mischieuously in maintenance of their scurrilitiship and ruditie.

Three to one, *par ma foy*, is oddes; not one of them 5 writes an Almanacke, but hee reckons vp all his brothers.

Bee it spoken heere in priuate; *Musa Richardetti fratrizat sat bene pretty*: the Muse of dappert Dickie doth sing as sweet as a cricket.

Nosti manum & stilum, Gabriel? it is thine own verse 10 in *Ædes Valdinenses*, all sauе the inserting of *pretty* in stead of *certè*, for rimes sake.

Had Phisition *John* liu'd, or not dyde a little afore Dog-dayes, a sinode of Pispots would haue concluded, that *Pierce Pennilesse* should be confoünded without reprise. 15

The Spanyards cald their inuasive fleete agaynst England the Nauie inuincible, yet it was ouercome. Lowe shrubbes haue outliu'd high Cedars: one true man is stronger than two theeuēs: *Gabriell & Richard*, I pro-claime open warres with you: March on, *Iocus, Ludus, Lepos*, my valiaunt men at armes, and forrage the frontiers of his *Fantasticaltite* as you haue begun. 20

Tubalcan, aliâs *Tuball*, first founder of Farriers Hall, heere is a great complaint made, that *vtriusque Academix Robertus Greene* hath mockt thee, because hee saide, that 25 as thou wert the first inuenter of Musicke, so *Gabriell Howligasse* was the first inuenter of English Hexameter verses. *Quid respondes?* canst thou brooke it, yea or no? Is it any treason to thy well tuned hammers to say they G 3 begat so renowmed a childe as | Musicke? Neither thy 30 hammers nor thou, I know, if they were put to their booke oaths, will euer say it.

The Hexamiter verse I graunt to be a Gentleman of an auncient house (so is many an english begger), yet this Clyme of ours hee cannot thriue in; our speech is too 35 craggy for him to set his plough in: hee goes twitching

⁷ *fratrizat*] Coll., Gro.: *fatrizat* Q. 26 *as*] om. Gro.

and hopping in our language like a man running vpon quagmiers, vp the hill in one Syllable, and down the dale in another, retaining no part of that stately smooth gate, which he vaunts himselfe with amongst the Greeks and Latins.

5 *Homer and Virgil, two valorous Authors,* yet were they neuer knighted ; they wrote in Hexameter verses : *Ergo, Chaucer, and Spenccr,* the *Homer and Virgil of England,* were farre ouerseene that they wrote not all their Poems in Hexamiter verses also.

10 In many Countries veluet and Satten is a commoner weare than cloth amongst vs : *Ergo,* wee must leauue wearing of cloth, and goe euerie one in veluet and satten, because other Countries vse so.

The Text will not beare it, good *Gilgilis Hobberdehoy.*

15 *Our english tongue is nothing too good, but too bad to imitate the Greeke and Latine.*

Master *Stannyhurst* (though otherwise learned) trod a foule lumbring boystrous wallowing measure, in his translation of *Virgil.* He had neuer been praisd by *Gabriel* for 20 his labour, if therein hee had not bin so famously absurd.

Greene for dispraising his practise in that kinde, *is the Greene Maister of the blacke Art, the Founder of vglie oathes, the father of misbegotten Infortunatus, the Scriuener of Crossebiters, the Patriark of Shifters, &c.*

25 *The Monarch of Crossebiters, the wretched fellowe | Prince of Beggars, Emperour of Shifters,* hee had cald him before, G 3^v but like a drunke man, that remembers not in the morning what he speakes ouernight, still he fetcheth Metaphors from Conny-catchers, & doth nothing but torment vs with 30 tautologies.

Why, thou arrant butter whore, thou cotqueane & scrattop of scoldes, wilt thou neuer leauue afflicting a dead Carcasse, continually read the rethorick lecture of Ramme-Allie ? a wispe, a wispe, a wispe, rippe, rippe, you kitchinstuffe 35 wrangler.

Wert thou put in the Fleete for pamphleting ? Bedlem

were a meeter place for thee. Be not ashAMD of your promotion ; they did you honor that said you were Fleete-bound, for men of honor haue sailde in that Fleete.

Wast paper made thee betake thy selfe to *Limbo Patrum* ; had it beene a booke that had beene vendible, yet, the 5 opprobry had beene the lesse, but for Chandlers merchandize to be so massacred, for sheets that serue for nothing but to wrappe the excrements of huswiuerie in, *Proh Dcum*, what a spite is it. I haue seene your name cutte with a knife in a wall of the Fleete, I ; when I went to visit a friend of 10 mine there.

Let Maister *Butler* of Cambridge his testimoniall end this controuersie, who at that time that thy ioyes were in the Fleetting, and thou crying for the Lords sake out at an iron windowe, in a lane not farre from Ludgate hill, ques- 15 tiond some of his companions verie inquisitiuelie that were newlie come from London, what nouelties they brought home with them ; amongst the rest, he broke into this Hexamiter interrogatory very abruptlie,

But ah what newes doe you heare of that good Gabriel huffe 20 snuffe,

Knowne to the world for a foole, and clapt in the Fleete for a Rimer ? |

G 4 Ist true *Gibraltar* ? haue I found you ? It was not without foundatiō that you burst into that magnifical insul- 25 tation, I THAT IN MY YOVTH FLATTERD NOT MY SELFE, &c., for M. *Butler*, for a Phisition being none of the least Schollers, hath commended you exceedingly for a foole & a Rimer. *He that threatned to coniure vp Martins wit*, hath written some thing too in your praise, in Pap-hatchet, for 30 all you accuse him to haue courtlie incenst the Earle of Oxford against you. Marke him well ; hee is but a little fellow, but hee hath one of the best wits in England. Should he take thee in hand againe (as he flieth from such inferiour concertation), I prophecie that there woulde more 35

10 Fleete I : Q : Qy. read Fleete. I, ? 12 Doubtful whether new par. in Q.
New par. Gro. 31 courtlie] Qy. read couertlie ?: couertlie Coll. 34 a gaine Q.

gentle Readers die of a merrie mortality, ingendred by the eternal iests he would maule thee with, than there haue done of this last infection. I my self, that inioy but a mite of wit in comparison of his talēt, in pure affection to my 5 natuie country, make my stile carry a presse saile, am fain to cut off half the streame of thy sport-breeding confusion, for feare it shoulde cause a generall hicket throughout England.

Greene, I can spare thy reuenge no more roome in this 10 booke : thou hast Phisitiō John with thee ; cope thou with him, & let me alone with the Ciuilian & Deuine, whom, if I liue, I will so vncessantly haunt, that to auoid the hot chase of my fierie quill, they shalbe constraind to ensconce themsclues in an olde Vrinall case that their brother left 15 behind him. Yet ere I bid thee good night, receiue some notes as touching his phisicallity deceased. He had his grace to be Doctor ere he died. As time may worke all things. In Norfolke where hee practised, he was reputed a proper toward man at a medecine for the toothake, & one 20 of the skilfullest Phisitions, in casting the heauens water, that euer came there. |

*How well beloved of the chiefest Gentlemen (& Gentle- G 4^v
women especially) in that shire, it is incredible to bee spoken.*

Astra petit disertus ; hee is gone to heauen to write more 25 Astrologicall discourses ; his brothers liue to inherite his olde gownes and remember his notable sayings, amongst the which this was one: Vale Galene, farewell, mine owne deare Gabriell: Valete humanæ artes, heart and good will, but neuer a ragge of money.

30 *Tunc tua res agitur paries cum proximus ardet.*

Cloth-breeches house is burnt, and the flame goes a feast-
ing to *Pierce Pennilesse* house next.

Neuer til now, *Gregory Habberdine*, went thy foure letters
vp Newgate, vp Holburne, vp Tiburne, to hanging.

35 Gentlemen, by that which hath been already laid open,

² thee] thee Q. ⁹ Run on in Q. New par. Coll., Gro. ²⁷ this]
om. Coll., Gro.

I doe not doubt but you are vnwaueringly resolued, this indigested Chaos of Doctourship, and greedy pothunter after applause, is an apparant Publican and sinner, a selfe-loue surfetted sot, a broken-winded galdbacke Iade, that hath borne vp his head in his time, but now is quite 5 foundred & tired, a scholer in nothing but the scum of schollership, a stale soker at *Tullies Offices*, the droane of droanes, and maister drumble-bee of non proficients. What hath he wrote but hath had a wofull end? When did he dispute but hee duld all his auditorie? his Poetry more 10 spiritesse than smal beere, his Oratory Arts bastard, not able to make a man rauishingly weepe, that hath an Onion at his eye. In Latin, like a louse, he hath manie legges, many lockes fleec'd from *Tullie*, to carry away and cloath a little body of matter, but yet hee moues but slowly, is 15 apparaild verie poorely.

H 1 In English, ice is not so cold, yet on the ice of igno[r]ance will he slide. No wise man pittie him that perisheth so wilfully.

Judge the world, iudge the highest Courts of appeale 20 from the miscarried worlds iudgement (Cambridge and Oxford) wherein I haue trespassed in *Pierce Pennilesse*, that hee shoulde talke of gnashing of teeth, yong Phaetons, yong Icari, yong Chorebi, young Babingtons.

Neuer was I in earnest, til thus he twitted me with the 25 comparison of a traitour.

Babington, high was thy birth, I a bondslaue of fortune in comparison of thee; thy fall greater than *Phaetons*, thy offence as heynous as *Iudasses*. May neuer more such foule seeds of offence be sowne in so faire a shape, may they 30 be markt always to mischiefe that meane as thou didst. The braunches of thy stocke remaines yet vnblasted with anie disobedience. God forbid that our forheades should for euer bee blotted with our forefathers misdemeanors. Die, ill deeds, with your vngratioust ill dooers; the liuing 35 haue no portion with the dead; hell once paid his due, heauen gates are open to succeeding posteritie.

Prate of *Pierce Pennilesse and his paltrie* as long as thou wilst, I will play at put-pinne with thee for all that thou art woorth, but of thy betters gette thee a better discoursing penne before thou descantes of.

5 L. *Greenes inwardest companion pinched with want, vexed with discredit, tormented with other mens felicitie, and ouer-whelmed with his owne miserie, in a rauing and frantike moode, most desperately exhibiteth a Supplication to the Deuill.*

10 C. Heerein thou thinkst thou hast won the spurs from all writers, but God and Dame Fiction knows | thou art H 1^v farre wide of thy ayme; for neither was I *Greenes* companion any more than for a carowse or two, nor pincht with any vngentleman-like want when I inuented *Pierce 15 Pennilesse*.

Pauper non est cui rerum suppedit usus: only the discontented meditation of learning, generally now a dayes little valued, and her professors set at naught & dishartened, caused mee to handle that plaintife subiect more seriously.

20 *Vext with discredit* (Gabriel) I neuer was, as thou hast beene euer sinc *Familiaritas peperit contemptū*, thy familiar epistles brought thee in contempt.

Though I haue beeне pinched with want (as who is not at one time or another *Pierce Penilesse*) yet my muse neuer 25 wept for want of maintenance as thine did in *Musarum lachrimæ*, that was miserably flouted at in M. *Winkfields* Comœdie of *Pedantius* in Trinitie Colledge.

How am I tormented with other mens felicitie, otherwise thā saying, I know a Cobler that was worth fие hundred 30 pound, an hostler that had built a goodly Inne, & might dispend forty pound yearly by his land, a Carman that had whipt a thousand pound out of his horse taile; if I had likewise reckond vp a ropemaker, that by tormenting of hempe, & going backward (which the Deuill would nere 35 doe) had turnd as many l*ill* sixpences ouer the thumbe, as kept three of his sonnes at Cambridge a long time, & that

22 in] into Coll., Gro. 23 at] om. Coll., Gro.

which is more, three proud sonnes, that when they met the hangman (their Fathers best chapman) would scarce put of their hats to him, why then thou shouldest haue had some colour of quarell, thy accusatiō might iustly haue enterd his title *pro aris & focis*, whereas now it is friuolous and 5 forcelesse.]

H 2 The sharpest wits, I perceiue, haue none of the best memories ; if they had, thou wouldest nere haue toucht mee with tormenting my selfe with other mens felicitie ; for how didst thou torment thy selfe with other mens felicitie, when 10 in the 28. Page of thy first tome of Epistles, thou exclaimst *that in no age so little was so much made of, nothing aduanst to be something, Numbers made of Ciphars*, that is, by interpretatiō, all those that were aduaunst either in the Court or commonwealth at that time, had little to com- 15 mend them, nothing in account worthy preferment, but were meere meacocks & Ciphars in comparison of thy excellent out-cast selfe that liu'dst at Cambridge vn-mounted.

Hang thee, hang thee, thou common coosener of curteous 20 readers, thou grosse shifter for shitten tapsterly iests, haue I imitated Tarltons *play of the seauen deadly sinnes in my plot of Pierce Penilesse?* whom hast thou not imitated then in the course of thy booke ? thou hast borrowed aboue twenty phrases and epithites from mee, which in sober 25 sadnessse thou makst vse of as thy owne, when thou wouldest exhort more effectuall.

Is it lawfull but for one preacher to preach of the ten commandements? hath none writ of the five senses but Aristotle? was sinne so vtterly abolished with Tarltons 30 play of the seuen deadly sins, that ther could be nothing said *supra* of that argument ?

Canst thou exemplifie vnto mee (thou impotent moate-catching carper) one minnum of the particular deuice of his play that I purloind ? There be manie men of one name 35 that are nothing a kindred. Is there any further distribu-

tion of sins, not shadowed vnder these 7. large spreading branches of iniquity, on which a man may worke, and not tread on *Tarletons* | heeles? If not, what blemish is it to H 2^v *Pierce Pennilesse* to begin where the Stage doth ende, to 5 build vertue a Church on that foundation that the Deuill built his Chappell?

Gabriell, if there bee anie witte or industrie in thee, now I will dare it to the vttermost: write of what thou wilt, in what language thou wilt, and I will confute it and answer 10 it. Take truths part, and I wil proue truth to be no truth, marching out of thy dūg-voiding mouth.

Diuinitie I except, which admits no dalliance: but in any other art or profession, of which I am not yet free, and thou shalt challenge me to trie maistries in, Ile bind my 15 selfe Prentise too, and studie throughly, though it neuer stande mee in any other stead while I liue, but to make one reply, only because I wil haue the last word of thee.

I would count it the greatest punishment that *In speech* could lay vpon mee, to be bound to studie the Danish 20 tongue, which is able to make any Englishman haue the mumpes in his mouth, that shall but plunge through one full point of it, yet the Danish tongue, or any Turks, or hogs, or dogs tongue whatsoeuer, would I learne rather than bee put downe by such a ribauldry *Don Diego* as thou art.

25 Heigh, drawer, fil vs a fresh quart of *new-found phrases*, since *Gabriell* saies we borrow all our eloquence from Tauerne: but let it be of the mighty *Burdeaux* grape, pure *vino de monte*, I coniure thee, by the same token that the *Devils dauncing schoole in the bottome of a mans purse that 30 is emptie*, hath beene a gray-beard Prouerbe two hundred yeares before *Tarlton* was borne: Ergo, *no gramercy*, Dicke *Tarlton*. But *the summe of summes is this*, I drinke to you, M. *Gabricll*, | on that condition, that you shall not excruciate H 3 your braine to be conceited and haue no wit.

35 Since we are here on our prating bench in a close roome, and that there is none in company but you, my approoued good friends, *four Letters, and certain Sonnets*, your Pages,

I will rehearse vnto you some part of the Methode of my demeanour in *Pierce Pennilesse*.

First, insomuch as the principall scope of it is a most liuelie anatomie of sinne, the diuell is made speciall supervisor of it, to him it is dedicated ; as if a man shoulde 5 compile a curious examined discouerie of whoredome, and dedicate it to the quarter Maisters of Bridewell, because they are best able to punish it.

Wherfore as there is no fire without some smoke, no complaint without some precedent cause of agreeuance, 10 I introduce a discontented Scholler vnder the person of *Pierce Pennilesse*, tragicallye exclaiming vpon his partial-eid fortune, that kept an Almes boxe of compassion in store for euery one but him-selfe. He tels how he tost his imagination like a dogge in a blanket, searcht euerie corner 15 of the house of Charitie, to see if he could light on any that would set a new nappe of an old threedbare Cloake : but, like him that hauing a letter to deliuier to a Scottish Lorde, when hee came to his house to enquire for him, found no bodie at home but an ape that sate in the Porch 20 and made mops and mows at him ; so he, deliuering his vnperusde papers to Powles Churchyard, the first that took them vp was the Ape *Gabriel*, who made mops and mows at them, beslauering the outside of them a little, but coulde not enter into the contents, which was an ase beyonde his 25 vnderstanding. |

H 3^v With the first and second leafe hee plaies verie pretilie, and in ordinarie termes of extenuating verdits *Pierce Pennilesse for a Grammer Schoole wit* ; saies *his Margine* is as deepleie learnt as Fauste præcor gelida, that *his Muse* 30 sobbeth and groneth verie piteouslie, bids him not cast himself headlong into the horrible gulph of desperation, comes ouer him that hee is a creature of wonderfull hope, as *his own inspired courage diuinely suggesteth*, wils him to inchaunt some magnificent Mecenas, to honour himselfe in honouring 35

11 introduce in a Q. Corr. in Errata.
veric Q.

22 to] in Coll. Gro.

27 .

him, with a hundred such *gracewanting* Ironies cutte out against the woll, that woulde iepard the best ioint of *Poetica licentia* to procure laughter, when there crinkled crabbed countenance (the verie resemblance of a sodden dogges face) 5 hath sworne it woulde neuer consent therenvto.

Not the most exquisite thing that is, but the Coüsel Table Asse, Richard Clarke, may so Carterly deride.

Euerie Milke-maide can gird with, Ist true? How saie you, lo? who would haue thought it? Good Beare, bite not.
10 A man is a man though hee hath but a hose on his head.

No such light painment, *Gabriel*, hast thou at my hands; I tell thee where, when, and how thou shewdst thy selfe a Dunsiuall.

Onely externall defects thou casts in my dish; nothing 15 internall in thee, but I prooue that it is altogether excrementall.

A fewe Elegeicall verses of mine thou pluckest in pieces most ruthfullie, and quotes them against mee as aduantageable, together with some dismembred Margine notes, but 20 all is inke cast away, you recouer no costs and charges. With one minutes studie Ile destroie more, than thou art able to build in ten daies. |

Squeise thy heart into thy inkehorne, and it shall but H 4 congeal into clodderd garbage of confutatio, thy soule hath 25 no effects of a soule, thou canst not sprinkle it into a sentence, & make euerie line leape like a cup of neat wine new powred out, as an Orator must doe that lies aright in wait for mens affections.

Whome hast thou wonne to hate mee by light crawling 30 ouer my Text like a Cankerworm?

Some superficial slime of poison hast thou driueld from thy pen in thy shallow footed sliding through my *Supplication*, which one pen ful of repurified inke will excessiuelie wash out. Shall I informe thee (that vnfruitfullie endeuerst 35 to informe authoritie against me) why I infixed those Poeticall latine margēt notes to some fewe pages in the beginning of *Pierce Pennilesse*? I did it to explaine to

such expected spiefaulcs as thou art, that it was no vncouth abhorrencie from the custome of former writers, for a man openly to bewaile his vndeserued ill destenie.

In the vncasing of thy brother *Richard*, I calculated the Natiuitie of the *Astrologicall Discourse*; I apparentlie suggested what a lewd piece of Prophecie it was; I registred the infinite scorne that the whole Realme intertaintd it with, the Adages that ran vpon it, *Tarltons* and *Eldertons nigrum THETA* set to it, yet wilt thou, that art the sonne and heire to shamelesse impudence, the vnlleall vsurper of judgement from all his true owners, the HOVDEN and pointing stock recreation of Trinitie hall, *Vanitas vanitatis & omnia vanitas*, inuest that in the highest throne of Art and Schollership, which a scrutinie of so manie millions of wel discerning condemnations hath concluded to be viler than newesmungrie, & that which is vilest of all, no lesse vile than thy Epistles. |

H 4^v Most voices, most voices, most voices ; who is on my side, who ? Whether is the *Astrologicall Discourse* a better booke than *Pierce Pennilesse*? Gabriel hangtelow saies it is ; I am the Defendant, and denie it, and yet I doe not ouercull my owne workes : His assertion he countermures thus :

Pierce Pennilesse is a man better acquainted with the Diuels of hell than the Starres of Heauen : Ergo, the Astro- 25 logicall Discourse is better than the notorious diabolicall discourse of Pierce Pennilesse.

Once againe I denie his Argument to bee of lawfull age. *Pierce Pennilesse* is a better Starmunger than a Diuel-munger, which needeth no other FOR to corroborate it but 30 this, that my yea, at all times, is as good as his nay.

How is the *Supplication* a diabolicall Discourse, otherwise than as it intreats of the diuerse natures and properties of Diuels and spirits? in that f.r fetcht sense may the famous *defensatiue against supposed Prophecies* and the 35

3 ill] om. Coll., Gro. 22 assetrion Q. Corr. in Errata.
countermures him thus Coll., Gro.

Discouerie of Witchcraft be called notorious Diabolicall discourses, as well as the *Supplication*, for they also intreate of the illusions and sundrie operations of spirits : Likewise may I say that those his foure Letters nowe on their triall, 5 are foure notorious lowsie Discourses, because they lyingly discourse little else sauē *Greenes* lowsie estate before his death.

M. *Churchyard*, our old quarrel is renued, when nothing else can bee fastned on mee ; this Letter leapper vpbraideth 10 mee with *crying you mercie* ; I cannot tell, but I think you will haue a saying to him for it. Ther's no reason that such a one as he should presume to intermeddle in your matters, it cannot be done with any intent but to stirre mee vp to write against you a-fresh, which nothing vnder 15 heau'n shall draw mee to doe. I loue you vnfainedly, and admire your aged Muse, that may well be grand-mother to our grandeloquentest Poets at this present :

Sanctum & venerabile vetus omne Poema.

Shores wife is yong, though you be stept in yeares ; in 20 her shall you liue when you are dead.

For that vnatived indammagement I haue done you heretofore, Ile be your champion hence forward against any that dare write against you. Onely as euer you would light vpon a good cuppe of old sacke when you are most 25 drie, pocket not vp this slie abuse at a rakehell rampalions hands, one that, when an iniurie is deepe buried in the graue of obliuion, shall seeke to digge it vp againe, recall that into mens memories which was consumed and forgotten.

Whoreson Niniammer, that wilt assault a man & haue 30 no stronger weapons.

The Italian saith, a man must not take knowledge of iniurie till he be able to reuenge it.

Nay but, in plaine good fellowship, art thou so innocent & vnconceiuing that thou shouldest ere hope to dash mee 35 quite out of request by telling mee of the *Counter, and my hostesse Penia?*

I yeeld that I haue dealt vpon spare commodities of wine
and capons in my daies, I haue sung *George Gascoignes*
Counter-tenor ; what then ? Wilt thou peremptorily define
that it is a place where no honest man or Gentleman of
credit euer came ?

5

Heare what I say ; a Gentleman is neuer throughly
entred into credit till he hath beene there ; & that Poet or
nouice, be hee what he will, ought to suspect his wit, and
remaine halfe in a doubt that it is not authenticall, till it
I 1^v hath beene seene and allowd in vn-|thriffts consistory.

10

Grande doloris ingenium. Let fooles dwell in no stronger
houses than their Fathers built them, but I protest I should
neuer haue writ passion well, or beene a peece of a Poet, if
I had not arriu'd in those quarters.

Trace the gallantest youthes and brauest reuellers about
Towne in all the by-paths of their expence, & you shall
vnfallibly finde, that once in their life time they haue visited
that melancholy habitation.

15

Come, come ; if you will goe to the sound truth of it,
there is no place of the earth like it, to make a man wise.

20

Cambridge and Oxford may stande vnder the elbowe
of it.

I vow if I had a sonne, I would sooner send him to one
of the Counters to learne lawe, than to the Innes of Court
or Chauncery.

25

My hostesse Penia, that's a bugges word ; I pry thee what
Morrall hast thou vnder it ? I will depose, if thou wilt,
that till now I neuer heard of anie such English name.

There is a certaine thing cald *christian veritie*, & an-
other hight *common sense*, and a third cleapt *humilitie* :
they are more requisite and necessary for thee than *modestie*
or discretion for mee and my companions, of which would
thou shouldst vnderstand, we are so well prouided that we
can lend thee and thy brother *Richard* a great deale, and
yet keepe more than wee shall haue need of for ourselues.

35

Wilt thou be so hardy and iron-visaged to gainsay that

9 a] om. Coll., Gro.

32 would] om. Coll., Gro.

thy brother Vicars Batchlours hood was not turnd ouer his eares for abusing of *Aristotle*? I know thou hast more grace than so, thou dost not contra-dict it flatly, but I ²
⁵ slubbers it ouer faintly, and comes to recapitulate, not confute, some of the phrases I vsde in the vnhandsoming of his diuinitiship.

I my selfe, in the same order of disgracing thou singles them foorth, will haue them vp againe, and see if thou, or anie man, can absurdifie the worst of them.

¹⁰ I say, and will make it good, that in the Astrologicall discourse thy brother (as if hee had lately cast the heau'ns water, or beene at the anatomizing of the skies intrailes in Surgeons hall) prophesieth of such strange wonders to ensue from the starres distemperature,
¹⁵ and the vnusuall adulterie of plannets, as none but hee that is bawd to those celestiall bodies could euer descry.

This too I will ratifie for truthable & legible English, that his Astronomy broke his day with his creditors,
²⁰ and Saturne & Jupiter prou'd honester men than all the world tooke them for.

That the whole Uniuersitie hist at him, Tarlton at the Theater made feastes of him, and Elderton consumed his ale crammed nose to nothing, in beare-baiting him
²⁵ with whole bundels of Ballads.

All this he barely repeates without any disprouement or denudation at all, as if it were so lame in it selfe that it would adnihilate it selfe with the onelie rehearsall of it.

³⁰ For the gentilitie of the *Nashes* (though it might seeme a humor borrowed from thee to bragge of it) yet some of vs who neuer sought into it til of late, can proue the extancy of our auncestors before there was euer a ropemaker in England. Wee can vaunt larger petigrees than patrimonies,
³⁵ yet of such extrinsecall things, common to tenne thousand calues and oxen, would not I willingly vaunt, only it hath

I 2^v pleased M. Printer, both in this booke and *Pierce Pennilesse*, to intaile a vaine title to my name, which I care not for, without my consent or priuitie I here auouch.

But on the gentilitie of *T. N.* his beard, the maister Butler of Pembroke hall, stil I will stand to the death ; for it is the very prince Elector of peaks, a beard that I cannot bee perswaded but was the Emperour *Dionisius* his, surnamed the Tyrant, when hee playde the schoolemaister in Corinth.

Gabriell, thou hast a prety polwigge sparrows tayle peake, 10 yet maist thou not compare with his : thy Father, for all by thy owne confession *hee makes haires*, had neuer the art to twilt vp such a grim triangle of haire as that.

Be not offended, honest *T. N.*, that I am thus bold with thee, for I affect thee for the names sake, as much as any 15 one man can do another, and know thee to be a fine fellow, and fit to discharge a farre higher calling than that wherein thou liu'st.

What more stiffe lurketh behind in this letter to be distributed into shop-dust ? 20

Pierce Pennilesse is as childish and garish a booke as euer came in print ; when he talks of the sheepish discourse of the Lambe of God and his enemies, he saies, it is monstrosous and absurd, and not to bee sufferd in a Christian congregatio ; that Richard hath scum'd ouer the schoolmen, 25 and of the froth of their folly made a dish of Diuinitie brewesse, whiche the Dogs would not eate.

If he saide so (as hee did) and can proue it (as hee hath done), by Sainte Lubecke, then *The Lambe of God* is as childish and garish stiffe as euer came in print, indeede. 30

I, but how doth *Pierce Pennilesse* expiate the coinqination of these obiections ?

I 3 Richard, whom (because he is his brother, he there-fore censures more curious and rigorous, in calling him M. H. than hee would haue done otherwise) red the Philosophie 35 Lecture in Cambridge with good liking and singular commendation, when *A per se a* was not so much as Idoneus

auditor ciuilis scientiæ, *Ergo, the Lambe of God* beares a better Fleece than hee giues out it doth.

A perse a is improoued nothing since, excepting his old Flores Poetarum and Tarletons surmounting rethorique,
⁵ *with a little euphuisme and Greenesse inough.*

Gabriel reports him to the fauourablest opinion of those that know A perse a his Prefaces, rimes, and the very timpanie of his Tarlonizing wit, his Supplication to the Diuel.

Quiet your selues a litle, my Maisters, and you shal see
¹⁰ mee dispearse all those cloudes well inough. That *Richard* red the Philosophie Lecture at *Cambridge*, I doe not withstand, but how?

Verie Lentenlie and scantlie, (farre bee it wee shuld slander him so much as his brother *Gabriell* hath done, to
¹⁵ saie he read it with good liking and singularitie). Credite mee, any that hath but a little refuse *Colloquium Latine*, to interseame a Lecture with, and can saie but *Quapropter vos mei auditores*, may reade with equiualent commendation and liking.

²⁰ I remember him woondrous well. In the chiefe pompe of that his false praise, I both heard him, and heard what was the vniuersall slender valuation of him.

There was eloquent *Maister Knox*, (a man whose losse all good learning can neuer sufficienly deplore); twas he
²⁵ and one *Maister Jones* of Trinitie Colledge, that, in my time, with more speciall approbation conuerst in those Readings. |

Since, I haue heard of two rare yong men, *M. Meriton* ¹³ and another, that in supplying that place of succession
³⁰ haue surmounted all former mediocritie, and wonne them-selues an euerlasting good name in the Vniuersitie.

These thou shouldst haue memoriz'd, if any, but thou art giuen to speake well of none but thy selfe and thy two brothers.

³ improoued in nothing Coll., Gro. ⁷ (and throughout) per se Coll., Gro.
 ' For verie companie, read verie timpanie' *Errata*, but the text is correct.
¹⁴ *Gabriell*] *Richard Q.* The error was noticed by *Grosart* in his *Errata*.

Thrice fruitfull S. Iohns, how many hundred perfecter Schollers than the three brothers hast thou nurst at thy paps, that yet haue not shakte off obscuritie?

Mellifluous PLAYFERE, one of the chief props of our aged, & auntientest, & absolutest Vniuersities present 5 flourishing, Where doe thy supereminent gifts shine to themselues, that the Court cannot bee acquainted with them?

Few such men speake out of Fames highest Pulpits, though out of her highest Pulpits speake the purest of all speakers.

Let me adde one word, and let it not bee thought derogatorie to anie. I cannot bethinke mee of two in England in all things comparable to him for his time. Seldome haue I beheld so pregnant a pleasaunt wit coupled with a memorie of such huge incomprehensible receipt, 15 deepe reading and delight better mixt than in his Sermons.

Sed quorsum hæc, how doe these digressions linke in with our *Subiectum circa quod?*

Flaunting *Richard* and his Philosophie Lecture, was vnder our fingers euen now, howsoeuer wee haue lost him. 20 Hold the candle, and you shall see me cast a figure for him extempore: Oh hoh, I haue founde him without any further seeking. Giue me your eares, | *Io Pæan*; God sauе them, they are long ones.

Now, betweene you and me declare, as if you were at 25 shrift, whether you be not a superlatiue blocke, for al you readd the Philosophie Lecture at Cambridge: Brieflie, brieflie; let mee not stand all daie about you.

His conscience accuseth him, hee is stroke starke dumbe ; onely by signes he craues to bee admitted *in forma pauperis*, 30 that we should let him passe for a pore fellow, and he will sell his birthright in learning, with *Esau*, for a messe of porridge.

Curæ leues loquuntur; he hath but a little cure to look too. *Maiores stupent*, more liuing would make him studie 35 more.

For this once wee dispence with you, because you look so penitentlie on it, but let not me catch you selling any more such twise sodden sawdust diuinicie as *the Lambe of God and his enemies*, for if I do, Ile make a dearth of 5 paper in Pater-noster-rowe (such as was not this seauen yeare) onelie with writing against thee.

A perse a can doe it; tempt not his clemencie too much. *A perse a?*

Passion of God, howe came I by that name? my god-
10 father *Gabriel* gaue it mee, and I must not refuse it. Nor if you were priuie whence it came would you hold it worthie to be refused; for before I had the reuersion of it hee bestow'd it on a Noble man, whose new fashiond apparrell and *Tuscanish gestures, cringing side necke, eies glancing,*
15 *fisnomie smerking*, hauing described to the full, he concludes with this verse:

Euerie inch A perse a his termes and braueries in print.

Hold you your peace *Nashe*: *that was before you were Idoneus auditor ciuilis scientiæ*. It may bee so, for thou wert
20 a Libeller before I was borne. Yet vn-der correction bee it I 4^v spoken, I haue come to the schooles and purg'd rheume many a time, when your brother was Philosophie Lecturer; he wanted no *supplosus pedū*, to spend away his houre, that I could help him with.

25 *What since I am improued* you partly haue prooued to your cost; and may doe more at large, if God send vs more leysure.

As for *Flores Poetarum*, they are flowers that yet I neuer smelt too. Ile pawne my hand to a halfe penny, I haue
30 readd more good Poets thorough than thou euer hardst off.

The floures of your *Foure Letters* it may be I haue ouerlookt more narrowlie, and done my best deuoire to assemble them together into patheticall posie, which I will here present to Maister Orator *Edge* for a Newyeares

² not me] me not *Coll., Gro.*

²² many a] in my *Coll., Gro.*

gift, leauing them to his *wordie* discretion to be censured, whether they be currant in inkehornisme or no.

Conscious mind: canicular tales: egregious an argument; when as *egregious* is neuer vsed in english but in the extreame ill part. *Ingenuitie: Iouiall mind: valarous* 5 *Authors: inckehorne aduentures: inckchorne pads: putatiue opinions: putatiue artists: energeticall persuasions: Rascal-litie: materiallitie: artificiallitie: Fantasticallitie: diuine Entelechy: loud Mentry: deceitfull perfidy: addicted to Theory: the worlds great Incendiarie: sirenized furies:* 10 *soueraigntie immense: abundant Cauteles: cautelous and aduentrous: cordiall liquor: Catilinaries and Phillipicks: perfunctorie discourses: Davids sweetnes olimpique: the Idee high and deepe Abisse of excellence: The only Vnorne of the Muses: the Aretinish mountaine of huge exaggerations:* 15 *The gratioun law of Amnesty: amicable termes: amicable | K i end: Effectuate: addoulce his melodie: Magy: polime-chany: extensiuely emploid: precious Traynment: Nouellets: Notorietie: negotiation: mechanician.*

Nor are these all, for euerie third line hath some of this 20 ouer-rackt absonisme. Nor do I altogether scum off all these as the newe ingendred fome of the English, but allowe some of them for a neede to fill vp a verse; as *Traynment*, and one or two wordes more, which the libertie of prose might well haue spar'd. In a verse, when a worde 25 of three sillables cannot thrust in but sidelings, to ioynt him euen we are oftentimes faine to borrowe some lesser quarry of elocution from the Latine, alwaies retaining this for a principle, that a leake of indesinence, as a leake in a shipp, must needly bee stopt with what matter soeuer. 30

Chaucers authoritie, I am certaine, shalbe alleadgd against mee for a many of these balductums. Had *Chaucer* liu'd to this age, I am verily perswaded hee would haue discarded the tone halfe of the harsher sort of them.

They were the Oouse which ouerflowing barbarisme, 35 withdrawne to her Scottish Northren chanell, had left

17 *Magy polimechany Q.* 19 *Notorietie negotiation Q.* 32 *Chauier Q.*

behind her. Art, like yong grasse in the spring of *Chaucers* florishing, was glad to peepe vp through any slime of corruption, to be beholding to she car'd not whome for apparaile, trauailing in those colde countries. There is no
 5 reason that shee, a banisht Queene into this barraine soile, hauing monarchizd it so long amongst the Greeks and Romanes, should (although warres furie had humbled her to some extremitie) still be constrained, when she hath recouerd her state, to weare the robes of aduersitie, iet
 10 it in her old rags, when she is wedded to new prosperitie. |

Vtere moribus præteritis, saith Caius Cæsar in Aulus K 1^v
Gellius, loquere verbis præsentibus.

Thou art mine enemie, *Gabriell*, and, that which is more, a contemptible vnder-foote enemie, or else I would teach
 15 thy olde *Trewantship* the true vse of words, as also how more inclinable verse is than prose, to dance after the horrizonant pipe of inueterate antiquitie.

It is no matter, since thou hast brought godly instruction out of loue with thee, vse thy own destruction, raigne sole
 20 Emperour of inkehornisme ; I wish vnto thee all superabundant increase of the singular gifts of absurditie, and vaineglory : from this time forth for euer, euer, euer,
 25 euermore maist thou be canonized as the *Nunparreille* of impious epistlers, the short shredder out of sandy sentences without lime, as *Quintillian* tearmed *Seneca* all lime and no sande ; all matter and no circumstance ; the factor for the Fairies and night Vrchins, in supplanting and setting aside the true children of the English, and suborning inkehorne changlings in their steade, the galimafrier of all
 30 stiles in one standish, as imitating euerie one, & hauing no seperate forme of writing of thy owne ; and to conclude, the onely feather-driuer of phrases, and putter of a good word to it when thou hast once got it, that is betwixt this and the Alpes. So bee it worlde without ende. Chroniclers,
 35 heare my praiers. Good Maister *Stowe*, be not vnmindfull of him.

Thats well remembred, now I talke of Chroniclers,

I founde the Astrologicall discourse the other night in the Chronicle. *Gabriell* will outface vs, it is a worke of such deepe arte & iudgement, when it is expressely past vnder record for a coosening prognostication. The wordes are K 2 these, though somewhat a|breuiated; for he makes a long 5 circumlocution of it.

In the yeare 1583. by meanes of an Astrologicall discourse vppon the great and notable coniunction of Saturne and Iupiter, the common sort of people were almost driu'n out of their wits, and knew not what to doe: but 10 when no such thing hapned, they fell to their former securitie, and condemned the discouser of extreame madnesse and follie.

Ipsissima sunt Aristotelis verba, they are the verie words of *John Tell-troth*, in the 1357. folio of the last edition of 15 the great Chronicle of England.

Mehercule quidem, if it be so taken vp, *Pierce Pennilesse* may well cast his cappe after it for euer ouertaking it. But some thing euen now, *Gabriell*, thou wert girding against my *præfaces and rimes*, and the timpanie of my 20 *Tarltonizing wit*.

Well, these be your words, *præfaces and rimes*; let mee studie a little, *præfaces and rimes*. *Minimè verò; si ais nego*. I neuer printed rime in my life but those verses in the beginning of *Pierce Pennilesse*, though you haue set 25 foorth

*The stories quaint of manie a doutie flie,
That read a lecture to the ventrous elfe.*

And so forth as followeth in chambling rowe.

Præfaces two, or a paire of Epistles, I will receyue into 30 the protection of my parentage: out of both which, sucke out one *solæcisme*, or mishapen English word, if thou canst for thy guts.

Wherein haue I borrowed from *Creene* or *Tarlton*, that

18 well] om. Gro.
Martin. Not in Coll.

22 Grosart has here the side-note Apply to Mas.

I should thanke them for all I haue? Is my stile like *Greenes*, or my ieasts like *Tarltons*? Do I talke of any counterfeit birds, or hearbs, or stones, or rake vp any new-found poetry from vnder the wals of *Troy*? If I do, trip 5 mee with it ; but I doe not, therefore Ile | be so saucy as ² *K*,³ trip you with the grand lie. Ware stumbling of whetstones in the darke there, my maisters.

This I will proudly boast (yet am I nothing a kindred to the three brothers) that the vaine which I haue (be it a *median* 10 *vaine*, or a madde man) is of my owne begetting, and cals no man father in England but my selfe, neyther *Euphues*, nor *Tarlton*, nor *Greene*.

Not *Tarlton* nor *Greene* but haue beeene contented to let my simple iudgement ouerrule them in some matters of wit. 15 *Euphues* I readd when I was a little ape in Cambridge, and then I thought it was *Ipse ille*: it may be excellent good still, for ought I know, for I lookt not on it this ten yeare: but to imitate it I abhorre, otherwise than it imitates *Plutarch*, *Ouid*, and the choisest Latine Authors.

20 If you be aduiside, I tooke *shortest vowels and longest mutes* in the beginning of my booke, as suspitious of being accessarie to the making of a Sonnet wherto Maister *Christopher Birds* name is set ; there I saide that you mute forth many such phrases in the course of your booke, which 25 I would point at as I past by : Heere I am as good as my word, for I note that thou beeing afraide of beraying thy selfe with wrting, *wouldest faine bee a mute*, when it is too late to repent. Againe, thou reuest on vs and saist *that mutes are coursed and vowels haunted*. Thou art no mute, 30 yet shalt thou be haunted and coursed to the full. I will neuer leaue thee as long as I am able to lift a pen.

Whether I seeke to bee counted a terrible bulbegger or no, Ile baite thee worse than a bull, so that thou shalt desire some body on thy knees to helpe thee with letters of 35 commendation to *Bull*, ⁴the hangman, that he may dispatch

² *New par in Gro.*

⁵ bee c.w.

¹³ bnt Q.

⁶ Gro.

¹⁷ knou Q.

³³ that the thou Q.

¹⁶ I then Coll.,

K₃ thee out of the way before | more affliction come vpon thee.

All the inuictiue and satiricall spirits shall then bee thy familiars, as the furies in hell are the familiars of sinfull ghosts, to follow them and torment them without intermission: thou shalt bee double girt with girds, and scoff at till those that stand by do nothing but cough with laughing.

Thou saiest I professe the art of railing: thou shalt not say so in vaine, for, if there bee any art or depth in it, more than *Aretine* or *Agrippa* haue discouered or diu'd into, looke that I will sound it and search it to the vttermost, but ere I haue done with thee ile leauue thee the miserablest creature that the sunne euer sawe.

There is no kind of peaceable pleasure in poetrerie, but I can drawe equally in the same yoke with the haughtiest of those foule-mouthd backbiters that say I can do nothing but raile.

I haue written in all sorts of humors priuately, I am perswaded, more than any yoong man of my age in England.

20

The weather is cold, and I am wearie with confuting: the remainder of the colde contents of this Epistle be these.

He eniuously indeuors, since he cannot reuenge himselfe, to incense men of high calling against me, and wold inforce it into their opinions, that whatsoeuer is spokē in *Pierce Pennilesse* concerning *Pesants, Clownes, & hypocriticall hot-spurs, Midasses, Buckram Giants, & the mightie Prince of darkenesse*, is meant of them; let him proue it, or bring the man to my face to whome I euer made any vnduetifull exposition of it. I am to be my own interpreter first in this case. I say, in *Pierce Pennilesse* I haue set downe nothing but that which I haue had my president for in forraigne writers, nor had I the least allusion to any man set aboue mee in degree, but onely glanc'st at vice generallie.

The tale of the Beare and the Foxe, how euer it may set

³ satericall Q. ³⁰ it, I Q. ³⁰⁻¹ in this first case Q. *Corr. in Errata.*
³⁴ bnt Q.

fooles heads a worke a farre off, yet I had no concealed
ende in it but, in the one, to describe the right nature of
a bloudthirsty tyrant, whose indefinite appetite all the
pleasures in the earth haue no powre to bound in goodnes,
5 but he must seeke a new felicitie in varietie of cruelty, and
destroying all other mens prosperitie ; for the other, to
figure an hypocrite : Let it be *Martin*, if you will, or some
old dog that bites sorer than hee, who secretlie goes and
seduceth country Swaines.

10 Makes them beleue that that honny which their bees
brought forth was poysonous and corrupt.

That they may buy honny cheaper than by being at
such charges in keeping of bees.

That it is not necessary they shoulde haue such stately
15 hives, or lie sucking at such precious honnicombs.

If this (which is nothing else but to swim with the
stremme) be to tell tales as shrewdly as mother *Hubbard*,
it shoulde seeme mother *Hubbard* is no great shrewe,
howeuer thou treading on her heeles so oft, shee may bee
20 tempted beyonde her ten commandements.

A litle before this, the foresaid fanaticall *Phobetor*,
geremumble, *tirleriwisco*, or what you will, cald forth the
biggest gunshot of my thundring tearmes, steept in *Aqua*
fortis and gunpowder, to come and trie them selues on his
25 paper Target.

But that it is no credite, *Galpogas*, to discharge a Cannon
against a lowse, thou shouldest not call in vaine: thou
shouldest heare Tom a Lincolne roare | with a witnes ; woe K 4
worth the daie & the yeare when thou hearest him. I feare-
30 blast thee nowe but with the winde of my weapon. With
the wast of my words I lay wast all the feeble fortifications
of thy wit. Shewe mee the Vniuersities hand and seale
that thou art a Doctour sealed and deliuered in the presence
of a whole Commensemement, and Ile present thee with my
35 whole artillerie store of eloquence.

10 beleue that honny *Coll.*, *Gro.* 13 of] *om. Coll.*, *Gro.*

om. Coll., *Gro.* 27 against *Coll.*, *Gro.*

14 it]

A bots on thee for mee for a lumpish, leaden heeld letter dawber, my stile, with treading in thy clammie steps, is growne as heauie gated, as if it were bound to an Aldermans pace, with the irons at Newgate cald the widows Almes.

Ere I was chained to thee thus by the necke, I was as 5 light as the Poet *Accius*, who was so lowe and so slender that hee was faine to put lead into his shooes for feare the winde shoulde blowe him into another Countrie.

Those that catch Leopards set cups of wine before them ; those that will winne liking and grace of the readers must 10 set before them continually that which shall cheare them and reuiue them.

Gabriell, thou hast not done so, thou canst not doe so, therfore thy works neither haue, nor can any way hinder mee, nor benefit the Printer.

15

Euen in the packing vp of my booke, a hot ague hath mee by the backe. Maugre sicknesse worst, a leane arme put out of the bed shall grind and pass euery crum of thy booke into pin-dust.

The next peece of seruice thou dost against *Pierce 20 Pennilesse*, is the naming of him *wofull poueretto, and pleasant supposing thou puldst him by the ragged sleeve :*

Then matchest thou thy selfe to *Vlisses*, and him to *Irus*;

K 4^v *Irrita sunt hæc omnia*: it is a sleeuelesse ieast. I | haue besliu'd thee already for it ; it toucheth the body and not 25 the minde. Besides, I was neuer altogether *Peter Poueretto*, vtterly throwne downe, desperately seperated from all means of releeuing my selfe, since I knew how to seperate a knaue from an honest man, or throw my cloake ouer my nose when I salied by the Counters.

30

The ragged cognizance on the sleeve, I may say to thee, carried meate in the mouth when time was : doe not dispraise it yet, for it hath many high partakers. *Quæ sequuntur huiusmodi sunt.*

Thou turmoilst thy *pia mater* to proue base births 35

² in] on Coll., Gro. ³ it] I Coll., Gro. ⁷ into] in Coll., Gro.
¹⁴ thy] thy Q. ²⁰ Pierue Q. ²¹ of him Q. ³⁰ sailed Coll., Gro.

better than the offspring of many discents, because thou art a mushrumpe sprung vp in one night, a seely mouse begotten on a moulehill, that wouldest fayne pearche thy selfe on the mountaines, when thy legges are too short to
5 ouercome such a long iourney of glorie.

My margent note, *Meritis expendite causam*, thou wouldest rather than any thing wrest to an enditment of arrogance, & so branch mee into thy tiptoe stocke. I cannot see how thou canst compasse it: For though I bad them weigh the
10 cause by deserts, yet I did not assume too much to my owne deserts, when I expostulated, why Coblers, Hostlers, and Carmen should be worth so much, and so much, and I, a scholler and a good-fellow, a begger. How thou hast arrogated to thy selfe more than *Lucifer*, or any *Miles gloriosus* in the worlde would doe, I haue already noted at large in his due place and order. If thou bestowst any curtesie on mee, and I do not requite it, then call mee cut, and say I was brought vp at Hoggenorton, where pigges play on the Organs.

20 Wert thou well acquainted with me, thou shouldest | per- L 1
ceiue that I am very franke where I take, & send away none empty-handed that giue mee but halfe an ill worde.

It is a good signe of grace in thee, that thou confessest
thou hast offences enough of thy owne to aunswere, though
25 thou beest not chargd with thy Fathers. Once in thy life thou speakest true yet; I beleue thee and pittie thee. God make thee a good man, for thou hast beene a wilde youth hitherto.

Thy Hexameter verses, or thy hue and crie after a person
30 as cleare as Christall, I do not so deeply commend, for al
Maister Spencer long since imbrast it with an ouer-louing sonnet.

Why should friends dissemble one with another? they are very vgly and artlesse. You will neuer leauue your olde
35 trickes of drawing M. Spencer into euerie pybald thing you do. If euer he praisd thee, it was because he had pickt

12 and so much] om. Coll., Gro.

a fine vaine foole out of thee, and he would keepe thee still
 a foole, by flattring thee, til such time as he had brought
 thee into that extreame loue with thy selfe, that thou
 shouldst run mad with the conceit, and so be scorned of
 all men.

5

Yet yet, *Gabriell*, are not we set *non plus*; thy *roister doisterdome* hath not dasht vs out of countenance. If anie man *use boistrous horse-play, or bee beholding to Carters Logique*, it is thy selfe; for with none but clownish and roynish ieasts dost thou rush vpon vs, and keepst such 10
a flurting and a flinging in euerie leafe, as if thou wert the onely reasty iade in a country.

Skolding, thou saiest, is the language of shrewes, railing the stile of rakehels; what concludst thou from thence?

Do I scold? do I raile?

15

Scolding & railing is loud miscalling and reuiling one L 14 another without wit, speaking every thing a man | knows by his neighbour, though it bee neuer so contrary to all humanitie and good manners, and would make the standers by almost perbrake to heare it. Such is thy inuictiue 20 against *Greene*, where thou talkst of his lowsines, his surfeting, his beggerie, and the mother of *Infortunatus* infirmities. If I scold, if I raile, I do but *cum ratione insanire*; *Tully, Ouid*, all the olde Poets, *Agrippa, Aretine*, and the rest are all scolds and railers, and by thy conclusion flat 25 shrewes and rakehels: for I doe no more than their examples do warrant mee.

The intoxicate spirit of grisly Euridice, I can tosse ouer as lightly to thee, as thou hast pust it to mee. My hart is præoccupied with better spirits, which haue left her 30 no house-roome: thou hast no spirite, as it should appeare by thy writing: intertwaine her and the spirit of the buttery out of hand, or thou wilt be beaten hand-smooth out of Bucklarsbury.

When I parted with thy brother in *Pierce Penilesse*, 35
I left him to be tormented world without ende of our

Poets and writers about London, for calling them piperly
 make-playes and makebates, not doubting but they
 would driue him to this issue, that he shold be con-
 strained to goe to the chiese beame of his benefice, and
 5 there beginning a lamettable speech with *cur scripsi, cur*
perij, ende with Praum praua decent, iuuat inconcessa
voluptas, & so with a trice, trusse vp his life in the
string of his sance-bell. Now heere thou thankst God
 thou art not so vncharitably bent to put so much wit in
 10 a speech ; like a Parson in Lancashire, that kneeld down
 on his knees in a zealous passion, and very hartily thankt
 God he neuer knew what that vile Antichristian Romish
 Popish Latine meant. Did I exhort inke and paper to
 pray that they might not bee troubled | with him any L 2
 15 more ? Inke and paper, if they bee true Protestants, will
 pray that they may not be contaminated any more with
 such abomination of desolation, as the three brothers
 Apocripha pamphleting.

After all this foule weather ensueth a calme dilatement
 20 of others too forward harmefulnes, and thy owne backward
 irefulness ; thats dispatcht, the court hath found it other-
 wise.

Then thou goest about to bribe mee to giue ouer this
 quarrell, and saist, if I will holde my peace, thou wilt
 25 bestowe more complements of rare amplifications vpon
 mee, than euer thou bestowdst on Sir *Philip Sidney*, and
 gentle Maister *Spencer*.

Thou flatterst mee, and praisest mee.

To make mee a small seeming amendes for the iniuries
 30 thou hast done mee, thou reckonst mee vp *amongst the*
deare louers and professed sonnes of the Muses, Edmund
Spencer, Abraham France, Thomas Watson, Samuell
Daniell.

With a hundred blessings, and many praiers, thou in-
 35 *treatst mee to loue thee.*

Content thy selfe, I will not.

Thou protestest it was not my person thou mislikst (I am afraide thou wilt make mee thy Ingle) but my fierce running at Parson Richard, excusest mee by my youth, & promisest to cancell thy impertinent Pamphlet.

It were good hanging thee now thou art in such a good mind; yet for all this, a dogge will be a dogge, & returne to his vomit, doe what a man can; thou must haue one squibbe more at the Deuils Orator, & his Dames Poet, or thy penne is not in cleane life. I will permit thee to say what thou wilt, to *vnderlic* (as thou desir'st) the *verdit* ¹⁰ of *Fame hir selfe*, so I may lie aboue thee. LIE aboue

L 2^v thee, tell greater lies than thou dost, | no man is able.

Thus, O heauenly Muse, I thanke thee, for thou hast giu'n mee the patience to trauel through the tedious wilderness of this Gomorian Epistle. Not *Hercules*, when ¹⁵ he cleansed the stables of *Aegas*, vnder-tooke such a stinking vnsauorie exploit. By thy assistaunce through a whole region of golden lanes haue I iourneied, & now am safely arriu'd at *not speedily dispatcht, but hastily bungled vp as you see*. Graunt that all such slow dis- ²⁰ patchers & hastie bunglers may haue a long time of reproach to repent them in, and not come abroad to corrupt the aire & impostumate mens ears with their pan-pudding prose any more. So bee it, say all English people after mee, that haue eares to heare or eies to reade. ²⁵

Feci, feci, feci, had I my health, now I had leysure to be merry, for I haue almost washt my hands of the Doctour.

His own regenerate verses of *the iolly Fly, & Gibeline and Gwelph*, some peraduenture may expect that I should answeare. So I would if there were anie thing in them ³⁰ which I had not answerd before, but there is nothing; if there were, hauing driuen his sword to his head, I respect not what he can do with his dagger. Onely I will looke vpon the last Sonnet of M. *Spencers* to the right worshipfull Maister *G. H.*, Doctour of the lawes: or it may so ³⁵ fall out that I will not looke vpon it too, because (*Gabriell*)

though I vehemently suspect it to bee of thy owne doing, it is popt foorth vnder M. *Spencers* name, and his name is able to sanctifie any thing, though falsely ascribed to it.

The fourth letter of our Orators, to the same fauorable
 5 or indifferent reader, was a letter which this many a long summers day, I dare ieopard my may-|denhead had line L 3 hidden in his deske ; for it is a shipmans hose, that will serue any man as well as *Green* or mee.

To make short, in it, as fortie times before, he brides it
 10 and simpers it out a crie, No, forsooth, God dild you, hee would not that hee would : None so desirous of quiet as hee, good olde man, who with a pure intent of peace, first put fire to the flame that hath hedge him in.

He hath preuented Maister *Bunnie* of the second part
 15 of his treatise of Pacification ; for like some craftie ring-leader of rebellion, when hee hath stirred vp a dangerous commotion, and findes, by the too late examination of his forevnexamined defects in himselfe, that so sweet a roote will hardlie effect correspondent fruits, strait, in pollicie to
 20 get his pardon, hee strikes saile to that tempest of sedition, and is thrice as earnest in preaching pacification, obedience, and submission : so *Gabriel*, when he hath stird vp against me what tumults he can in Stationers Shops, and left the quiever of his enuie not an arrow vndrawne out, hee finds,
 25 by the audit of his ill consumed defectes, that he is not of force inough to hold out ; wherefore in pollicie to auoid further arrearages of infamie, hee tires the text of reconciliation out of breath, and hopeth by the intercession of
a cuppe of white wine and sugar, to be made friends with
 30 *his fellow writers.*

It cannot choose but he must of necessitie be a very sore fellow, that is so familiar with white wine & sugar, for white wine, in a maner, is good for nothing but to wash sores in, and smudge vp withered beauty with. Well, for all hee
 35 would haue *Pierce* ma'e no warres on him, he makes warres on *Pierce Pennilesse*, he bebeggereth him again in this

10 it] om. Coll., Gro. 20 that] the Coll., Gro.

L 3^v epistle verie boun-|tisfullie : hee saies *that Lordes must take
heede how they Lord it in his presence.*

That the Asse is the onelic Author he allecadgeth.

That Greene is an Asse in print, and he a calfe in print.

*That they are both chiefetaines in licentiousnesse, and, truth 5
can saie, the abominable villanies of such base shifting
companions, good for nothing but to cast away themselues,
spoile their adherents, &c.*

For my beggerie, let that trauell the countries ; I haue
saide more for it than a richer man would haue done, but 10
that I take vpon me to Lord it ouer great Lords, thou
art a most lewd tungd lurdens to saie it.

Must they take heede how they Lord it in my presence,
what must they doe then in thy presence ?

That sitting like a looker on

15

Of this worlds stage, dost note with critique pen

The sharpe dislikes of each condition ;

Ne fawnest for the fauour of the great,

Ne fearest foolish reprehension,

But freclie dost, of what thee list, intreate,

Like a great Lord of peerlesse libertie,

Lifting the good vp to high honors seate,

And th' cuill damning euermore to die ;

For life and death is in thy doomefull writing.

20

Whereas thou saist the Asse, in a manner, is the only 25
Author I alleadge, I must know how you define an Asse
before I can tell how to answe you ; for *Cornelius Agrippa*
maketh all the Philosophers, Oratours, and Poets that euer
were, Asses : and if so you vnderstand that I alleadge no
Author but the Asse, for all Authors are Asses, why I am 30
for you ; if otherwise, thou art worse than a *Cumane Asse*,
to leape before thou lookst, and condemne a man without
cause.

L 4 What Authors dost thou alleadge in thy booke ? | not
two but any Grammer Scholler might haue alleadgd. 35

5 and that truth Coll., Gro. 13 prescnee Q. 14 then] om. Coll., Gro.
17 Thy Q. 19 Ne] Nor Coll., Gro. 30 Asse; for Q. for [if] all Gro.

There is not three kernels of more than common learning
in all thy *Four Letters*. Common learning? not common
sense in some places.

Of force I must graunt that *Greene* came oftner in print
5 than men of iudgement allowed off, but neuerthelesse he
was a daintie slaye to content the taile of a Tearme, and
stiffe Seruing mens pockets.

An Asse, *Gabriel*, it is harde thou shouldest name him :
for calling mee Calfe, it breakes no square, but if I bee
10 a calfe, it is in comparison of such an Oxe as thy selfe.

The chieftaines of licentiousnes, and, truth can say, the abhominable villanies of such base shifting companions, good for nothing, &c. I am of the mind wee shall not digest
this neither.

15 Answere me *succinctè & expeditè*, what one period any
way leaning to licentiousnes, canst thou produce in *Pierce
Pennilesse*?

I talke of a great matter when I tell thee of a period, for
I know two seuerall periods or full pointes, in this last
20 epistle, at least fortie lines long a piece.

For the order of my life, it is as ciuil as a ciuil ornge ;
I lurke in no corners, but conuerse in a house of credit, as
well gouerned as any Colledge, where there bee more rare
quallified men and selected good Schollers than in any
25 Noblemans house that I knowe in England.

If I had committed *such abhominable villanies, or were
a base shifting companion*, it stooide not with my Lords
honour to keepe me, but if thou hast saide it, & canst not
proue it, what slanderous dishonor hast thou done him, to
30 giue it out that he keepes *the committiers | of abhominable L 4
villanies and base shifting companions*, when they are farre
honester than thy selfe.

If I were by thee, I woulde plucke thee by the beard,
and spit in thy face, but I would dare thee, and vrge thee
35 beyonde all excuse, t^r disclose and prooue for thy heart

12 *shifting*] foisting Coll., Gro.

25 Engltand (*with the t of than*) Q.

24 *than*] han (with space for t) Q.

bloud, what villanie or base shifting by mee thou canst ; I defie all the worlde in that respect.

Because thou vsedst at Cambridge to shift for thy Friday at night suppers, and cosen poore victuallers and pie-wiues of Doctours cheese and puddinges, thou thinkst me one of 5 the same religion too.

What *Greene* was, let some other answere for him as much as I haue done ; I had no tuition ouer him ; he might haue writ another *Galatæo* of manners, for his manners euerie time I came in his companie : I saw no such base shifting 10 or abhominable villanie by him. Something there was which I haue heard, not seene, that hee had not that regarde to his credite in, which had beene requisite he should.

What a *Calimunco* am I to plead for him, as though 15 I were as neere him as his owne skinne. A thousande there bee that haue more reason to speake in his behalfe than I, who, since I first knew him about town, haue beene two yeares together and not seene him.

But Ile doe as much for any man, especially for a deade 20 man, that cannot speake for himselfe. Let vs heare *how we are good for nothing but to cast awaie our selues, spoile our adherents, prale on our fauourers, dishonour our Patrons.* Haue I euer tooke any likelie course of casting away my selfe ? 25

Whom canst thou name that kept me company, and reapt any discommoditie by mee ? I can name diuers Mⁱ good Gentlemen that haue beene my adherents | and fauourers a long time. Let them report howe I haue spoilde them, or praid on them, or put them to one pennie 30 detriment since I first consorted with thẽ.

Haue an eie to the maine-chaunce, for no sooner shall they vnderstand what thou hast said by mee of them, but theyle goe neere to haue thee about the eares for this geare, one after another. 35

My Patrons, or anie that bind me to them by the least

good turne, there is no man in England that is, or shall (for my small power) bee, more thankefull vnto, than I. Neuer was I vnthankefull vnto any, no, not to those of whome for deedes I receiued nothing but vnperformed 5 deede-promising words. It is an honor to be accusde, and not conuinst.

One of these months I shall challenge martirdome to my selfe, and write large stories of the persecution of tongues. Troth, I am as like to persecute as be persecuted.
 10 Let him take vp his Crosse and blesse himselfe that crosseth mee, for I will crosse shinnes with him though euerie sentence of his were a thousande tunnes of discourses, as *Gabriel* saith euerie sentence of his is a discourse. Quods, quods, giue mee my Text pen againe, for I haue 15 a little more Text to launce.

The secretaries of art and nature, if it were not for friuolous contentions, might bestead the commō-welth with manie puissant engins. As, for example, *Bacons* brazen nose, *Architas* wodden doue, dancing bals, fire breathing 20 gourdes, artificiall flies to hang in the aire by themselues, an egshell that shall run vp to the toppe of a speare.

Archimides made a heau'n of brasse, but we haue nothing to do with olde brasse and iron.

Appollonius Regiomontanus did manie pretie iugling 25 tricks, but wee had rather drinke out of a glasse | than M 1^v a Iugge ; vse a little brittle wit of our owne, than borrow any miracle mettall of Deuils.

Amongst all other stratagems and puissant engins, what say you to *Mates Pumpe* in Cheapeside, to pumpe ouer 30 mutton and porridge into Fraunce ? this colde weather our souldiors, I can tell you, haue need of it, and, poore field mise, they haue almost got the colicke and stone with eating of prouant.

Consider of it well, for it is better than all *Bacons*, 35 *Architas*, *Archimede*, *Appollonius*, or *Regiomontanus* deuices ; for *Gabriell*, that professeth all these, with all their

helpe cannot make the bias bowle at *Saffron Walden* run downe the hill, when it is throwne down with the hardest hand that may bee, but it will turne vp the hill againe in spite of a mans teeth, and, that which is worst, giue no reason for it.

5

The Parrat and the Peacock haue leisure to reuine & repolish their expired workes; you speake like a friend ; wele listen to you when you haue repolished and expired your perfected degree. A Demy Doctor, what a shame is it?

10

Because your books do call for a litle more drinke and a fewe more clothes when they are gone to bed, that is, when they lie dead, you thinke ours should do so too. No, no, we doe not vse to clappe a coat ouer a ierkin, or thrust any of the children of our braine into their mothers 15 wombe againe, & beget them a new after they are once borne. If it bee a horne booke at his first conception, let it be a horne booke still, and turne not cat in the panne, conuert the Pater noster to a Primer, when it hath begd it selfe out at the elbowes vp and downe the 20 cuntrey.

Thou didst thou knewst not what, in eeking this thy M 2 short-wasted Pamphlet, iwis, as thou saist of thy | selfe *Thou art an old trewant, fitter to plaie the dumbe dogge with some antients, than the hissing snake.*

25

Who be those antient dumbe dogs? we shal haue you a Martinist when all comes to all, because you cannot thriue with the Ciuill Law, and that you may marry her for any thing you are a kindred to her ; therfore you wil compare *Whitegift and Cartwright*, white and blacke 30 together, name the highest gouernours of the Church without giuing them anie reuerence or titles of honour, imbrace anie religion which will be euen with the profession that fauors not you.

There is no baile or maineprise for it, but wee must haue 35 you in the first peeping forth of the spring, preaching

out of a Pulpit in the woods: you haue put on wolues
raiment already, seduced manie simple people vnder the
habit of a sheepe in *Wolfes* print. If you protest & lie
any more, it is not your ending here like a sermon, that
5 will make you bee reputed for a saint.

Readers, a decaied student, lately shipwrackt with *Si
vales bene est*, hauing foure Lightors of Letters, cleane cast
away on the rocks called the Bishop & his Clarks, desires
you all to pray for him, and he will recommend you all
10 to God in the next sermon he penneth for his brother
Richard.

He hath a mind to pay euery man his owne, though hee
hath sustained great losse in fight, *that which he cannot
effect he beseecheth the Lord to accomplish, and even to worke
15 a miracle vpon the deafe.*

Lord, if it be thy will, let him be an Asse still. Gentle-
men, I haue no more to say to the Doctor, dispose of the
victorie as you please; shortly I will present you with
some thing that shalbe better than nothing, onely giue mee
20 a gentle hire for my durtie day labor, and I am your
bounden Orator for euer. |

Sonnetto.

M 2*

Were there no warres, poore men should haue no
peace;

25 Vncessant warres with waspes and droanes I crie:
Hee that begins, oft knows not how to cease,
They haue begun, Ile follow till I die.

Ile heare no truce, wrong gets no graue in mee,
Abuse pell mell encounter with abuse:

30 Write hee againe, Ile write eternally.
Who feedes reuenge hath found an endlesse Muse.

If death ere made his blacke dart of a pen,
My penne his speciall Baily shall becum:

3 in] and Coll., Gro.
Gro.

10 in] om. Coll., Gro.

penneth, or Coll.,

Somewhat Ile be reputed of mongst men,
By striking of this duns, or dead or dum.

Awaite the world the Tragedy of wrath ;
What next I paint shall tread no common
path.

5

Aut nunquam tentes aut perfice.

Tho. Nashe.

4 paint] *Grosart conjectures* print.

Obseruations for the Readers of this booke.

Item, whatsoeuer for the most part is here in this booke in change of letter, is our aduersaries owne Text and unvaried words, either in this his conuicted Foure Letters, or some other fustie treatise, set forth by him heretofore.

Then, that I am wreted and utterly diuorced from my owne inuention, & constrained still still, before I am warme in any one vaine, to start away sodainely, and follow him in his vanitie.

Finally, Printers haue many false stiches, whiche are thus to bee drawen vp.

In the second page of C. for Baboune brother, reade Baboune his brother. in the 7. for allegorized & Abdias, 15 reade allegorized Abdias. in the 8. for set hand, reade set his hand. idem for headmen, read headman. in the first of D. for Liuor post quiescat, reade Liuor post fata quiescat. in the 5. for plaister of Doctourship, reade plaistrie or dawbing of Doctourship. in the 7. for insolent inckehorne 20 worme, reade insolent incke worme. in the 2. of E. for Asse in present, read Asse in presenti. in the 3. for bestow vpon, reade bestow vpon him. in the 5. for effect, reade efficacie. in the 4. of F. for vertuous Syr Iohn Norris, read victorious Syr Iohn Norris. in the 5. page of H. for I introduce in a discontented Scholler, read I introduce a discontented Scholler. in the 8. for His assentriion, reade His assertion. in the 5. of I. for verie companie, reade verie timpanie. in the 5. page of K. for in this first case, reade first in this case.

FINIS.

THE TERRORS OF THE NIGHT

Entries in the Stationers' Register:

30 Junij [1593]

John Danter / Entred for his copie vnder the wardens
handes. a booke intituled The Tyrroure
of the night or a discourse of appari-
sions vj^d
(*S.R.*, ed. Arber, II. 633.)

xxv^{to} Octobris [1594]

John danter Entred for his copie vnder th[e h]andes
of the wardens. a booke intituled The
Tirroure of the night, or an apparision of
Dreames vj^d /
(*S.R.*, ed. Arber, II. 663.)

Editions: (1) Early:

1594. [Head ornament] THE | Terrors of the night | Or, |
A Discourse of Apparitions. | *Post Tenebras Dies.* | THO:
NASHE. | [device] | LONDON, | Printed by John Danter for
William Jones, and are to be sold | at the signe of the Gunne
nere Holburne Conduit. | 1594. |

No colophon. Quarto. Not paged.

Collation: A-H⁴. (A 1) Title, v. blank. A ij. 'TO THE
NEW KIND-led cleare Lampe of Virginitie, . . .' *Rom. and Ital.*
R-T. THE EPISTLE | DEDICATORIE. (A 3)^v blank.
(A 4) 'To Master or Goodman Reader, . . .' *Ital. and Rom.*
(A 4)^v blank. B 'The Terrors of the Night . . .' *Rom. and Ital.*
R-T. THE TERRORS | OF THE NIGHT. (H 3)^v
blank. (H 4) wanting, probably blank.

Signatures in Roman, except B 2, which is Italic. A 3 and H 3 are
not signed. No fourth leaves are signed.

338 THE TERRORS OF THE NIGHT

Catch-words: A 2. (be-)holding A 2v. bee B 1. (for-)mer
C 1. To D 1. (tor-)ment E 1. the F 1. So G 1. to
H 1. faster

Copy used: That in the British Museum (C. 40. d. 21), compared for the defective portions on A 2 and A 3 with the Britwell copy.

The British Museum copy wants portions of the upper, outer corners of the two leaves mentioned, as well as of the title-page: they have been supplied in (correct) facsimile.

(2) *Modern edition:*

1883-4 (Gro.) The Complete Works of Thomas Nashe . . . edited by A. B. Grosart. Vol. iii, pp. 209-282.

Grosart says, 'For the exemplar of "The Terrors of the Night" I am indebted to the Bodleian,' but there is no copy in the Bodleian, nor has there ever been one. He probably used the copy in the British Museum, and was misled by the fact that it had belonged at one time to Malone.



THE Terrors of the night Or, A Discourse of Apparitions.

Past Tenebras Dies.

THO: NASH.



L O N D O N,

Printed by John Danter for William Jones, and are to be sold
at the signe of the Gunne nere Holburne Conduit.

1594.

TO THE NEW KIND-

A 2

led cleare Lampe of Virginitie, and
the excellent adored high Wonder of sharpe Wit
and sweete Beautie, Mistres ELIZABETH CAREY;

5 *sole Daughter and Heire to the thrice noble and re-
nowned Sir GEORGE CAREY, Knight
Marshall, &c.*

R Are adorned Mistris, whom al that know admire,
and not malice it selfe but doth honor. True
10 Stemme of Nobilitie, out-flourishing your sexe or
your age ; pure saint-like picture of Sobrietie and Modestie,
sacred and immaculate virgin Starre, cleare (if anie liuing)
from the originall sin of thought : giue me leauue (though
contemptible & abiect) once more to sacrifice my worthles
15 wit to your glorie. Manie feruent vowes and protestations
of obseruance, your bountifull gracious deserts towards
mee haue entrancedly extracted, which yet remaine in the
ore vnwrought and vntride. As touching this short glose
or annotation on the foolish Terrors of the Night, you
20 partly are acquainted from whose motiue imposition it
first proceeded, as also what strange sodaine cause neces-
sarily produced that motion. A long time since hath it
line suppressed by mee ; vntill the vrgent importunitie
of a kinde frend of mine (to whom I was sundrie waies
25 be-holding) wrested a Coppie from me. That Coppie A 2v
progressed from one scriueners shop to another, & at
length grew so common, that it was readie to bee hung
out for one of their signes, like a paire of indentures.
Wherewpon I thought it as good for mee to reap the
30 frute of my owne labours, as to let some vnskilfull
pen-man or Nouerint-maker startch his ruffe & new spade
his beard with the benefite he made of them. Accept of
them, exquisitie Mistris, as the best testimonie I haue yet

to expres the dutie that I owe. A little more leasure and prosperitie will beget better labors ; wherein I will enioyne my spirit to be a peremptorie combattant for your praises, against all vulgar deepe flattred mediocritie and pale penurious beautie, which giues dull Painters store of gold 5 to solder vp their leane dints of deformity. Against your perfections no tung can except. Miraculous is your wit ; and so is acknowledged by the wittiest Poets of our age, who haue vowed to enshrine you as their second DELIA. Temperance her selfe hath not temperater behauour than 10 you ; religious Pietie hath no humble hand-maide that she more delights in. A worthie Daughter are you of so worthie a Mother ; borrowing (as another *Phæbe*) from her bright Sunne-like resplendaunce, the orient beames of your radiaunce. Into the Muses societie her selfe she 15 hath lately adopted, & purchast diuine *Petrarch* another monument in *England*. Euer honored may she be of the royallest breed of wits, whose purse is so open to her poore beadsmens distresses. Well may I say it, because I haue tride it, neuer liu'd a more magnificent Ladie of her 20

A 3 degree on this earth. A number of men there | bee, who pursuing the high way to the Indies, haue perisht in lingring expectation before they could get thether ; but a neerer Cut haue I found in her extraordinarie liberalitie and bountie : and to a companie of my malcontent compa- 25 panions will discouer if it please them, how to be gainfull and gain-coping nauigators if they will insist in my directions. Now I must tie my selfe to the Printers paper limits, and knit vp much thankfulnessse in few words. Deare Mistris, perswade your selfe, that no frowning mis- 30 fortune or anye accident whatsoeuer, shall diuorce me from your reurence. No more I craue in requitall, but that you would put me in the checke-roule of your remembrance, and not salute me as a stranger.

Your vertues immou'able Votarie:

35

THO: NASHE.

5 beautie, which] *Gro.* : beautie ; which Q. 13]) after resplendaunce Q.

To Master or Goodman Reader, ge- A 4
nerally dispersed East or West.

GEntlemen (according to the laudable custome) I am
to court you with a few premisses considered: but
a number of you there bee, who consider neither
premisses nor conclusion, but piteouslie torment Title Pages
on euerie poast, neuer reading farther of anie Booke, than
Imprinted by Simeon such a signe; and yet with your
dudgen iudgements will desperateli presume to run vp to
the hard hilts through the whole bulke of it. Martin
Momus and splaiefooted Zoylus, that in the eight and sixt
age of Poetrie and first yere of the reigne of Tarltons toies,
kept a foule stir in Poules Church-yard, are now reuiued
againe: and like wanton Whelpes that haue wormes in
their tungs, slauer and betouse euerie paper they meeete
withall. Yea, if they chance but on a moate or a wind
bladder, they neuer haue done with it till they haue cleane
bandied and tossit it out of sight. For my part, I wish that
I may be both out of their sight and out of their minde too:
and if their winy wits must needs be working, that they
would rather be Tailors to make, than botchers or coblers
to amend or to marre. Come, come, I know their dull
tricks wel inough, you shal haue them lie in child bed one
and thirtie weeks and eight daies of three bad lines and
a halfe, & afterward spend a whole twelue month in
spunging & sprucing them, honest thrifte Peter Littleton
discharging their commons all the while: but such poore
fellowes as I, that cannot put out money to be paid againe
when wee come fro... Constantinople, either must haue our

TO THE READER

*work dispatcht by the weeks end, or els we may go beg :
and yet I will not beg of them neither, go the world neuer
so hard, no not so much as a good word: but if in word
or deed I hear that they wrong me, Ile meet them right
if I can. And so I leaue them to stop mustard pots with 5
my leaues if they will, or to their owne will whatsoeuer.*

THOMAS NASHE.

2 them neither go the Q : them, neither go to the Gro.

The Terrors of the Night.

B 1

OR

A Discourse of Apparitions.

5 **A** Little to beguile time idly discontented, and satisfie
some of my solitary friends heere in the Countrey,
I haue hastily vndertooke to write of the wearie
fancies of the Night, wherein if I weary none with my
weak fancies, I will herafter leane harder on my penne
and fetch the petegree of my praise from the vtmost of
10 paines.

As touching the terrors of the night, they are as many
as our sinnes. The Night is the Diuell's Blacke booke,
wherein hee recordeth all our transgressions. Euen as
when a condemned man is put into a darke dungeon,
15 secluded from all comfort of light or companie, he doth
nothing but despairfully call to minde his gracelesse for-mer B 1^v
life, and the brutish outrages and misdemeanours that haue
throwne him into that desolate horrour ; so when Night
in her rustie dungeon hath imprisoned our ey-sight, and
20 that we are shut seperately in our chambers from resort,
the diuell keepeth his audit in our sin-guilty consciences,
no sense but surrenders to our memorie a true bill of
parcels of his detestable impieties. The table of our hart
is turned to an index of iniquities, and all our thoughts are
25 nothing but texts to condemne vs.

The rest we take in our beds is such another kinde of
rest as the wearie traueller taketh in the coole soft grasse
in summer, who thinking there to lye at ease, and refresh
his tyred limmes, layeth his fainting head vnawares on
30 a loathsome nest of snakes.

Well haue the Poets tearmd night the nurse of cares,
the mother of despaire, the daughter of hell.

Some Diuines haue had this concept, that God would
haue made all day and no night, if it had not been to put
vs in minde, there is a Hell as well as a Heauen. 5

Such is the peace of the subiects as is the peace of the
Prince vnder whom they are gouerned. As God is intitled
the Father of light, so is the diuell surnamed the Prince
of darknesse, which is the night. The only peace of minde
that the diuell hath is despaire, wherefore wee that liue 10
in his nightly kingdome of darknes, must needs taste some
disquiet.

The Rauen and the Doue that were sent out of *Noes*
Arke, to discouer the worlde after the generall Deluge,
may well be an allegorie of the day and the night. The | 15

B 2 day is our good Angell the Doue, that returneth to our
eyes with an Olie branch of peace in his mouth (presenting
quiet and securitie to our distracted soules and consciences);
the night is that ill angel the Rauen, which neuer commeth
back to bring anie good tidings of tranquilitie: a continual 20
messenger hee is of dole and misfortune. The greatest
curse almost that in the scripture is threatened, is, that the
rauens shal picke out their eies in the valley of death.
This cursed raven, the night, pecks out mens eyes in the
valley of death. It hindreth them from looking to heauen 25
for succor, where their Redeemer dwelleth: wherefore no
doubt it is a time most fatall and vnhalloved. This being
proued, that the diuell is a speciall predominant Planet of
the night, and that our creator for our punishment hath
allotted it him as his peculiar segniorie and kingdome, 30
from his inueterate enuie I will amplifie the vgly terrors
of the night. The names importing his mallice, which the
scripture is plentiful of, I wil here omit; least some men
shuld think I went about to coniure. Sufficeth vs to haue
this heedfull knowledge of him, that hee is an auncient 35
malecontent, and seeketh to make anie one desperat like
himselfe. Like a cunning fowler, to this end he spreadeth

his nets of temptation in the darke, that men might not see to auoyd them. As the Poet saith :

Quæ nimis apparent retia vitat avis.

Too open nets eu'en simple birds doo shun.

5 Therfore in another place (which it cannot be but the diuell hath read) he counsaileth thus : |

Noctem peccatis & fraudibus obiice nubem.

B 2^v

By night time sinne, and cloake thy fraud with clouds.

When hath the diuell commonly first appeared vnto anie
10 man but in the night ?

In the time of infidelitie, when spirits were so familiar with men that they cald them *Dii Penates*, their houshold Gods or their Lares, they neuer sacrificed vnto them till Sunne-setting. The Robbin-good-fellowes, Elfes, Fairies,
15 Hobgoblins of our latter age, which idolatrous former daies and the fantasticall world of Greece ycleaped *Fawnes*, *Satyres*, *Dryades*, & *Hamadryades*, did most of their merry prankes in the Night. Then ground they malt, and had hempen shirts for their labours, daunst in rounds
20 in greene meadowes, pincht maids in their sleep that swept not their houses cleane, and led poore Trauellers out of their way notoriously.

It is not to be gain-said, but the diuell can transforme himselfe into an angell of light, appeare in the day aswell
25 as in the night, but not in this subtil world of Christianity so vsuall as before. If he doo, it is when mens mindes are extraordinarily throwne downe with discontent, or inly terrified with some horrible concealed murder, or other hainous crime close smothered in secret. In the day he
30 may smoothly in some mild shape insinuat, but in the night he takes vpon him like a tyrant. There is no theefe that is halfe so hardie in the day as in the night, no more is the diuell. A generall principle it is, hee that doth ill hateth the light.

35 This Macheuillian tricke hath hee in him worth the noting, that those whom he dare not vnited or together |

B 3 encounter, disioined and diuided hee will one by one assaile in their sleepe. And euen as Ruptures and crampes doo then most torment a man when the bodie with any other disease is distemperd, so the Diuell when with any other sickenes or malladie the faculties of our reason are 5 enfeebled and distemperd, will be most busie to disturbe vs and torment vs.

In the quiet silence of the night he will be sure to surprize vs, when he vnfallibly knowes we shall be vnarmed to resist, and that there will be full audience granted him 10 to vndermine or perswade what he lists. All that euer he can scare vs with, are but *Seleucus* ayrie Castles, terrible bug-beare brags, and nought els, which with the least thought of faith are quite vanished and put to flight. Neither in his owne nature dare he come nere vs, but in 15 the name of sin, and as Gods executioner. Those that catch birdes imitate their voyces, so will hee imitate the voyces of Gods vengeance, to bring vs like birds into the net of eternall damnation.

Children, fooles, sicke-men, or mad-men hee is most 20 familiar with (for he still delights to worke vpon the aduantage) and to them he boldly reuealeth the whole astonishing treasurie of his wonders.

It will bee demaunded why in the likenes of ones father or mother, or kinsfolks, he oftentimes presents him- 25 selfe vnto vs?

No other reason can bee giuen of it but this, that in those shapes which hee supposeth most familliar vnto vs, and that wee are inclined to with a naturall kind of loue, we will sooner harken to him than otherwise. | 30

B 3^v Should he not disguise himselfe in such subtil formes of affection, we would flie from him as a serpent, and eschew him with that hatred he ought to be eschewd. If anie aske why he is more conuersant & busie in church-yards and places where men are buried, than in anie other 35 places, It is to make vs beleue that the bodies & soules of the departed rest entirely in his possession, and the

peculiar power of death is resigned to his disposition. A rich man delights in nothing so much as to be vncessantly raking in his treasurie, to bee turning ouer hys rustie gold euerie houre: the boanes of the dead, the diuell 5 counts his chiefe treasurie, and therfore is he continually raking amongst them; and the rather he doth it, that the liuing which heare it should bee more vnwilling to die, insomuch as after death their boanes should take no rest.

It was said of *Catiline*, *Vultum gestauit in manibus*, with 10 the turning of a hand he could turne and alter his countenance. Farre more nimble and sodaine is the Diuell in shifting his habit, his forme he can change and cogge as quicke as thought.

What do we talke of one diuel? there is not a roome in 15 anie mans house, but is pestred and close packed with a campe royall of diuels. *Chrisostome* saith, the aire and earth are three parts inhabited with spirits. Hereunto the Philosopher alluded, when hee said, Nature made no voydnes in the whole vniuersall: for no place (bee it no 20 bigger than a pockhole in a mans face) but is close thronged with them. Infinite millions of them wil hang swarming about a worm-eaten nose. |

Don *Lucifer* himselfe, their grand *Capitano*, asketh no B 4 better throne than a bleare eye to set vp his state in. 25 Vpon a haire they will sit like a nit, and ouer-dredge a bald pate like a white scurffe. The wrinkles in old witches visages, they eate out to entrench themselues in.

If in one man a whole legion of diuells haue bin billeted, how manie hundred thousand legions retaine to a Tearme 30 at *London*? If I said but to a Tauerne, it were an infinite thing. In *Westminster* Hall a man can scarce breath for them; for in euery corner they houer as thick as moates in the sunne.

The *Druides* that dwelt in the Ile of *Man*, which are 35 famous for great coniurers, are reported to haue beene lousie with familiars. Had they but put their finger and

their thumbe into their neck, they could haue pluckt out a whole neast of them.

There be them that thinke euerie sparke in a flame is a spirit, and that the wormes which at sea eate through a ship, are so also: which may verie well bee; for haue not 5 you seene one sparke of fire burne a whole towne, & a man with a sparke of lightning made blinde, or kild outright? It is impossible the gunnes should goe off as they doo, if there were not a spirit either in the fier, or in the powder.

Now for wormes: what makes a dog run mad, but a 10 worme in his tung? and what should that worme bee, but a spirit? Is there anie reason such small vermine as they are, should deuoure such a vast thing as a shippe, or haue the teeth to gnaw through yron and wood? No, no, they are spirits, or els it were incredible. | 15

B 4^v *Tullius Hostilius*, who tooke vpon him to coniure vp *Ioue* by *Numa Pompilius* booke, had no sense to quake & tremble at the wagging and shaking of euery leafe, but that he thought all leaues are full of wormes, and those wormes are wicked spirits. 20

If the bubbels in stremes were wel searcht, I am perswaded they would be found to be little better. Hence it comes that mares (as *Columella* reporteth) looking their formes in the water, run mad. A flea is but a little beast, yet if she were not possest with a spirit, she could neuer 25 leape and skip so as she doth. *Froisard* saith, the Earle of *Fois* had a familiar that presented it selfe vnto him in the likenes of two rushes fighting one with another. Not so much as *Tewksburie* mustard but hath a spirit in it or els it would neuer bite so. Haue wee not read of a number 30 of men that haue ordinarily carried a familiar or a spirite in a ring in stead of a sparke of a diamond? Why I tell ye we cannot break a crum of bread so little, as one of them will be if they list.

From this generall discourse of spirits, let vs digresse, & 35 talke another while of their seperate natures and properties.

The spirits of the fire which are the purest and perfectest, are merry, pleasant, and well inclined to wit, but neuertheles gyddie and vnconstant.

Those whome they possesse, they cause to excell in what 5 euer they vndertake. Or Poets or boone companions they are, out of question.

Socrates Genius was one of this stampe, and the Doue wherewith the Turks hold *Mahomet* their Prophet to bee c^r inspired. What their names are, and vnder whome they 10 are gouerned, the Discouerie of witchcraft hath amplified at large, wherefore I am exempted from that labour. But of the diuinest quintessence of mettals and of wines are many of these spirits extracted. It is almost impossible for any to bee encumbred with ill spirits who is continually 15 conuersant in the excellent restorative distillations of wit and of Alcumie. Those that rauenously englut themselues with grosse meates, and respect not the quality but the quantity of what they eate, haue no affinitie with these spirits of the fire.

20 A man that will entertaine them must not pollute his bodie with any grosse carnall copulation or inordinate beastly desires, but loue pure beauty, pure vertue, and not haue his affections linsey-wolsey, intermingled with lust and things worthy of liking.

25 As for example if hee loue good Poets hee must not countenance Ballet-makers, if he haue learned Phisitions he must not fauor horse-leaches and mountebanks: for a bad spirit and a good can neuer endure to dwell together.

30 Those spirits of the fire, howeuer I tearme them comparatiuely good in respect of a number of bad, yet are they not simply well inclinde, for they bee by nature ambitious, haughty, and proud, nor do they loue vertue for it selfe any whit, but because they would ouerquell 35 and outstrip others with the vaineglorious ostentation of it. A humor of mo.iarchizing and nothing els it is, which

makes them affect rare quallified studies. Many Atheists are with these spirits inhabited. |

C iv To come to the spirits of the water, the earth, & the ayre; they are dull flegmaticke drones, things that haue much mallice without anie great might. Drunkards, 5 mizers, and women they vsually retain too. Water (you all know) breedeth a medley kinde of licor called beere; with these watrie spirits they were possessed that first inuented the art of bruing. A quagmire consisting of mud and sand, sendeth forth the like pudly mixture. 10

All rheumes, poses, Sciaticae, dropsies, and gouts, are diseases of their flegmaticke engendring. Sea-faring men of what sort soeuer, are chiefe entertainers of those spirits. Greedy vintners likewise giue hospitalitie to a number of them; who hauing read no more scripture than that 15 myracle of Christs turning water into wine in Chanaan, thinke to doo a farre stranger miracle than euer he did, by turning wine into water.

Alehouses and cookes shadie pauilions, by watrie spirits are principally vpholden. 20

The spirits of the earth are they which crie, all bread and no drinke, that loue gold and a buttond cap aboue heauen. The woorth in nought they respect, but the weight, good wits they naturally hate; insomuch as the element of fire, their progenitor, is a wast-good & a con- 25 sumer. If with their earth-plowing snowtes they can turne vp a pearle out of a dunghill, it is all they desire. Witches haue manie of these spirits, and kill kyne wyth them. The giants and chieftaines of those spirites, are powrfull sometimes to bring men to their ends, but not a iot of good can 30 they doo for their liues.

Souldiers with these terrestriall spirits participate part | C 2 of their essence, for nothing but yron and golde (which are earths excrements) they delight in. Besides, in another kinde they may be said to participate with them, insomuch 35 as they confirme them in their furi, & congeale their mindes with a bloodie resolution. Spirites of the earth

they were that entred into the heard of swyne in the Gospel. There is no citie merchant or country purchaser, but is haunted with a whole hoste of these spirits of the earth. The Indies is their Metropolitane realme of abode.

5 As for the spirits of the aire, which haue no other visible bodies or form, but such as by the vnconstant glimmering of our eies is begotten ; they are in truth all show and no substance, deluders of our imagination, & nought els. Carpet knights, politique statesmen, women & childrē they most

10 conuers with. Carpet knights they inspire with a humor of setting big looks on it, being the basest cowards vnder heauen, couering an apes hart with a lions case, and making false alarums when they mean nothing but a may-game. Politique statesmen they priuily incite to bleare the worlds

15 eyes with clowdes of common wealth pretences, to broach any enmitie or ambitious humor of their owne vnder a title of their cuntries preseruation. To make it faire or fowle when they list to procure popularity or induce a preamble to some mightic peece of prowling, to stir vp tempests

20 round about, & replenish heauen with prodigies and wonders, the more to ratifie their auaritious religion. Women they vnder-hand instruct to pownce and boulster out theyr brawn-falne deformities, to new perboile with painting | their rake-leane withered visages, to set vp flaxe shops on C 2^x

25 their forheads when all their owne haire is dead and rotten, to sticke their gums round with Comfets when they haue not a tooth left in their heads to help them to chide withall.

Children they seduce with garish obiects and toyish babies, abusing them many yeares with slight vanities. So 30 that you see all their whole influence is but thin ouercast vapours, flying clouds dispersed with the least winde of wit or vnderstanding.

None of these spirits of the ayre or the fire haue so much predominance in the night as the spirits of the earth and 35 the water ; for they feeding on foggie-braind melancholly, engender thereof many vncouth terrible monsters. Thus

24 flaxeshops Q.

much obserue by the way, that the grossest part of our blood is the melancholy humor, which in the spleene congealed whose office is to disperse it, with his thicke steaming fennie vapours casteth a mist ouer the spirit, and cleane bemasketh the phantasie.

5

And euen as slime and durt in a standing puddle, engender toads and frogs and many other vnsightly creatures, so this slimie melancholy humor still still thickning as it stands still, engendreth many mishapen obiects in our imaginations. Sundry times wee behold 10 whole Armies of men skirmishing in the Ayre, Dragons, wilde beasts, bloody streamers, blasing Comets, firie strakes, with other apparitions innumerable: whence haue all these their conglomerate matter but from fuming meteors that arise from the earth? so from the fuming melancholly of 15

C 3 our spleene mounteth that hot matter into the | higher Region of the braine, whereof manie fearfull visions are framed. Our reason euen like drunken fumes it displaceth and intoxicates, & yeelds vp our intellective apprehension to be mocked and troden vnder foote by euerie false obiect 20 or counterfeit noyse that comes neere it. Heerein specially consisteth our senses defect and abuse, that those organicall parts which to the minde are ordained embassadours, doo not their message as they ought, but by some misdier or misgouvernement being distempered, faile in their report, and 25 deliuering nothing but lyes and fables.

Such is our braine oppressed with melancholy, as is a clocke tyde downe with too heauie weights or plummets; which as it cannot chuse but monstrously goe a square, or not goe at all; so must our braines of necessitie be either 30 monstrously distracted, or vtterly destroyed thereby.

Lightly this extreamitie of Melancholye neuer commeth, but before some notable sicknesse; it faring with our braynes as with Bees, who, as they exceedingly toyle and turmoile before a storme or change of weather, so doo they 35 beate and toyle and are infinitelie confused before sicknes.

Of the effects of melancholy I need not dilate, or discourse how many encumbered with it haue thought th̄selues birdes and beasts, with feathers, and hornes, and hydes ; others, that they haue been turned into glasse ; others, that if they should make water they should drowne all the world ; others, that they can neuer bleed inough. |

Phisitions in their circuit euerie day meet with far more C 3^v ridiculous experience. Only it shall suffice a little by the way to handle one speciaall effect of it, which is dreames.

10 A dreame is nothing els but a bubling scum or froath of the fancie, which the day hath left vndigested ; or an after feast made of the fragments of idle imaginations.

How manie sorts there be of them no man can rightly set downe, since it scarce hath been heard there were euer 15 two men that dreamed alike. Diuers have written diuersly of their causes, but the best reason among them all that I could euer picke out, was this, that as an arrow which is shot out of a bow, is sent forth manie times with such force, that it flyeth farre beyond the marke wherat it was aymed ; 20 so our thoughts intensiuely fixt all the day time vpon a marke wee are to hit, are now and then ouer-drawne with such force, that they flye beyonde the marke of the day into the confines of the night. There is no man put to any torment, but quaketh & trembleth a great while after the 25 executioner hath withdrawne his hand from him. In the daye time wee torment our thoughts and imaginations with sundry cares and deuices ; all the night time they quake and tremble after the terror of their late suffering, and still continue thinking of the perplexities they haue endured.

30 To nothing more aptly can I compare the working of our braines after we haue vnyoakt and gone to bed, than to the glimmering and dazeling of a mans eyes when hee comes newly out of the bright Sunne into the darke shadow.

35 Euen as ones eyes glimmer and dazzle when they are withdrawne out of the light into darknesse ; so are our |

25 his his hand Q.

33 the the bright Q.

C 4 thoughts troubled & vexed when they are retyred from labor to ease, and from skirmishing to surgerie.

You must giue a wounded man leaue to grone while he is in dressing : Dreaming is no other than groaning, while sleepe our surgeon hath vs in cure. 5

He that dreams merily is like a boy new breetcht, who leapes and daunceth for ioy his pain is past : but long that ioy stayes not with him, for presently after his master the day, seeing him so iocund and pleasant, comes and dooes as much for him againe, whereby his hell is renued. 10

No such figure of the first Chaos whereout the world was extraught, as our dreames in the night. In them all states, all sexes, all places are confounded and meete together.

Our cogitations runne on heapes like men to part a fray, 15 where euerie one strikes his next fellow. From one place to another without consultation they leap, like rebells bent on a head. Souldiers iust vp and downe they imitate at the sacke of a Citie, which spare neither age nor beautie : the yong, the old, trees, steeples, & mountaines, they con- 20 found in one gallimafrie.

Of those things which are most knowne to vs, some of vs that haue moyst braynes make to our selues images of memorie : on those images of memorie whereon we buyld in the daye, comes some superfluous humour of ours, lyke 25 a Iacke-anapes in the night, and erects a puppet stage, or some such ridiculous idle childish inuention.

A Dreame is nothing els but the Eccho of our conceipts in the daye. |

C 4^v But other-while it fals out, that one Eccho borrowes of 30 another : so our dreames (the Echoes of the day) borrow of anie noyse we heare in the night.

As for example ; if in the dead of the night there be anie rumbling, knocking, or disturbance neere vs, wee straight dreame of warres, or of thunder. If a dogge 35 howle, we suppose we are transported into hell, where we heare the complaint of damned ghosts. If our heads lye

double or vneasie, we imagine we vphold all heauen with our shoulders like *Atlas*. If wee bee troubled with too manie clothes, then we suppose the night mare rides vs.

I knew one that was crampt, and hee dreamt that hee
 5 was torn in peeces with wylde horses; and another, that hauing a blacke sant brought to his bed side at mid-night, dreamt he was bidden to dinner at Iron-mongers Hall.

Anie meate that in the day time we eat against our stomackes, begetteth a dismal dreame. Discontent also
 10 in dreames hath no little predominance: for euen as from water that is troubled, the mud dispersingly ascendeth from the bottome to the top; so when our blood is chased, disquieted, and troubled, all the light imperfect humours of our bodie ascend like mud vp aloft into the head.

15 The clearest spring a little tutcht, is creased wyth a thousand circles: as those momentarie circles for all the world, such are our dreames. When all is said, melancholy is the mother of dreames, and of all terrors of the night whatsoeuer. |

20 Let it but affirme it hath seene a spirit (though it be D i but the moone-shine on the wall) the best reason wee haue cannot infringe it.

Of this melancholy there be two sorts; one that, digested by our liuer, swimmeth like oyle aboue water, & that is
 25 rightly tearmed Womens melancholy, which lasteth but for an houre, and is (as it were) but a coppie of their countenance: the other sinketh downe to the bottome like the lees of the wine, and that corrupteth all the blood, and is the causer of lunacie. Well moderated recreations are
 30 the medicine to both: surfeit or excessiue studie the causes of either.

There were gates in *Rome* out of which nothing was carried but dust and dung, and men to execution: so, manie of the gates of our senses serue for nothing but to
 35 conueigh out excrementall vapors, & afrighting deadly dreames, that are worse than executioners vnto vs.

Ah woe be to the solitarie man that hath his sinnes

continually about him, that hath no withdrawing place from the diuell and his temptations.

Much I wonder how treason and murder dispense with the darknes of the night, how they can shriue themselues to it, and not rauie and die. Me thinkes they shuld 5 imagine that hell imbraceth them round, when she ouer spreads them with her blacke pitchie mantle.

Dreames to none are so fearfull, as to those whose accusing priuate guilt expects mischiefe euerie hower for their merit. Wonderfull superstitious are such persons in 10 obseruing euerie accident that befalls them; and that their

D 1^v superstition is as good as an hundred furies to torment them. Neuer in this world shall he enjoy one quiet day, that once hath giuen himselfe ouer to be her slaye. His eares cannot glowe, his nose itch, or his eyes smart, but 15 his destinie stands vpon her triall, and till she bee acquitted or condemned, he is miserable.

A cricket or a rauen keepe him fortie times in more awe than God or the Diuell.

If he chance to kill a spider, he hath suppressed an 20 enemie; if a spinner creepe vpon him, hee shall haue golde raine downe from heauen: if his nose bleede, some of his kinsfolkes is dead; if the salt fall right against him, all the starres cannot sauе him from some immediet misfortune.

The first Witch was *Proserpine*, and she dwelt halfe 25 in heauen and halfe in hell: halfe witches are they that pretending anie Religion, meddle halfe with God, and halfe with the diuell. Medling with the diuell I call it, when ceremonies are obserued which haue no ground from Diuinicie.

In another kinde witches may be said to meddle halfe 30 with GOD and halfe with the Diuell, because in their Exorcisms they vse halfe Scripture and halfe blasphemie.

The greatest and notablest heathen sorcerers that euer were, in all their hellish adiurations, vsed the name of the 35 one true and euer-liuing God: but such a number of

damned potestates they ioined with him, that it might seeme the starres had darkned the Sunne, or the Moone was eclipsed by candle-light.

Of all Countries vnder the Skie, *Persia* was most ad-
dicted vnto Dreames. *Darius* King of the *Medes* and D²
Persians, before his fatall discomfiture, dreamt hee saw
an Estritch with a winged crowne ouer-running the earth,
and deuouring his Iuel-coffer, as if it had beene an ordinarie
peece of yron. That Iuel-coffer was by *Alexander* sur-
prized, and afterward *Homers* Workes in it carried before
him, euen as the Mace or Purse is customably carried
before our Lord Chancelor.

Hannibal dreamed a little before his death, that hee
was drowned in the poysous Lake *Asphalites*, when
it was presently his hap within some few dayes distance,
to seeke his fate by the same meanes in a vault vnder earth.

In *India* the women verie often conceiue by diuellis in
their sleepe.

In *Island* (as I haue read and heard) spirites in the lyke-
nesse of ones father or mother after they are deceased, doo
conuerse with them as naturally as if they were liuing.

Other spirites like rogues they haue among them, desti-
tute of all dwelling and habitation, and they chillingly
complayne if a Constable aske them *Cheuela* in the night,
that they are going vnto Mount *Hecla* to warme them.

That Mount *Hecla* a number conclude to bee hell mouth ;
for neere vnto it are heard such yellings and groanes, as
Ixion, *Titius*, *Sisiphus*, and *Tantalus*, blowing all in one
trumpet of distresse, could neuer conioyned bellowe foorth.]

Bond-men in *Turkey* or in *Spaine* are not so ordinarilye D²
sold, as witches sell familiars there. Farre cheaper maye
you buy a winde amongst them, than you can buy wind
or faire words in the Court. Three knots in a thred, or an
odde grandams blessing in the corner of a napkin, will
carrie you all the world ouer.

Wee when we frowne knit our browes, but let a wizard

there knit a noose or a riding snarle on his beard, & it is haile, storme, and tempest a month after.

More might be spoken of the prodigies this countrey sendes foorth, if it were not too much erring from my scope. Whole Ilands they haue of yce, on which they 5 build and traffique as on the maine land.

Admirable (aboue the rest) are the incomprehensible wonders of the bottomlesse Lake *Vether*, ouer which no fowle flies but is frozen to death, nor anie man passeth but he is senselesly benummed like a statue of marble. 10

All the inhabitaunts round about it are deafned wyth the hideous roring of his waters when the winter breaketh vp, & the yce in his dissolving giues a terrible cracke like to thunder, when as out of the midst of it (as out of *Mont-Gibell*) a sulphureous stinking smoak issues, that welnigh 15 poysons the whole Countrey.

A poyson light on it, how come I to digresse to such a dull, Lenten, Northren Clyme, where there is nothing but stock-fish, whetstones, and cods-heads? Yet now I remember me, I haue not lost my way so much as 20 I thought, for my theame is The terrors of the Night, and *Island* is one of the chiese kingdomes of the night; they hauing scarce so much day there, as will serue a childe D 3 to ask his | father blessing. Marry, with one commoditie they are blest, they haue Ale that they carry in their 25 pockets lyke glue, and euer when they would drinke, they set it on the fire and melt it.

It is reported, that the Pope long since gaue them a dispensation to receiue the Sacrament in ale, insomuch as for their vncessant frosts there, no wine but was turned 30 to red emayle, as soone as euer it came amongst them.

Farewell frost: as much to say as farewell *Island*, for I haue no more to say to thee.

I care not much if I dream yet a little more: & to say the troth, all this whole Tractate is but a dreame, for my 35

6 traffique Q.
32 Run on in Gro.

11 Run on in Gro.

24 father[s] blessing Gro.

wits are not halfe awaked in it : & yet no golden dreame, but a leaden dreame is it ; for in a leaden standish I stand fishing all day, but haue none of Saint Peters lucke to bring a fish to the hooke that carries anie siluer in the mouth. And yet there be of them that carrie siluer in the mouth too, but none in the hand : that is to say, are verie bountifull and honorable in their words, but except it be to sweare indeed, no other good deedes comes from them.

Filthie Italionat complement-mungers they are, who would faine be counted the Courts *Gloriosos*, and the refined iudges of wit ; when if their wardrops and the withred bladders of their braines were well searcht, they haue nothing but a fewe moath-eaten cod-peece sutes (made against the comming of *Mounsier*) in the one, and a few scraps of out-landish prouerbes in the other : and these alone doo buckler them from the name of beggers and idiots. Other-while perhaps they may keep a coyle with the spirit of *Tasso*, and then they folde their armes D 3^v like Braggarts, writhe their neckes *alla Neapolitano*, and turne vp their eye-balls like men entraunced.

Come, come, I am entraunced from my Text, I wote well, and talke idly in my sleepe longer than I should : those that will harken any more after Dreames, I referre them to *Artimidorus*, *Synesius*, & *Cardan*, with many others which onely I haue heard by their names, but I thanke God had neuer the plodding patience to reade, for if they bee no better than some of them I haue perused, euery weatherwise old wife might write better.

What sense is there that the ydalke of an egge should signifie gold, or dreaming of Beares, or fire, or water, debate and anger, that euery thing must bee interpreted backward as Witches say their Pater-noster, good being the character of bad, and bad of good ?

As well we may calculate from euery accident in the day, and not goe about any busines in the morning till we haue seene on which hand the Crow sits.

O Lord, I haue heard many a wise Gentlewoman say,

I am so merry and haue laught so hartily, that I am sure
ere long to bee crost with some sad tydinges or other ; all
one as if men comming from a Play should conclude, Well
we haue seene a Commedie to day, and therefore there
cannot choose but be a Tragedie to morrow. 5

I doo not deny but after extremity of myrth, followe
many sad accidents, but yet those sad accidents (in my
opinion) wee merely plucke on with the feare of comming
mischief, and those meanes wee in pollicie most vse to
D 4 preuent it, soonest enwrappe vs in it; and that was | Sathans 10
tricke in the old world of gentillisme to bring to passe all
his blind Prophecies.

Could any men set downe certaine rules of expounding
of Dreames, and that their rules were generall, holding in
all as well as in some, I would beginne a litle to list to 15
them, but commonly that which is portentive in a King
is but a friuolous fancie in a beggar, and let him dreame of
Angels, Eagles, Lyons, Griffons, Dragons neuer so, all the
augurie vnder heauen will not allot him so much as a good
almes. 20

Some will object vnto mee for the certaintye of Dreames,
the Dreames of *Cyrus, Cambyses, Pompey, Cæsar, Darius,*
& *Alexander*. For those I answer, that they were rather
visions than Dreames, extraordinarily sent from heauen to
foreshew the translation of Monarchies. 25

The Greeke and Romane histories are full of them, and
such a stirre they keepe with their Augurers and Sooth-
sayers, how they foretold long before by Dreames and
beasts and birds intrayles, the losse of such a battaile, the
death of such a Captaine or Emperour, when, false knaues, 30
they were all as Prophet Calchas, pernicious Traytors to
their Country and them that put them in trust, and were
many times hyred by the aduerse part to disharten and
discourage their Masters by such Conycatching Riddles as
might in truth be turned any way. 35

An easie matter was it for them to prognosticate treasons

and conspiracies, in which they were vnderhand inlincked themselues, & how euer the world went it was a good pollicie for them to sauе their headeſ by the ſhift, for if the treaſons chaunſt afterwards to come to light, it | would D 4^v
 5 not be ſuſpected they were practiſers in them, inſomuch as they reuealde them, or if they ſhould by theyr conſederates be appealed as practiſers, yet miſt they pleaſe and preteſd it was done but of ſpite and mallice to ſuplant them for ſo bewraying and laying open their intenſes.

10 This tricke they had with them beſides, that neuer till the verie iſtant that anie treaſon was to be put in execu‐tion, and it was ſo neere at hand that the Prince had no time to preuent it, would they ſpeake one word of it, or offer to diſclose it: yea, and even then ſuſh fit ſeasoneſ 15 for their colourable diſcouerie would they picke foorth, as they would be ſure he ſhould haue no leaſure to attend it.

But you will aſke why at all as then they ſhould ſtep foorth to detect it? Marry, to cleare themſelues to hys 20 ſucceſſors, that there miſt bee no reuenge proſecuted on their liues.

So did *Spurina* the great Astrologer; even as *Cæſar* in the midſt of all his buſineſſeſ was going haſtely to the Senate house, he popt a bill in his hand of *Brutus* and 25 *Cassius* conſpiracie, and all the names of thoſe that were colleagueu with them.

Well he miſt haue thought that in ſuſh haſt by the high way ſide, he wold not ſtay to perufe any ſcheduiles, and well he knew and was aſſertained, that aſſoone as 30 euer he came into the Capitoll, the bloudie deed was to be ac‐compliſhed.

Shall I impart vnto you a rare ſecrecy how theſe great famous Coniurers and cuſting men ac‐cend by de‐grees | to E 1 foretell ſecreſ as they doo? First and formoſt they are 35 men which haue had ſome little ſprinkling of Grammer learning in their youth, or at leaſt I wiſh alloue them to haue been Surgeons or Apothecaries prentiſes; theſe I ſay

hauing runne through their thrifte at the elbowes, and riotouslie amongst harlots and make-shifts spent the an-
nuitie of halspennie ale that was left them, fall a beating
their braynes how to botch vp an easie gainfull trade, &
set a new nap on an old occupation.

5

Hereupon presently they rake some dunghil for a few
durtie boxes and plaisters, and of tosted cheese and
candles endes, temper vp a fewe oyntments and sirrups :
which hauing done, farre North, or into some such rude
simple countrey, they get them, and set vp.

10

Scarce one month haue they staid there, but what with
their vaunting and prating, and speaking fustian in steede
of Greeke, all the Shyres round about do ring with their
fame : and then they begin to get them a Library of three
or foure old rustie manuscript books, which they them-
selues nor anie els can read ; and furnish their shops with
a thousand *quid pro quos*, that would choake anie horse ;
besides some wast trinkets in their chambers hung vp,
which maye make the world halfe in iealouzie they can
coniure.

20

They will euermore talke doubtfully, as if there were
more in them than they meant to make publique, or was
applicable to euerie common mans capacitie : when God
bee their rightfull Iudge, they vtter all that they know
and a great deale more.

25

To knit vp their knaueries in short (which in sooth is |
E 1^v the hang-mans office, & nones els), hauing pickt vp theyr
crummes thus pretely well in the Countrey, they drawe
after a time a little neerer and neerer to London ; and at
length into London they filtch themselues priuely : but 30
how ? Not in the hart of the Cittie will they presume
at first dash to hang out their rat-banners, but in the
skirtes and out-shifts steale out a signe ouer a Coblers
stall, lyke Aqua vitæ sellers and stocking menders.

Manie pore people they win to beleue in them, who 35
haue not a barreld Herring or a peece of poore Iohn that

lookes ill on it, but they will bring the water that he was steeped in vnto them in an vrinall, & craue their iudgment whether he be rottē, or merchant & chapmanable, or no. The brute of their cunning thus traueling frō ale-house
 5 to Ale-house, at length is transported in the great hiltes of one or other countrey Seruing-mans sword to some good Tauerne or Ordinarie: where it is no sooner arriued, but it is greedily snatched vp by some dappert Mounsier Diego, who liues by telling of newes, & false dice, and
 10 it may be hath a pretie insight into the cardes also, together with a little skill in his Iacobs staffe and hys Compasse; being able at all times to discouer a new passage to *Virginia*.

This needie Gallaunt (with the qualities aforesaid)
 15 straight trudgeth to some Noble-mans to dinner, & there enlargeth the rumor of this newe Phisition, comments vpon euerie glasse and violl that he hath, rayleth on our Galenists, and calls them dull gardners and hay-makers in a mans belly, compares them to dogs, who when they are sick eate
 20 grasse, and saies they are no better than pack | or malt E 2 horses, who if a man shuld knock out their brains will not goe out of the beaten high way; wheras his hors-leach will leap ouer the hedge & ditch of a thousand *Dioscorides* and *Hippocrates*, and giue a man twentie poysons in one,
 25 but he would restore him to perfitt health. With this strange tale the Noble-man inflamed, desires to bee acquainted with him: what does me he, but goes immedietly and breaks with this mountebanke, telling him if he will diuide his gains with him, he will bring him in
 30 custome with such and such States, and he shall bee countenanst in the Court as he wold desire. The hungrie druggier, ambitious after preferment, agrees to any thing, and to Court he goes; where being come to enterview,
 hee speaks nothing but broken English like a French
 35 Doctor, pretēding to haue forgottē his naturall tung by trauell, when he hath neuer been farther than either the

Lowe Countries or Ireland, inforced thether to flye either for getting a maid with child, or marrying two wiues. Suffiseth he set a good face on it, & will sweare he can extract a better Balsamum out of a chip than the Balm of Iudea: yea, all receipts and authors you can name 5 he syllogizeth of, & makes a pish at, in comparison of them he hath seen and read: whose names if you aske, hee claps you in the mouth with halfe a dozen spruce titles, neuer til he inuēted them heard of by any Christian. But this is most certaine, if he be of any sect, he is 10 a mettle-bruing Paracelsian, hauing not past one or two Probatums for al diseases. Put case he be called to practise, hee excuseth it by great cures he hath in hand ; & will not encounter an infirmity but in the declining, E 2^v that his credit may be more autētical, | or els when by 15 some secret intelligence hee is throughlie instructed of the whole processe of his vnrecouerable extremitie, he comes grauely marching like a Judge, and giues peremptorie sentence of death ; whereby he is accounted a Prophet of deepe prescience. 20

But how he comes to be the diuell's secretarie, all this long tale vnrips not.

In secret be it spoken, he is not so great with the diuell as you take it. It may be they are neere a kinne, but yet you haue manie kindred that will doo nothing for one 25 another; no more will the diuell for him, except it be to damne him.

This is the Tittle est amen of it: that when he wexeth stale, and all his pispots are crackt and wil no longer hold water, he sets vp a coniuring schoole, and vndertakes to 30 play the baud to Ladie Fortune.

Not a thiefe or a cut-purse, but a man that hee keepes doth associate with, & is of their fraternitie ; only that his master when any thing is stoln may tell who it is that hath it. In petie trifles hauing gotten some credit, great 35 Peeres entertaine him for one of their priuie counsaile, and

if they haue anie daungerous enterprise in hand, they consult with him about successe.

All malcontents entending anie inuasive violence against their Prince and Countrey runne headlong to his oracle.
 5 Contrarie factions enbosome vnto him their inwardest complots, whilst he like a craftie Iacke a both sides, as if he had a spirite still at his elbow, reciprocallie embowelleth to the one what the other goes about ; receiuing no intelligence from anie familiar, but their own | mouths. E 3
 10 I assure you most of our chiefe noted Augurers and Soothsayers in *England* at this day, by no other Arte but this gaine their reputation.

They may verie well picke mens purses, like the vnskilfuller counsing kind of Alchumists, with their artificiall
 15 and ceremoniall Magicke, but no effect shall they atchieue thereby, though they would hang themselues : the reason is, the diuell of late is growen a puritane, and cannot away with anie ceremonies ; he sees all Princes haue left off their States, and hee leaues off his state too, and will not be
 20 inuocated with such solemnity as he was wont.

Priuate and disguised he passeth too and fro, and is in a thousand places in an houre.

Faire words cannot anie longer beguile him, for not a cue of curtsie will he doo anie man, except it be vpon
 25 a flat bill of sale ; and so hee chaffers with wysards and witches euerie howre.

Now the world is almost at an end, he hath left forme and is all for matter ; and like an Embroyderer or a Tailer he maketh hast of worke against a good time, which is the
 30 day of iudgement : therefore you goodmen exorcisers, his olde acquaintance, must pardon him, though (as heretofore) he stay not to dwell vpon complements.

In diebus illis when *Corineus* and *Gogmagog* were little boyes, I will not gainsaye but hee was wont to iest and
 35 sport wyth countrey people, and play the good fellowe amongst kitchin-wENCHES, sitting in an euening by the fire

side making of possets, and come a woing to them in the likenes of a cooper, or a curmogionly purchaser: & |
 E 3^v somtimes he would dresse himselfe like a Barbar, & wash and shaue all those that laye in such a chamber: otherwhile like a stale cutter of Queene hyue, hee would iustle men in 5 their owne houses, pluck them out of bed by the heeles, and daunce in chaynes from one chamber to another: now there is no goodnes in him but miserablenes and couetousnes.

Sooner he will pare his nayles cleanly, than cause a man to dreame of a pot of golde, or a money bag that is hid 10 in the eaues of a thatcht house.

(Heere is to bee noted, that it is a blessed thing but to dreame of gold, though a man neuer haue it.)

Such a dreame is not altogether ridiculous or impertinent, for it keepes flesh and bloud from despaire: all other 15 ~~are~~ but as dust we raise by our steps; which awhyle mounteth aloft, and annoyeth our ey-sight, but presently disperseth and vanisheth.

Senior Sathan when he was a yong stripling, and had not yet gotten perfect audacitie to set vpon vs in the day 20 time, was a sly Polititian in dreames; but those dayes are gone with him, and now that he is thoroughly steeled in his scutcherie, hee playes aboue-boord boldly, & sweeps more stakes than euer he did before.

I haue rid a false gallop these three or foure pages: now 25 I care not if I breathe mee, and walke soberly and demurely halfe a dozen turnes, like a graue Citizen going about to take the ayre.

To make a shaft or a bolt of this drumbling subiect of dreames, from whence I haue bin tost off and on I know 30 not how; this is my definitiue verdit: that one may E 4 aswel | by the smoke that comes out of a kitchin gesse what meat is there a broach, as by paraphrasing on smokie dreames praeominate of future euents. Thus far notwithstanding Ile goe with them; Phisitions by dreames may 35 better discerne the distemperature of their pale clients, than either by vrine or ordure.

He that is inclining to a burning feuer shall dreame of frayes, lightning and thunder, of skirmishing with the diuell, and a hundred such like. He that is spiced wyth the gowte or the dropsie, frequently dreameth of fetters & manacles, and being put on the bilbowes, that his legges are turned to marble or adamant, and his feet, like the giants that scal'd heauen, kept vnder with Mount *Ossa* and *Peleon*, and earst while that they are fast locked in quagmyres. I haue heard aged mumping beldams as they sat warming their knees ouer a coale scratch ouer the argument verie curiously, and they would bid yong folks beware on what day they par'd their nayles, tell what luck euerie one should haue by the day of the weeke he was borne on ; show how many yeares a man should liue by the number 15 of wrinkles on his forehead, and stand descanting not a little of the difference in fortune when they are turnd vpward, and when they are bent downward ; him that had a wart on his chin, they would confidently assertaine he should haue no need of anie of his kin : marry, they would likewise 20 distinguish betweene the standing of the wart on the right side and on the left. When I was a little childe, I was a great auditor of theirs, and had all their witchcrafts at my fingers endes, as perfitt as good morrow and good euen. |

25 Of the signification of dreames, whole catalogues could E 4 v
I recyte of theirs, which heere there is no roome for : but for a glaunce to this purpose, this I remember they would verie soberly affirme, that if one at supper eate birds, he should dreame of flying ; if fish, of swimming ; if venison, 30 of hunting, and so for the rest : as thogh those birds, fish, and venison beeing dead and digested, did flie, swim, and hold their chase in their braynes ; or the solution of our dreames should be nought els but to expresse what meates we eate ouer-night.

35 From the vnequall and repugnant mixture of contrarious meates, I iumpe wit them, manie of our mystie cogitations

proceede: and euen as fire maketh yron like it selfe, so the firie inflammations of our liuer or stomach transforme our imaginations to their analagie and likenesse.

No humor in generall in our bodies ouer-flowing or abounding, but the tips of our thoughts are dipt in hys 5 tincture. And as when a man is readie to drowne, hee takes hold of anie thing that is next him: so our flutring thoughts, when wee are drowned in deadly sleepe, take hold, and coessence themselues with anie ouerboylng humour which sourseth hiest in our stomackes. 10

What heede then is there to be had of dreames, that are no more but the confused giddie action of our braines, made drunke with the innundation of humours?

Iust such like impostures as is this Art of exposition of dreames, are the artes of Phisiognomie and Palmestrie; 15 wherein who beareth most palme and praise, is the palpa-

F 1 blest foole and Crepundio. Liues there anie such slowe yce-braind beefe-witted gull, who by the riueld barke or outward rynde of a tree will take vpon him to forespeak how long it shall stand, what mischances of wormes, cater- 20 pillers, boughs breaking, frost bitings, cattells rubbing against, it shall haue? As absurd is it, by the external branched seames or furrowed wrinkles in a mans face or hand, in particular or generall to coniecture and foredoome of his fate. 25

According to euerie ones labor or exercise, the palme of his hand is wrythen and pleyted, and euerie daye alters as he alters his employments or pastimes: wherfore well may we collect, that he which hath a hand so brawned and enter-lined vseth such and such toyles or recreations; but 30 for the minde or disposition, we can no more looke into through it, than wee can into a looking Glasse through the wooden case thereof.

So also our faces, which sundrie times with surfets, greefe, studie, or intemperaunce, are most deformedlye 35 welked and crumpled; there is no more to bee gathered by their sharpe embossed Ioyners anticke worke, or ragged

ouer-hangings or pit-falls, but that they haue beene layd vp in slouens presse, and with miscarriage and misgouvernement are so fretted and galled.

My owne experience is but small, yet thus much I can
 5 say by his warrantize, that those fatall brands of phisiognomie which condemne men for fooles and for idiots, and on the other side for trecherous circumuenters and false brothers, haue in a hundred men I know been verefied in the contrarie. |

10 So *Socrates* (the wisest man of *Greece*) was censured by F 1^v
 a wrinkle-wyzard for the lumpishest blockehead that euer
 went on two legs: whome though the Philosopher in pitie
 vouchsafed with a nyce distinction of Art and nature to
 rayse and recouer, when he was vtterly confounded with
 15 a hisse and a laughter, yet sure his insolent simplicity
 might lawfully haue su'd out his patent of exemption; for
 hee was a forlorne creature, both in discretion and wit-craft.

Will you haue the summe of all: some subtil humorist,
 to feede fantasticke heads with innouations and nouelties,
 20 first inuented this trifling childish glose vpon dreames and
 phisiognomie; wherein he stroue onely to boast himselfe of
 a pregnant probable conceipt beyonde philosophie or truth.

Let but anie man who is most conuersant in the superstition of dreames, reckon me one that hath hapned iust,
 25 and Ile set downe a hundred out of Histories, that haue
 perished to foolerie.

To come to late dayes; *Lewes* the xj. dreamt that he
 swam in blood on the toppe of the *Alpes*: which one
 Father *Robert* (a holy Hermit of his time) interpreted to
 30 be present death in his next warres against *Italy*: though
 hee liu'd and prosperd in all his enterprises a long whyle
 after.

So *Charles* the fifth, sayling to the siege of *Tunis*, dreamt
 that the Citie met him on the sea like an Argosie, and
 35 ouerwhelmed his whole Nauie: when by *Cornelius Agrippa*
 the great Coniurer (who went along with him) it was ex-
 pounded to be the ouerthrow of that famous ex-[pedition. F 2

And thereupon *Agrippa* offred the Emperor (if it pleased him) to blowe vp the Citie by Art Magicke in the ayre before his eyes, without anie farther ieopardie of warre, or besieging. The Emperour vtterly refused it and said, Since it was Gods warres against an Infidel, he would neuer 5 borrow aid of the diuell.

Some haue memorized, that *Agrippa* seeing his counsaile in that case reiected, and that the Emperour (notwithstanding his vnfortunate presage) was prosperous and succesfull, within few dayes after dyed frantick and desperate. 10

Alphonso King of *Naples* in like case, before the rumor of the French Kings comming into *Italy*, had a vision in the night presented vnto him of *Aeneas* ghoast hauing *Turnus* in chase, & *Iuno Pronuba* comming betwixt them, and parting them ; whereby hee gest that by marriage 15 their iarring Kingdomes should be vnited : but far otherwise it fell out ; for the French King came indeed, and he was driuen thereby into such a melancholy extasie, that he thought the verie fowles of the ayre would snatch his Crowne from him ; and no bough or arbour that ouer- 20 shadowd him, but enclosed him, and tooke him prisner ; and that not so much but the stones of the street sought to iustle him out of his Throne.

These examples I alledge, to proue there is no certaintie in dreames ; and that they are but according to our de- 25 uisings and meditations in the day time.

I confesse the Saintes and Martirs of the Primitiue Church had vnfallible dreames fore-running their ends, as *Policarpus* and other : but those especially proceeded | F 2^o from heauen, and not from anie vaporous dreggie parts 30 of our blood or our braines.

For this cause the Turkes banish Learning from amongst them, because it is euerie daye setting men together by the eares, mouing straunge contentions and alterations, and making his professors faint hearted and effeminate. 35 Much more requisite were it that out o^r our ciuill Christian

Common-waltheſ we ſeuereſ baniſh and extermi‐
nate thoſe fabuloſe commentaries on toyiſh fantasieſ,
which feare-benume & effeminate the harts of the stouteſt,
cauſe a man without any ground to be iealous of hiſ owne frendeſ
5 and hiſ kinsfolkeſ, and withdraw hym from the ſearch and
iñiſtue into more excellent thiŋgs, to ſtancl all hiſ whole
life ſifting and winnowing dry rubbiſh chaffe, whoſe beſt
bottoſe quinteſſence prooues in the end but ſandie grauell
and cockle.

10 Mokeſtatiſ and cares iough, the ordinarie course of
our life tythes of hiſ owne accord vnto vs, though we ſeeke
not a knot in a bulruſh, or ſtuſſe not our night pilloweſ
with thiſtles to encreaſe our diſturbance.

In our ſleepe wee are agaſted and terriſied with the
15 diſorderd skirmiſhing and conſlicting of our ſenſitue
faſcultye: yet with thiſ terror and agaſtment cannot wee
reſt our ſelueſ ſatiſdie, but we muſt purſue and hunt
aſter a further feare in the recordation and too buſie
examiniſing our paineſ ouer-paſſed.

20 Dreameſ in my minde iſ they haue anie premonſtranceſ
in them, the preparatiue feare of that they ſo premonſtrate
and denounce, iſ far worse than the miſchiefe iſ ſelue by
them denounced and premonſtrated. |

So there iſ no long ſickneſſe but iſ worse than death, F 3
25 for death iſ but a blowe and awaye, whereas ſickneſſe
iſ like a Chancerie ſute, which hangs two or three yeare
ere it can come to a iudgement.

O, a conſumption iſ worse than a *Capias ad Ligatum* ;
to nothing can I coſpare iſ better, thaſ to a reprieue after
30 a man iſ condemnd, or to a boy with hiſ hoaſe about hiſ
heeles, ready to be whipt, to whom hiſ master ſtands
preaching a long time all law and no Gopſel, ere he
proceed to execution. Or rather iſ as a man ſhould
be roſted to death, and melt away by little and little,
35 whileſ Phisitioneſ lyke Cookeſ ſtand ſtuffing him out with
hearebeſ, and bauſting him with thiſ oyle and thiſ ſirrup.

¹ Common-waltheſ Q.

¹⁸ aftter Q.

²⁶ three] thee Q.

I am of the opinion, that to be famisht to death is farre better, for his paine in seauen or eight dayes is at an end, whereas he that is in a consumption, continues languishing manie yeares ere death haue mercie on him.

The next plague and the neerest that I know in affinitie ⁵ to a consumption, is long depending hope friuolously defeated, than which there is no greater miserie on earth ; & so *per consequens* no men in earth more miserable than courtiers. It is a cowardly feare that is not resolute inough to despaire. It is like a pore hunger-starud wretch ¹⁰ at sea, who still in expectation of a good voyage, endures more miseries than Job. He that writes this can tell, for he hath neuer had good voyage in his life but one, & that was to a fortunate blessed Iland, nere those pinacle rocks called the Needles. O, it is a purified Continent, & a fertil ¹⁵ plot fit to seat another Paradice, where, or in no place, the image of the ancient hospitalitie is to be found. |

F 3^v While I liue I will praise it and extoll it, for the true magnificence and continued honourable bountie that I saw there. ²⁰

Farre vnworthie am I to spend the least breath of commendation in the extolling so delightfull and pleasaunt a *Tempe*, or once to consecrate my inke with the excellent mention of the thrice noble and illustrious Chiefetaine vnder whom it is flourishingly gouerned. ²⁵

That rare ornament of our Countrey, learned Master *Camden*, whose desertfull name is vniuersally admyred throughout Christendome, in the last repolished Edition of his *Brittania*, hath most elaborate and exactly described the souereigne plenteous scituacion of that Ile ; as also ³⁰ the inestimable happines it inherites, it beeing patronizd and carefully protected by so heroicall and couragious a Commaunder.

Men that haue neuer tasted that full spring of his liberalitie, wherwith (in my most forsaken extremities) ³⁵ right graciously hee hath deigned to reuiue and refresh

mee, may rashly (at first sight) implead me of flatterie, and not esteeme these my feruent tearmes as the necessary repaiment of due debt, but words idly begotten with good lookes, and in an ouer-joyed humour of vaine hope slipt 5 from me by chance: but therein they shall shewe themselves too vnciuill iniurious, both to my deuoted obseruant dutie and the condigne deare purchased merite of his glorie.

Too base a ground is this, whereon to embroyder the rich storie of his eternall renowme; some longer lyued
 10 Tractate I reserue for the full blaze of his vertues, which |
 here onely in the sparkes I decypher. Manie embers of F 4
 encumbraunces haue I at this time, which forbid the bright
 flame of my zeale to mount aloft as it would. Perforce
 I must breake from it, since other turbulent cares sit as
 15 now at the stearne of my inuention. Thus I conclude
 with this chance-medley Parenthesis, that whatsoeuer
 minutes intermission I haue of calmed content, or least
 respite to call my wits together, principall and immediate
 proceedeth from him.
 20 Through him my tender wainscot Studie doore is
 deliuered from much assault and battrie: through him
 I looke into, and am lookt on in the world; from whence
 otherwise I were a wretched banished exile. Through him
 25 all my good (as by a conduit head) is conueighed vnto
 me; and to him all my endeouours (like riuers) shall pay
 tribute as to the Ocean.

Did Ouid entitle *Carus*, a Noble-man of *Rome*, the onely
 constant frend hee had, in his vngratefull extrusion amongst
 the *Getes*: and writ to him thus,

30 *Qui quod es id verè Care vocaris?*

And in another Elegie,

O mihi post nullos Care memorande sodales?

Much more may I acknowledge all redundant prostrate
 vassailage to the royall descended Familie of the *Careys*:
 35 but for whom, my spirit long ere this had expyred, and
 my pen seru'd as a puniard to gall my owne hart.

Why doo I vse so much circumstance, and in a streame
on which none but gnats and flies doo swimme, sound
Fames trumpet like *Triton*, to call a number of foolish
skiffes and light cock-boates to parley? |

F⁴v Fear (if I be not deceiud) was the last pertinent matter 5
I had vnder my dispiling; from which I feare I haue
strayed beyond my limits: and yet feare hath no limits,
for to hell and beyond hell, it sinkes downe and penetrates.

But this was my position, that the feare of anie expected
euill, is worse than the euill it selfe; which by dyuers 10
comparisons I confirmed.

Now to visions and apparitions againe, as fast as I can
trudge.

The glasses of our sight (in the night) are like the
prospectiue glasses one *Hostius* made in *Rome*, which 15
represented the images of things farre greater than they
were: each moate in the darke they make a monster, and
euerie sleight glimmering a giant.

A solitarie man in his bed, is like a poore bed-red lazer
lying by the high way side; vnto whose displaied wounds 20
and sores a number of stinging flyes doo swarme for
pastance and beuorage: his naked wounds are his inward
hart-gripling woes, the waspes and flyes his idle wandering
thoughts; who to that secret smarting paine he hath
alreadie, do adde a further sting of impatience, and new 25
lanch his sleeping grieves and vexations.

G 1 Questionlesse this is an vnrefutable consequence, that
the man who is mocked of his fortune, he that hath con-
sumed his braines to compasse prosperitie, and meetes
with no counteruaylement in hir likenesse, but hedge wine 30
and leane mutton, and peraduenture some halfe eid good
looks that can hardly be discerned from winking; this
poore piteous perplexed miscreant either finallie despaires,
or like a lanke frost-bitten plant looseth hys vigor or spirit
by little and little: anie terror, the least illusion in the 35
earth, is a *Cacodæmon* vnto him. His soule hath left his

bodie ; for, why, it is flying after these ayrie incorporeate Courtly promises, and glittering painted allurements ; which when they vanish to nothing, it lykewise vanisheth with them.

5 Excessive ioy no lesse hath his defectiue and ioylesse operations, the spleene into water it melteth ; so that except it be some momentarie bubbles of mirth, nothing it yeelds but a cloying surfeſt of repentance.

Diuers instances haue we of men, whom too much
10 ſodaine content and ouer-rauished delight hath brought vntimely to their graues.

Four or fiue I haue read of, whom the very extremitie of laughter hath bereft of their liues : whereby I gather, that euen ſuch another pernicious sweete, ſuperfluous mirth
15 is to the ſence, as a ſurfeſt of honnie to a mans ſtomacke, than the which there is nothing more dangerous.

Bee it as dangerous as it will, it cannot but be an easie kinde of death. It is like one that is ſtung with an *Aspis*, who in the midſt of his paine falls delighted asleepe, and
20 in that ſuauitie of ſlumber surrenders the ghost : whereas hee whom greefe vndertakes to bring to his end, hath his hart gnawen in ſunder by little & little with vultures, like *Prometheus*.

But this is nothing (you will obiect) to our iourneys
25 ende of apparitions. Yes, altogether ; for of the ouer-ſwelling ſuperabundance of ioy and greefe, wee frame | to G 1^v our ſelues most of our melancholy dreames and viſions.

There is an olde philosophicall common Prouerbe, *Vnus-quisque fngit fortunam sibi*, Euerie one shapes hys owne
30 fortune as he lists. More aptly may it be ſaid, Euerie one shapes his owne feares and fancies as he list.

In all points our brains are like the firmament, and exhale in euerie respect the like groſe miſtempered vapors and meteors ; of the more foeculent combustible ayrie
35 matter whereof, afrighting formes and monſtrous images innumerable are created ; but of the ſlymie vnweeldier drossie part, dull melancholy or drouſines.

And as the firmament is still moouing and working, so vncessant is the wheeling and rolling on of our braines ; which euerie hower are tempring some newe peece of prodigie or other, and turmoylng, mixing, and changing the course of our thoughts.

5

I write not this, for that I thinke there are no true apparitiōs or prodigies, but to shew how easily we may be flouted if we take not great heed, with our own anticke suppositions. I will tell you a strange tale tending to this nature : whether of true melancholy or true apparition, 10 I will not take vpon me to determine.

It was my chance in Februarie last to be in the Countrey some threescore myle off from London ; where a Gentleman of good worship and credit falling sicke, the verie second day of his lying downe, hee pretended to haue 15 miraculous waking visions : which before I enter to de-

scribe, thus much I will informe ye by the way, that at the reporting of them he was in perfect memorie ; nor G 2 had sicknes yet so tirannizd ouer him to make his tongue grow idle. A wise graue sensible man he was euer 20 reputed, and so approou'd himselfe in all his actions in his life time. This which I deliuer, (with manie preparatiue protestations) to a great Man of this Land hee confidently avouched : beleeue it or condemn it, as you shal see cause, for I leave it to be censured indifferently. 25

The first day of his distemprature, he visibly saw (as he affirmed) al his chamber hung with silken nets and siluer hookes, the diuell (as it should seeme) comming thether a fishing ; whereupon, euery Pater noster while, he lookt whether in the nets he should be entangled, or with the 30 hookes ensnared ; with the nets he feard to be strangled or smothred, & with the hooks to haue his throat scracht out, and his flesh rent and mangled : at length, he knew not how, they sodainly vanished, and the whole chamber was clerded. Next a cōpanie of lusty sailors (euerie one a 35

28 hookes Q.
while Gro.

29 whereupon [he said] euery [word of] Pater noster,

sharker or a swaggerer at the least) hauing made a braue voyage, came carousing and quaffing in large siluer kans to his helth. Fellowes they were that had good big pop mouths to crie Port a helme Saint George, and knew as well as the best what belongs to haling of bolings yare, and falling on the star-boord buttocke.

But to the issue of my tale: their drunken proffers he vtterly put by, and sayd hee highly scorned and detested both them and their hellish disguisings: which notwithstanding, they tost their cups to the skies, and reeled and staggered vp and downe the roome like a ship shaking in the winde.

After all they danst Lustie gallant, & a drunken Danish |
Laualto or two, and so departed. For the third course, G 2 v
15 rusht in a number of stately diuels, bringing in boystrous
chessts of massie tresure betwixt the. As braue they were
as Turkish Ianissaries, hauing their apparel all powdred
with gold and pearle, and their armes as it were bemayled
20 with rich chaynes and bracelets; but faces far blacker than
anie ball of Tobacco, great glaring eyes that had whole
shelues of Kentish oysters in them, and terrible wyde
mouthes, whereof not one of them but would well haue
made a case for *Molenax* great Gloabe of the world.

These louely youths and full of fauour, hauing stalkt vp
25 and downe the iust measures of a sinkapace, opened one
of the principall chests they brought, and out of it pluckt
a Princely royall Tent, whose empearled shining canopie
they quickly aduaunced on hie, and with all artificiall mag-
nificence adorned like a state: which performed, pompous
30 *Lucifer* entred, imitating in goodly stature the huge picture
of *Laocoön at Rome*: who sent vnto him a gallant Embas-
savour, signifying thus much, that if hee would serue him,
hee should haue all the rich treasure that he saw there, or
anie farther wealth hee would desire.

35 The Gentleman returned this milde aunswere, that he
knew not what he was, whether an Angell or a wicked

feend : and if an Angell, he was but his fellow seruant, and no otherwise to be serued or regarded ; if a fiend or a diuell, hee had nothing to doo with him, for God had exalted and redeemed him aboue his desperate out-cast condition, and a strong faith he had to defie & with-stand | 5
G 3 all his iugling temptations. Hauing vttered these words, all the whole traine of them inuisibly auoyded, and hee neuer set eye on them after.

Then did ther, for the third pageant, present themselues vnto him, an inueigling troupe of naked Virgins, thrice 10 more amiable and beautifull than the bright Vestals, that brought in *Augustus* Testament to the Senate, after hys decease : but no Vestall-like Ornament had they about them ; for from top to toe bare despoyled they were, except some one or two of them that ware maskes before 15 their faces, and had transparent azur'd lawne veyles before the chiefe iewell houses of their honors.

Such goodly lustfull Bonarobaes they were (by his report) as if anie sharpe eyd Painter had been there to peruse them, he might haue learned to exceed diuine 20 *Michel Angelo* in the true boske of a naked, or curious *Tuns* in quicke life, whom the great masters of that Art do terme the sprightly old man.

Their haire they ware loose vnrowled about their shoulders, whose dangling amber trammells reaching 25 downe beneath their knees, seemed to drop baulme on their delicious bodies ; and euer as they moou'd too and fro, with their light windye wauings, wantonly to correct their exquisite mistresses.

Their daintie feete in their tender birdlike trippings, 30 enameld (as it were) the dustie ground ; and their odori-ferous breath more perfumed the aire, than Ordinance would, that is charged with Amomum, Muske, Cyuet, and Amber-greece.

But to leaue amplifications and proceed : those sweet | 35
G 3 bewitching naked maides, hauing maiesically paced about

the chamber, to the end their naturall vnshelled shining mother pearle proportions might be more imprintingly apprehended, close to his bed-side modestly blushing they approched, & made impudent profer vnto him of theyr 5 lasciuious embraces. He, obstinatly bent to withstand these their sinfull allurements no lesse than the former, bad them goe seek entertainment of hotter bloods, for he had not to satisfie them. A cold comfort was this to poore wenches no better cloathed, yet they hearing what 10 to trust too, verie sorrowfully retyred, and shrunk away.

Lo, in the fourth Act, there sallied out a graue assembly of sober attyred Matrones, much like the Virgines of *Marie Magdalens* order in *Rome*, which vowe neuer to see man ; or the chast daughters of Saint *Philip*.

15 With no incontinent curtesie did they greete him, but tolde him, if so hee thought good they would praye for him.

Therupon, frō the beginning to the ending he vnfolded vnto them, how he had been mightely hanted with wicked 20 illusions of late : but neuertheles, if he could be perswaded that they were Angels or Saintes, their inuocations could not hurt him ; yea, he would adde his desire to their requestes, to make their prayers more penetrably enforcing.

Without further parley, vpon their knees they fell most 25 deuoutly, and for halfe an hower neuer ceased extensiuelly to intercessionate GOD for his speedie recouerie. |

Rising vp agayne on the right hand of his bed, there G 4 appeared a cleare light, and with that he might perceiue a naked slender foote offring to steale betwixt the sheets 30 in to him.

At which instant, entred a messenger from a Knight of great honour thereabouts, who sent him a most precious extract quintessence to drinke : which no sooner he tasted, but he thought hee saw all the fore-named Enterluders at 35 once hand ouer head leap, plunge, & drowne themselues in puddles and dit-hes hard by, and hee felt perfect ease.

But long it lasted not with him, for within foure howers

after, hauing not fully settled his estate in order, hee grewe to trifling dotage, and rauing dyde within two daies following.

God is my witnesse, in all this relation, I borrowe no essential part from stretcht out inuention, nor haue I one iot abusde my informations ; onely for the recreation of my Readers, whom loath to tyre with a course home-spunne tale, that should dull them worse than Holland cheese, heere and there I welt and garde it with allusiuie exornations & comparisons : and yet me thinks it comes off too goutie and lumbering.

10

Bee it as it will, it is lyke to haue no more allowaunce of English for mee. If the world will giue it anie allowance of truth, so it is : For then I hope my excuse is alreadye lawfullye customed and authorized ; since Truth G 4^v is euer drawne and painted naked, | and I haue lent her¹⁵ but a leathren patcht cloake at most to keepc her from the cold : that is, that she come not off too lamely and coldly.

Vpon the accidentall occasion of this dreame or appari-
tion (call or miscall it what you will, for it is yours as²⁰
freely as anie wast paper that euer you had in your liues)
was this Pamphlet (no bigger than an old Præface) speedily
botcht vp and compyled.

Are there anie doubts which remaine in your mynde vndigested, as touching this incredible Narration I haue²⁵
vnfolded ? Well, doubt you not, but I am milde and
tractable, and will resolute you in what I may.

First, the house where this Gentleman dwelt, stood in a low marish ground, almost as rotten a Clymate as the Lowe Countreyes ; where their mystie ayre is as thicke as³⁰
mould butter, and the deaw lyes like froathie barme on the
ground.

It was noted ouer and besides to haue been an vnluckie
house to all his predecessors, scituate in a quarter not
altogether exempted from witches.

35

The abrupt falling into his sicknesse was suspitious,

proceeding from no apparent surfeit or misdiet. The outragious tyrannie of it in so short a time, bred thrice more admiration and wonder, and his sodaine death incontinent ensuing vpon that his disclosed dreame or vision, might
 5 seeme some probable reason to confirme it ; since none haue such palpable dreames or visions, but die presently after.

The like to this was Master *Allingtons* vision in the beginning of her Maiesties raigne ; than the which there
 10 is | nothing more ordinarilie bruted. Through Greeke and H
 Romane common-places to this purport I could runne, if I were disposed to vaunt my selfe like a ridiculous Pedant, of deepe reading in *Fulgosius*, *Licosthenes*, and *Valerius*.

Goe no farther than the Court, and they will tell you of
 15 a mightie worthie man of this Land ; who riding in his Coatch from London to his house, was all the waye haunted with a couple of Hogges, who followed him close, and doo what his men could they might not drive them from him : wherefore at night hee caused them to be shut vp in
 20 a barne, and commanded milke to be giuen them ; the barne dore was lockt, and the key safely kept, yet were they gone by morning, and no man knew how.

A number of men there be yet liuing, who haue been haunted by their wiues after their death, about forswearing
 25 themselues, and vndoing their children, of whom they promised to be carefull fathers : whereof I can gather no reason but this, that Women are borne to torment a man both aliue and dead.

I haue heard of others likewise, that beside these night
 30 terrors, haue been (for whole months together, whether soeuer they went or rid) pursued by wesels and rats, and oftentimes with squirrels and hares ; that in the traueling of three hundred myle, haue still wayted on their horse heeles.

35 But those are onely the employtes and stratagems of witches, which may well astonish a little at first sight, but if a man haue the least heart or spirite to with-stand

one fierce blast of their brauadoes, he shall see them
 H 1 v shrinke | faster than Northren cloath, and outstrip time in
 dastardly flight.

Fie, fie, was euer poore fellow so farre benighted in an old wiues tale of diuellis and vrchins. Out vpon it, I am 5
 wearie of it, for it hath caused such a thicke fulsome Serena to descend on my braine, that now my penne makes blots as broad as a furd stomacher, and my muse inspyres me to put out my candle and goe to bed: and yet I wyll not neyther, till, after all these nights reuells, 10
 I haue solemnly bid you good night; as much to saye as tell you how you shall haue a good night, and sleep quietly without affrightment and annoyance.

First and formost drinke moderately, and dice and drabbe not away your money prodigally and then for- 15
 sweare your selues to borrow more.

You that be pore mens children, know your own fathers; & though you can shift & cheate your selues into good cloathes here about Towne, yet bow your knees to their leathern bagges and russet coates, that they may blesse 20
 you from the ambition of Tiburne.

You that beare the name of souldiers, and liue baselie swaggering in euerie ale-house, hauing no other exhibition but from harlots and strumpets; seeke some newe trade, and leaue whoring and quarrelling, least besides the nightly 25
 guilt of your owne banquoult consciences, Bridewell or Newgate prooue the ende of your caueleering.

You, whosoeuer or wheresoeuer you be, that liue by spoylling and ouer-reaching yong Gentlemen, and make but a sport to deride their simplicities to their vndooin, | 30

H 2 to you the Night at one time or other will proue terrible, except you foorthwith thinke on restitution: or if you haue not your Night in this world, you will haue it in hell.

You that are married and haue wiues of your owne, and yet hold too nere frenship with your neighbours; set 35
 vp your rests, that the Night will be ~n il neighbour to your rest, and that you shall haue as little peace of minde

as the rest. Therefore was *Troy* burnt by night, because *Paris* by night prostituted *Helena*, and wrought such treason to Prince *Menelaus*.

You that are Macheuillian vaine fooles, and thinke it no
 5 wit or pollicie but to vowe and protest what you neuer
 meane, that trauell for nothing els but to learne the vices
 of other countries, and disfigure the ill English faces that
 God hath giuen you, with Tuscan glickes and apish trickes ;
 the night is for you with a blacke saunt or a matachine,
 10 except you presently turne and conuert to the simplicitie
 you were borne too.

You that can cast a man into an Italian ague when you list,
 and imitate with your diet drinke anie disease or infirmitie,
 the night likewise hath an infernall to act before yee.

15 Traitors that by night meete and consult how to walke
 in the day vndiscouered, & thinke those words of Christ
 vainly spoken, *There is nothing done in secret but shalbe
 reuealed and laid open*: to you no lesse the night shalbe
 as a night owle to vexe and torment you.

20 And finallie, O you Judges and Magistrates, if there
 bee anye amongst you, that doo wrest all the Lawe | into H 2^v
 their owne hands, by drawing and receyuing euery mans
 money into their hands, and making newe golden lawes
 of their owne, which no Prince nor Parliament euer
 25 dreamed of ; that looke as iust as Iehouah by daye,
 enthronizing graue zeale and religion on the eleuated
 whites of their eyes, when by night corrupt gifts and
 rewards rush in at their gates in whole Armies, like Northren
 Carriers comming to their Inne ; that in steede of their
 30 bookes turne ouer their bribes, for the deciding of causes,
 adiudging him the best right that brings the richest present
 vnto them. If anie such there be I say, as in our Common-
 wealth I know none, but haue read of in other States, let
 them looke to haue a number of vnwelcome Clients of
 35 their owne accusing thoughts and imaginations, that will
 betray them in the night to euery idle feare and illusion.

17 *nothing Q.*

Therfore are the terrors of the night more than of the day, because the sinnes of the night surmount the sinnes of the day.

By night time came the Deluge ouer the face of the whole earth; by night time *Iudas* betrayed Christ, *Tarquin* 5 rauisht *Lucretia*.

When anie Poet would describe a horrible Tragicall accident; to adde the more probabilitie & credence vnto it, he dismally beginneth to tell, how it was darke night when it was done, and cheerfull daylight had quite abandoned 10 the firmament.

Hence it is, that sinne generally throughout the scripture is called the workes of darknesse; for neuer is the diuell H 3 so busie as then, and then he thinkes he may aswel | vn-discouered walke abroad, as homicides and outlawes. 15

Had we no more Religion than we might deriuie from heathen fables, me thinkes those dolefull Querristers of the night, the Scritch-owle, the Nightingale, and croking Frogs, might ouer-awe vs from anie insolent transgression at that time. The first for her lauish blabbing of forbidden 20 secrets, being for euer ordayned to be a blabbe of ill newes and misfortune, still is crying out in our eares, that we are mortall, and must die: the second puts vs in minde of the end and punishment of lust & rauishment; and the third and last, that we are but slyme & mud, such as those 25 watrie creatures are bred of: and therfore why should we delight to adde more to our slyme & corruption, by extraordinarie surfets and drunkennes?

But these are nothing neither in comparison: for hee whom in the day heauen cannot exhale, the night wil 30 neuer helpe: she onely pleading for her old grandmother hell, as well as the day for heauen.

Thus I shut vp my Treatise abruptly, that hee who in the daye doth not good woorkes inough to answere the obiections of the night, will hardly aunswere at the daye 35 of iudgement.

FINIS.

